

# I am scared of lonely

## Introduction

It 03:00 am and I wake up from a vivid nightmare, I'm all sweaty and my voice is horrible... Geeze I've been crying in my dream again. Well this happens every time I think of being single. I'm about to give you a peak into my life

One would think that coming from my kind of family I'd be used to being alone, well I'm not. I am so scared of it, it is basically my worst fear.

My mom is a full time doctor and a part time mother "I work hard so you can have all that you need and desire" those are her words every time I complain about her spending more time at work than she does with me. As for my dad he is a good for nothing abuser and alcoholic, I don't know how that man functions considering that he is a police man. Anyway my mom and dad are no longer together my dad was so abusive up until my mom woke up in hospital with broken ribs and a face we all couldn't recognize from there she said enough. I have a big brother doing his 2nd year at uct, he hardly comes home we used to be close but ke wangishiya like everyone does in my life. Well as for me I'm in grade 9, 14 years old actually I'll start telling my story from that age. I'm dating the bad boy of the school gosh I'm so in love weird enough his in grade 8 and his older than me.

Lelothando- that's me

Leon- my boo thang

Siyabulela- big bro

Nosihle- my mother

Lubanzi- my dad

Yeah my dad is xhosa from Lusikisiki but I've never been there and my mom is Zulu from Umzinto. We stay at Port Shepstone.

## part 1 I am scared of lonely

I wake up again after another nightmare, in this nightmare I'm sitting in a dark corner all by myself it raining and I'm surrounded by snakes, which is weird cause I haven't had them since I started dating Leon in March. Lord I love him so much but it like everyone is against us, my friends say I deserve better well deep down I know that's true Leon is what you call a bad boy but when his with me it so different his soft loving and so tender he understands me I feel complete with him and being with him means no nightmares. Well that was up until he started cheating on me with Nokukhanya I've heard the rumors and I've seen them together but I'm in denial I mean Leon loves me and I love him so I'm sure Nokukhanya is just a fling and she knows that Leon and I are together so whatever. It 6:00 which means it 30 minutes before my alarm rings so might as well wake up and get ready for school. So I go about doing my hygiene process put on my uniform, take out my yesterday's book n sort out the ones I'll need for today, go to the kitchen and make myself breakfast while eating aunt Dolly (wouldn't call her a maid she's more like my mom) comes downstairs.

Dolly: morning Lelo wam

Me: morning mommy, you up early uyaphi coz you know I don't really need you in the morning. It cold you should be sleeping.

Dolly- aah aibo I want to see you before you leave for school and make sure you carrying lunch food at the cafe is not good for you.

Me: yea yea you right about lunch actually I forgot to make it ..... I say as I get up to make it

Dolly: no yekela idla uzoba late I will make it for you, go get your bag and blazer

Me: sho case mamzo.

I run to my room and collect everything, get to the kitchen sit by the counter and continue with my food... I'm a huge coco pops fan. By the time I'm done eating my lunch is ready. 07:30 my transport hoots by the gate so I leave for school.

Dolly: bye Lelo I love you

Me: ngigcwele name oledi I shout as I walk towards the gate.

As soon as the car stops by the school park lot I see my friends Ndumo and Asa get to them and we walk in go sit by the grounds.

Asa: aibo kodwa Lelo when are you dumping Leon

Ndumo: seriously gee it about time you leave him he is such a downgrade from Tyson.

Well Tyson is an ex of mine that I left for Leon his your typical cheese boy, we come from the same neighborhood his in matric straight A learner lol total opposite of Leon.

Me: you know guys I can't just leave Leon and I've been telling you to stop comparing Leon to Tyson abafani Tyson is always busy. And can we talk about something else.

Ndumo: mxm yazi nje wena awuzazi kuth ufunani

Me: lol nalibhandi boh

As we seated talking about random things I see Leon with his friends walking towards us, suddenly I feel hot and uncomfortable flip my guy is freakn hot bru hha ( tall, dark, brackets, muscular, juicy pink lips, his walk screams confidence) as usual his shirt is not tucked in and his not wearing a school tie, wearing a black skinny chinos instead of grey school pants with black carvela. By the time he gets to us my cheeks are already red he just has this affect on me.

With a smile to die for he offers me his hand n I take it, soft peck on my lips than hugs me.

Leon: muntu wan

Me: mpilo yam, unjan kodwa

Leon: ayi I'm ok Lelo just that I missed you babe, wena unjan?

Me: I'm well I missed you too kakhulu futhi, why didn't you come to school izolo

Leon: I'm sorry baby girl but there was a house party ka Nokukhanya

Me: mmh I see, well I'm sure you had fun. \*i roll my eyes

Leon: ayike you know I don't like that kuthen baby ngathi awungikholwa or you don't trust me anymore.

Me: it just that people talk Leon.

He lifts my chin with his index finger and looks deep into my eyes, I can't help but blush

Leon: look at me nana, I love you and only you nobody can come between us I would

never allow them to I love you too much. People are going to talk vele it what they do but please don't let it get it you, what we have is real.

Me: I love you baby.

He kisses my forehead then hold my face and kisses me, that I got you n you got me kiss it so deep n sensual my knees go weak as this tongue invades my mouth sending shivers through my spin my hands go around his neck and his hands goes down and he grabs my ass I can't help but moan in his mouth. By the time we pull back his eyes are small and red.

Leon: ngiyakuthanda Lelothando my heart beats for you.

I can't help but look at him as one tear falls from my eye. I love him so much but deep down I know I shouldn't be with him. The bell rings time to go to class before I know it, it brake and I spend it with my girls. Than it back to class after 2 periods it brake again as always I spend my 2nd brake with Leon. Soon after that it after school, I wait for my transport with Lungi we use the same transport and she's friends with Nokukhanya. I get home and I see mom's and dad's cars outside which means they home this is weird cause they can't stand each other.

## **part 2 I am scared of lonely**

The closer I get to the front door I can hear my mom crying and dad shouting so I run inside I find my dad on top of mom punching her like she's a punching bag God his drunk again. I scream for him to stop but he pushes me so hard my head hits the wall. Mom is crying and begging him to stop.

Mom: lubanzi please stop do you really want your daughter to see you like this.

Dad: ayi mani musa ukuthetha ikaka Nosihle ucinga uba I'm your fool neh.

I'm just seating there and crying, mom picks me up n takes me to my room where she locks me in. The arguing gets stronger in the lounge I call siyabulela.

Siya: hello mtase

Me: \*crying\* thena uzongishiya Siyabulela eh! How can you leave me alone with these people

Siya: kwenzekalani why you crying? Is it mom n dad?

Me: Tata is back got back from school he was beating up u'mama again. Please come back home bhuti wam

Siya: I'll come this weekend I promise you nana I'm so sorry you have to go through all this. Play some music on your phone n put your headphones.

Me: okay I love you

Siya: I love you too lil sis

I do just as he says I play my music and get in bed with my uniform. I fall asleep when I wake up it been two hours since I slept there's no more shouting so I get up n change into shorts n vest put on my flops. Go to my mothers room just to check on her but then I hear moans n groans as I get closer to her room. A part of me says walk away but the curios part says peak through the keyhole and I do just that only to regret it when I see my mom riding my dad and dads hands on her breast. I quickly run to the lounge just as I sit down isho indlala so I go to make myself a sandwich just than Aunt Dolly comes back.

Dolly: hey Lelo wam, is your dad home ngibona his car?

Me: yes

Dolly: mmh

Me: please don't aunt ... I say as I begin crying and she doesn't say anything just hugs me

Dolly: bayakuthanda kodwa never forget that

Me: if you say so anti, I'm gona go do my homework

Dolly: ok ngisapheka.

Instead of doing my homework I put on a hoody, take my phone n earphones decide to take a walk. It already around 7 so it a bit dark as I'm walking I see Tyson walking towards his car, he sees me and stops until I reach him. He looks good I think to myself in his sweatpants and hoody with all stars.

Tyson: muhle wam ..... He says as he hugs me n kiss my forehead

Me: Ty, unjan?

Tyson: I'm good wena unjan, you look sad

Me: I'm ok

Tyson: don't lie I saw that your dad is home

Tyson knows how my dad is, we were dating for over a year.

Me: \*sigh\* yea well you know how he is.

Tyson: get in muhle wam lets take a drive.

We get in, he plays music softly. He he takes my hand and put it on the gear with his hand on top of mine. He always does this, it a simple thing but to us it screams I'm here for you.

Tyson: you know Lelothando we meant to be.

I just stare at him

Tyson: I understand that you just taken by Leon and his bad boy reputation but deep down you know that you meant to be with me and you just scared coz I'll be leaving for university next year but baby I'll still come home and who knows I might go to Ukzn instead of Wits.

Me: Tyson please take me home if this is what you going to do.

I just can't sit here in this car and listen to him saying all of this coz there's some truth to it, if he wasn't in matric on his way to varsity I'd be with him I wouldn't have fallen for Leon but I did, I can't be with him his going to leave and I'll be alone I can't be alone the thought of it scares me.

Tyson: I'm sorry babe I won't say anything, anyway Nosi has been asking about you (Nosi is his little sister cutest baby ever)

I smile thinking about how much she adores me

Me: tell her I'll visit this weekend

Tyson: really?

Me: yep, I'll be visiting her not you though

Tyson: ouch muhle wam .... He says smiling

Tyson: let's get you ice cream than back home.

Me: sho thing you know I never say no to ice cream.

We get to kfc n buy ice cream, as we leave I remember that dad is home. We get home nagempela u'tata usakhona, his car is still outside the garage meaning his not spending the night. Tyson drops me off and I get in go to my room get busy with my homework, finish up go watch some Tv while chatting to Leon.

Leon: muntu wam, how about you visit me this weekend

Me: I can't leon I already have plans

Leon: plans with Tyson?

Geese hear we go again mxm

Me: aibo bbe ofcos not

Leon: cela ukungenziwa islima Lelothando yezwa

Me: ok ngiyezwa ... Goodnight aunt dolly is calling me.

I log off, go to the kitchen find anti still cooking

Me: mamzo

Dolly: lol I see Tyson put a smile on your face

Me: aibo anti .... I say while blushing

Dolly: uryt ke lomfana waka Dlamini akafani nje with all these young boys from around here

Me: let's change the subject please.

Dolly: lol go check on your parents the food is ready

I go to moms room

Me: mama ukudla kuryt, anti seya phaka

Dad: bring okwethu lapha Lelo

Me:ok I say as I go to the kitchen get their food n take it to them. Dad opens the door n take it I can see mom sleeping.

Aunt dolly n I eat In the lounge while watching tv having small random chats. We both head to our rooms and sleep after I've washed dishes. Before I know it I wake up it 6:30 my alarm rings I had a peaceful sleep with no nightmares. I go about preparing for the day, go to the kitchen to find aunti making breakfast, while eating mom comes down dressed for work with lot of make up.

Mom: Lelothando

Me: yebo mama

Mom: I got a double shift at work meaning I'll only be back tomorrow morning and I talked to your brother

Me: I see

Mom: please stop worrying your brother he needs to focus on school Law it hard

Me: yebo

Mom: oryt I love you Lelo

Me: ngiyezwa mama

Mom: mmh come I'll drop you off at school

Me: ok thanks

We left ei kwathuleka in the car, I decided to brake the silence.

Me: so mama wena notata are back together

Mom: what ? No baby. (She pauses) what we have is complicated Lelo. I love your father but his not good for me.

Me: I understand.

She drops me off at school, it Friday meaing most learners aren't in school including Leon and I notice that Nokukhanya is also not in. Anyway ntambama I have play date so to say to with Nosi and I'm excited. As I leave the school I see imoto ka Tyson he steps out and come to me.

Tyson: hey muhle wam

Me: Ty unjan

Tyson: I'm ok. Asambe bhabha will take you home first so you can change than will go home.

Indeed he takes me home I change into a white summer dress with gold saddles. We leave, we get to his house only find that Nosi went to the mall with his mom so it just us two.

**part 3 I am scared of lonely**



Tyson: well bhabha we can either stay and wait for Nosi or just go out catch a movie and early dinner since it Friday.

I thought about what he was saying, I mean after all I don't wana go home and hangout with anti dolly. Being alone with Ty is not a good idea especially being indoors so going out seemed like a good idea.

Me: yea sure whatever lets go out.

Tyson: sho ke ngiyabuya I'm gona go change, make yourself at home you know where everything is.

He kisses my cheek n leaves, I go to the kitchen and get myself bottled water than wait for him. While minding my business chatting with Ndumo he comes down geese he looks godly in brown skinny chinos, white tshirt and brown Nike air. I can't help but stare, heres the thing Tyson is your natural yellow bone with big eyes and really black hair like he colours it, his tall (well I have a thing for tall guys) his lips are thick n pink.

Tyson: yoh what's up ngimubi yin.

Geese didn't notice I was still staring at him.

Me: lol .. What? Ofcos not. Are you done asambe.

Tyson: oryt.

We left for Shelly center, the ride there was nice we were singing along to metro it was the hip hop slot while having a stupid conversation. Got there picked a movie that was starting at 4:15 it was still 2:30 so we took a walk around the mall window shopping while laughing and talking. Well I'm really comfortable around Ty so being free and happy just comes out naturally. I get a call from Siyabulela.

Me: hello bhuti

Siya: unjan Lelo ka mama

Me: ayi ndiphilile bhuti akhonto

Siya: lalala mtase I can't come home I'm really sorry.

Me: it ok Siyabulela mama told how busy varsity is so I understand

Siyabulela: I'm sorry neh. uphi ke coz you not at home I can hear the noise.

Me: lol aibo bhuti ngise Shelly with friends.

Siya: oryt ke Lelo ka mama, I love you and you better stay away from boys.

Me: ok ke I love you nami bhuti wam bye.

I end the call feeling a little sad I mean why doesn't Siyabulela come home often it like his running away and leaving me behind.

Tyson: aibo Lelo sukhala.

I didn't even realize I was crying.

Me: \*fake smile\* oh I'm sorry Ty.

He doesn't say anything just hugs me hard.

Tyson: I'm sorry Lelo it going to be ok, I love you muhle wam.

He kisses my forehead, just as Nokukhanya and her friends pass us by while laughing.

Nokukhanya: lol mmh how cosy if only Leon knew.

And they laugh really loud and walk away. We continue walking around and before we know it, it 3:30 so we go to the cinema get pop corn coke n wine gums, we watch the movie soon afterwards it finishes. So we grab dinner at steers.

Tyson: so Lelo how are things between you and your mom?

Me: ayi Ty uyazi kuth mama unjan kuye it work before anything

Tyson: at least khona u'Dolly.

As he says that my hearts just warms up, I love that woman she's been working at home since I was 8.

Me: yes she is. Ty how come you not dating I mean it May now and we broke up in March.

Tyson: the heart wants what it wants Lelo I can't help it njena.

I smile as he says that coz I know what he means.

Me: aibo Ty what do you mean?

I ask with a smile

Tyson: I love you Lelo I've loved you since were in grade 7 but I waited for you to get to high school coz I didn't want it to look like I'm taking advantage of a primary kid.

Me: I know and I'm sorry Tyson you deserve better

Tyson: no I deserve you

Me: I'm scared Ty you going to leave me for varsity

Tyson: I won't even if I go I'm not going to die at varsity bhabha weekends and vacations  
I'll be here with you and anyway it only May I'll be leaving next year February I love you  
Lelo allow me to make you happy

Me: please take me home Tyson I can't do this.

I say with tears flowing freely down my cheeks.

Tyson: please don't cry I'm sorry let's leave.

He pays and we leave, the ride back home is filled with silence until we get to my gate.

Tyson: I'm sorry Lelothando didn't mean to make you sad just that I love you so much  
and it hurts seeing that stupid little boy play with your heart.

I don't say anything just leave him. I get in at home anti is in the lounge watching tv. I  
walk in and go straight to my room, take a bath n get in my pjs play some music on my  
iPod I log on whatsapp and chat with my girls well Leon is offline this is always the case  
on Friday nights. I tell the girls about Tyson.

Ndumo: Tyson yakuthanda Lelo why can't you give him a chance he has never hurt you  
before

Asa: seriously gee Ndumo is ryt you two are meant for each other

Me: you guys don't understand anyway goodnight got banana love for nina.

Them: goodnight we love you.

People don't understand why I'm with Leon I've fal deeply in love with him yea sure his  
not Tyson but Tyson is leaving and Leon will still be in school up until I leave for varsity  
than who knows what going to happen but for now I need him to stop the nightmares  
to ensure that I won't be lonely while Tyson is at varsity. I love Tyson I'm his princess but  
I just can't be with him. Like the saying goes 'if you can't be with the one you love, love  
the one you with' so I love Leon and I'm with him not Tyson. I cry myself to self while  
clinging to my teddy like it my last breath.

I'm woken up in the morning by my phone ringing and it my boo thang I can't help but  
smile.

Me: hello mpilo yam

Leon: morning Lelo ngicela uphume I'm by your house

Me: aibo Leon it still morning I just woke up I'm still in my pjs

Leon: ei Lelo please don't irritate me come out now before I barge in!

Me: ok I'm coming.

I jump off the bed run to the bathroom rinse my mouth n wash my face. While wondering what's wrong with Leon I've never heard him being this forceful. Put on my gown and go outside to him. I see him standing outside his dad's car in shorts tshirt n flops. I get to him open my hands for a hug but he just stands there and look at me with hurt in his eyes.

Me: hawu baby ngenzen?

He doesn't answer but slaps me too hard I stand there look at him in shock, I've never been slapped before even my parents don't hit me.

Leon: you think I'm a fool neh! Qaba kuba nami coz you would rather be with Tyson neh?!!

#### **part 4 I am scared of lonely**

Me: I can't believe you just did that Leon what's wrong with you eh

Leon: yangifebela Lelo ubukisa ngami

He attempts to hit me again but I step back and start walking towards the gate but he runs after me and pull me back to the car and he drives. I just start crying and hyperventilating lot of thought are running through my mind and I'm thinking what will mom n aunt dolly say. He stops at his house and I think ikubo coz I've never been there.

Leon: phuma

\*mute

Leon: damn it mani Lelothando ngithe phuma!!

He bangs the steering wheel and I get out. We walk inside and go upstairs to his room I think, we get in and he locks the door plugs his phone to the speakers and play music loudly.

Leon: sit down

I just stare at him with a blank expression

Leon: hlala phansi lelo or you going to stand there the whole day

I sit down on a chair by his study desk and he chuckles

Leon: ei muntu wam wahlala lapho come sit next to me on the bed please

Me: Leon why you doing this

Leon: uyafeba nje muntu wam and I love you

Me: so you won't even wait for me to explain

Leon: why should I ? I already know kuthi you were with Tyson izolo at the mall but you said you can't be with me.

He picks me up and throws me on top of the bed quickly gets on top of me and starts kissing me roughly just then I start crying all over again I'm thinking is he going to rape me. He looks at me for a long time as I cry and a single tear falls from him

Leon: I love you Lelothando Tolo I love you so much it hurts I can't bare the thought of you being with anyone else especially him.

Me: I'm sorry Leon it was just an innocent movie

Leon: if you wanted to see a movie you should have told me to take you to the cinema.

Me: I know and I'm sorry

Leon: please stay away from him, he is a no go area for me. I'm not saying don't have guy friends but just no him please understand Lelo wam.

Me: it ok I understand

Leon: I'm sorry I slapped you I promise it will never happen again

Me: I hope so coz I won't stand for it I'll leave you Leon I swear on our love.

He kisses me and I respond, it a slow kiss his tongue invades my mouth and I allow him to he tastes like mint. I let out a small moan as his hand goes in my pj pants and I stop him.

Me: I need to go home Leon

Leon: you will go later

Me: aibo I have to go home what will mah say

Leon: ok fine asambe

He takes me back home and he stop two houses away from my house.

Leon: Lelo please stay away from him please ma'Tolo wam

Me: I will I promise

Leon: ok I love you

I smile and kiss him then walk out and go home and find anti eating breakfast.

Dolly: Lelo ulale kuphi

Me: hha mama in my room tshin thiza

Dolly: vela kuphi pho

I just stare at her thinking of what I'm going to say but nothing comes to mind my lips are dry, im not used to lying I respect her too much for that

Me: ayi I was here nje I woke up and took a walk

She chuckles in disbelief and shakes her head. I quickly run to my room before she says anything else. I take a bath get out lotion my body get dressed in a cool maxi navy dress fix my braids into a bun put on my flops and go to the kitchen and make breakfast for myself. While eating mom comes in and sits with me.

Mom: molo Lelo

Me: hello mama unjan

Mom: I'm ok just tired wena unjan

Me: I'm ok

She looks at me for the longest time and shakes her head

Mom: Lelo shawe ubani

Flip I forgot to put make up

Me: no one mama ngilale kabi

Mom: don't lie Lelo tell me the truth

Me: it nothing !

I say louder than I tended and she looks at me in disbelief.

Mom: aibo Lelo sumdala manje sukwazi kungthethisa

\*mute\*

Mom: Lelo are you dating manje? Did a boy do this to you? Don't ever let a boy hit you

mtana it starts small and turns in a big abusive relationship.

I just laugh in a sarcastic manner... Like wtf this woman doesn't even know a thing about me sezozenza u'mama manje.

Me: I'm not dating please excuse me.

I love my mother but what right does she have telling me about being in an abusive relationship while she and dad are on and off, she's still with him after all these years of abuse ayi mani she's such a hypocrite. And how am I supposed to know right and wrong when I've practically raised myself.

### **part 5 I am scared of lonely**

As I'm sitting in my room chatting on whatsapp with my friends and Leon mama comes in and sits on top of my bed

Mom: "Lelo my child I know I spend more time at the hospital than I do at home with you, I'm not the best mom in the world but I do love you and I want what's best for you. Please talk to me don't be afraid all I ask is for you to be transparent"

\*mute\*

Mom: "how about we go the mall and hangout have a bonding session just the two of us it been awhile"

Me: "I'd love that mama" smile

Mom: "oryt lets get ready then"

I jump into the bathroom just to freshen up, put on my white ripped boyfriend jean with a black tank top and black all stars put a little powder on my face and dark purple lipstick when I'm done I go down and wait for mom. After 15 minutes she comes down looking really pretty In her ink ankle grazer white shirt and white stilettos (here's the thing about mom, she's a curvey yellow bone with a small waist and long natural hair she hardly puts on a weave).

Me: "tjo awusemhle mama" huge goofy smile

Mom: "thank you ma'Tolo nawe umuhle"

Me: "asambe ke and mah I know it far but can we please pretty please go to pava"

Mom: laughing "it ok we'll go there"

On our way there we busy singing along to some music mom is so in touch with the latest music, we having a light conversation about school and work and then she start with the boys talk.

Mom: "lelo are you dating please be honest with me nana"

Me: " yes mom I am"

I can tell she's disappointed but not angry.

Me: " mama I'm sorry "

Mom: " I won't lie Lelo I don't like it at all but I guess it part of growing up just don't rush things please don't do things you going to regret and don't feel obliged to doing things you not ready for"

Me: "ngiyezwa"

She smiles and I smile back thinking to myself how much I love my mom even though I don't understand her sometimes.

Mom: "so what's his name"

I smile an blush

Me: " it Tyson dlamini mama he lives 4 houses down from ours"

I know I lied but I can't tell mom I'm dating Leon he has a really bad reputation mama would have a fit and forbid me from ever seeing him.

Mom: " his old nje nana his in matric and you only in grade 9 but his a good boy, well mannered and smart"

Can't help but give her a fake smile. Finally we get to pava first thing we do is go to our favorite shops Cotton On, Yde, Factorie and ofcos Mr Price. After shopping we take our things back to the car and go to spur for some food we eat and get a takeaway for aunt dolly. Once we done we go back home, I'm in and out of sleep the whole way home shopping can be tiring. We get home I immediately go to my room bath get in my pjs and sleep. I wake up check the time it 02:20 am I woke up because of a nightmare I'm sweaty cold and shivering in this one im sitting in the dark crying I can see Leon walking



away from me he keeps walking until he's totally out of sight then I hear loud laughs but I can't see who is laughing.

## **part 6 I am scared of lonely**

I sat up trying to think what was going on, this was really confusing to me coz my nightmares are usually just of myself in a dark corner. I must have fallen asleep after that coz I woke up in the morning with a banging headache. Nothing really happened on Sunday besides a lot of eating, watching TV and chatting...

Monday morning my alarm rang at 6:30 got up went about preparing for school I really needed to get my hair done. Went to the kitchen and found mama and aunt Dolly having breakfast and I joined them.

Dolly: "ei madoda oLelo don't even greet anymore"

I let out a chuckle

Me: "uxolo anyway njani?"

Mama just laughed and shakes her head. We finished breakfast over light conversation before I knew my transport had arrived so I left for school. Mondays are so long and busy, soon it was home time I spent my breaks with my friends didn't see Leon. As soon as I got to the gate to wait for my transport I saw Leon and Nokukhanya talking all cosy, Nokukhanya saw me and said something to Leon coz he looked my way and continued with whatever they were talking about. My transport came and I went home. Week went by the nightmares were getting worse every night and Leon and I didn't speak the whole week he avoided me at school, he wasn't online at all throughout the whole week. The whispers and loud laughs I'd get from Nokukhanya and her friends got worse. Friday at 6:00 Leon woke me up from my nap.

Me: "hello"

Leon: "hey muntu wam njani"

I chuckle in disbelief

Me: "I'm fine wena njani"

Leon: "I'm good, lalela im outside by your gate. Please come out I miss you"

Me: "ok I'm coming"

I get up take my pjs off put on my black ripped jean bum shorts, a black tank top and my flops, quickly fix my hair go to the bathroom abd rinse my mouth then leave. As I get out kwi gate I see him standing there with his hands in his pocket wearing black skinny jean white hoody and white all stars. I get to him and as angry as I am I can't help but smile, he gives he a tight hug and we share a deep kiss I just lose myself in his lips and hold.

Leon: "I missed you so much muntu wam"

I look at him while thinking to myself about how he has been acting. I want to ask him but I don't want to upset him, I just wana be with him and forget about everything and everyone else.

Me: "I missed you too mpilo yam" smile

Leon: "let's get out of here, we can go home and hangout I'll bring you back soon"

I say ok without even thinking about what will my mom or aunt dolly say. We walk two houses up from mine to where he left his dad's car we get there and find his friends drinking. We get in and he drives off, he drops his friends off and continue driving to his house. We get there and go straight to his room after greeting his brother in the lounge. The first thing he does is push me to the wall and smashes his lips on mine kissing me roughly picks me and I rap my legs around his waist he walks towards his bed and puts me on top of it, he kisses my jaw and move to my neck I let out a small moan while his hand is brushing my breast under my top before I realise we both naked his tongue brushing against mine. I moan again at the sensation and the taste of him, his breath quickened along with mine and he groaned as he went down sucking my boobs the heat of his skin radiates igniting my whole body. I run my fingers down his skin grazing my fingertips over his muscles while his chest rises and falls with heavy breath. I pull him up and start sucking and licking on his neck he groans deeply and sucks in a quick breath I feel the ache for him build. In my impatience I raise my hip to his and he groans as he slips one finger in me and start moving it as I let out soft moans eagerly needing to satisfy the ache that is building up second by second I start moving roughly in the moment of ecstasy as I come all sense start coming back and I push him away. He looks

at me in confusion and I shake my head.

Leon: " aibo baby kwenzenjan?"

Me: "I'm sorry Leon but I can't it's to soon"

Leon: "the fuck Lelo! After you've came look at me" he points to his dick

Me: "I'm sorry"

Leon: " fuck Lelo you such a bloody tease a spoilt little tease"

His so angry I can see his veins are showing and I just look at him

Leon: " this is exactly why I'm cheating on you with Nokukhanya you so childish just get dressed and go home"

With that he walks in his bathroom and I'm left on the bed shocked and hurt.

## **part 7 I am scared of lonely**

I sat there on the bed thinking of how naive I have been, how I thought Leon loved me. I was so hurt and angry I kept on replaying our relationship trying to make sense of how things got to where there were and I just couldn't come up with a straight answer. I heard water in the bathroom so I figured he was showering I quickly got dressed and waited for him to come out he finally did with a towel around his body I couldn't help but stare Leon had an amazing body and he knew it. He saw me staring and dropped the towel walked around the room naked like he was modeling all this time I was looking down I kept thinking and looking at him when he wasn't noticing. Him being naked was doing something to me but I'd be stupid if I showed it. He dressed up in black skinny jean, maroon tshirt, maroon vans and black biker with black straight cap. He was about to leave his room when I followed him and he looked at me as if I'm crazy.

Leon: "uyaphi ke?" Straight face

Me: "I'm going home" answered confused

Leon: "manje whose taking you home"

I felt like crying right there

Me: "angani you brought me here so you will take me home"

Leon: "you crazy if you think I got time for your shit Lelothando, I'm going out to my

friends maybe hook up with someone who won't leave me hanging"

Those words cut straight to the core I just started crying

Leon: "ei there we go with the water works" he sounded so irritated and impatient "get in the bed and sleep Lelo I will see you in the morning coz I'm not about to drive all the way to your place. I'm thirsty and horny"

Me: "Leon please mah will kill me"

He chuckled

Leon: "do you think I care"

With that said he left and all I could was cry. I sat in his room for over an hour thinking his going to come back but he didn't. Eventually I fell asleep an incoming call on my phone woke me up I checked the caller ID with hope that it was Leon but it wasn't for some reason I was disappointed I didn't even answer the call. The person called again as much as I didn't feel like talking to anyone I answered.

Me: "hello"

Tyson: "hey Lelo unjan, were you asleep already?"

Me: "yeah I was asleep but it ok I'm up now"

Tyson: " where are you?"

For some reason I felt a need to lie about my whereabouts

Me: "I'm at home why"

Tyson: "well that's weird cause your mom called my mom asking if you were with me or not. She said you not home and she can't get ahold of you"

Shit !! I remembered that I put mom's number on reject list when we had an argument on Wednesday. I just cried again Tyson was still on the line he kept saying hello until I talked

Me: " please come pick me up" I said between sobs

Tyson: "please stop crying Lelo im coming just tell me kuth ukuph"

I felt so stupid and defeated for some reason

Me: "I'm at Leon's home I don't really know the address but it somewhere around hiberden"

Tyson: "it ok I'll find out I'll be there soon"

After about 10 minutes Leon came back stumbling he was drunk. He looked at me and smile revealing his dimples.

Leon: "Lelo wam you still here" he got on top of the bed and I looked the other way he turned me around to face him. I just looked at him firstly he smiles but his smile turned into a frown in an instant.

Leon: "yazi muntu wam uNokukhanya didn't want to give me some uthi I must dump you first then she will start giving me some again" he held my cheeks roughly and it hurt so bad, being light skinned I was sure that I'm going to be buried "so what am I supposed to do Lelo you won't give me some and my side dish doesn't want to give me some coz she thinks I'm using her because of you"

I couldn't say anything all I did was just cry as he pressed harder and forcefully opened my legs getting between them. Just then my phone rang Tyson was calling he let out a loud laugh and answered the phone putting it on loudspeaker

Tyson: "hello Lelo im outside you can come out"

Leon looked at me in disbelief while shaking his head he got so angry my heart started beating fast.

Leon: "oh sho Tyson mf2 she's coming out now give her 2 minutes" he dropped the call and slapped me so hard. He got off me started pacing up and down his room with his hands on his head.

Leon: "you think I'm your fool neh Lelo"

I got off the bed put my flops on and took my phone as I was about to reach the door he grabbed my hair and banged my forehead on the wall I let out a loud sob then heard footsteps coming towards the door there was a knock.

Person: "kwenzekalani Leon"

Leon: "ayi lutho mom I just fell but I'm ok"

His mom: "ok go to bed it late"

I heard the footsteps as there were fading until we couldn't hear them anymore.

Leon: " look at what you making me do Lelo, you turning me into a monster at bloody

16 lelo what the fuck is wrong with you eh. Can't you see I love you"

Me: "I'm sorry Leon"

He punched me hard I fell down and he started kicking me on my stomach I tried so hard to protect my face.

Leon: "get up" I tried getting up but I couldn't so he helped me up "go to the bathroom and take a shower I'll come join you I'm gona go have a conversation with your boyfriend outside"

He left and I got in the bathroom stripped naked got in the shower just let the water do it thing after awhile he came in and joined me his lip had a cut I just knew that he fought with Tyson but I decided to not ask him about it. We got out and he gave me his tshirt while he put on boxers. He switched off the light and we got under the covers I was facing the other way he made me turn and snuggle on his chest, he kissed my forehead.

Leon: "I love you ma'Tolo"

\*mute\*

Leon: "Lelo im talking to you"

Me: "I love you too Leon"

With that said we slept

## **part 8 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up in the morning as the sun shined through the window Leon wasn't in bed I didn't move an inch I was just laying there thinking about everything and how I didn't have a nightmare the previous night with Leon's arms around me. I got up searched for my phone but I couldn't find it, so I went to the bathroom and rinsed my mouth. When I got back in the room Leon was sitting on top of the bed.

Leon: "morning baby I see you up" he said that as he got closer to me kissed me and brushed my cheeks "I'm sorry about last night I promise you it will never happen again" I just nodded "but I gotta admit having you in my arms and feeling your heartbeat against my skin was the best thing ever" I just smiled and kissed him

Me: "have you seen my face" I asked as I kept playing with his short hair and he couldn't

even look at me in the eyes

Leon: "muntu wam I'm really sorry I don't know what came over me you need to stop making me angry" I looked at him in shock

Me: "so you saying it my fault that you hit me" I was starting to cry

Leon: "no it not" he looked everywhere else but at me "Lelo I'm seriously sorry this will never happen again" he started kissing me and I responded his tongue invaded my mouth and I allowed it he picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist as the kiss deepened he pinned against the wall while his hand went down to my vagina and he rubbed on my clit as I jerked violently he walks us to the bed puts me down and quickly gets on top of me "I'm sorry Lelo" he says as his lips move from my lips to my neck he takes off the tshirt I'm wearing leaving me completely naked he kisses me all over my body and when he reaches my pussy he inhales sharply and groans before I know it I feel his tongue circling my clitoris driving me insane he starts penetrating me with his tongue I moan and grab his head pushing him deeper he moves his tongue in an agonizing slow movement in and out, he goes back up and kisses each of my breast while teasing my nipples. Comes back to my lips while putting one finger in me then taking out he does this a couple times then shoves the finger in his mouth while smirking at me "delicious" he murmurs. He inserts the finger again in and out a couple of times then put a second one. He sucks on my breast then goes back to my clit his tongue doing its magic while his fingers are moving in a circular rhythm in me stroking the front wall of my vagina I grab the sheets as I feel the waterfall erupting within me. "I love you Lelo" he says as he lies next to me pulling me closer to him.

Me: "I love you mpilo yam"

Leon: "come lets go have breakfast I'm sure mom is done making it"

Me: "I can't meet your mom look at my face" my left cheek and forehead are pink

Leon: "please stop making me feel guilty"

Me: "it wasn't my intention"

Leon: "it fine, I'll go get us food"

I spent the rest of my Saturday in Leon's room watching movies and bonding with him

later on around 21:00 he drove me home and dropped me off by the gate I buzzed and aunt dolly opens for me. As soon as I got through the gate up the driveway I saw my dad's car and I just knew shit was about to go down I wished I could just go back to Leon's place or sneak in without them noticing me but there was no way so I had to face the lion that was my father. As soon as I entered the house he roared

Dad: uvelaphi Lelothando Lisakhanya Tolo ?!!!!

He had a belt in his hand and my mom was sitting there looking at me with disappointment.

### **part 9 I am scared of lonely**

Dad: "I'm talking to you Lelothando" I just stand there my lips dry I can't even think of a lie I freeze on the same spot at the moment I don't even think I'm breathing. I look at my mom with pleading eyes. I'm scared of dad he has anger issues that why he doesn't hit us. In all my 14 years dad or mom has never laid their hands on me so to see dad this angry towards me worse with a belt in his hands scares the living shit out of me. If u'tata hits you chances are you will wake in a hospital. Siyabulela and I were fortunate enough that dad always contained his anger towards us. I look at mom and she just looks the other way.

Me: "mama please" before I can say anything else dad is in front of me and he gives me a hard slap with the back of his hand I don't even know when he dropped the belt. I fall to the floor and immediately my nose starts bleeding I let out a loud sob, his about to hit me again when mom screams.

Mom: "lubanzi stop!"

She quickly runs to me and kneels in front of me.

Mom: "you not going to help her in anyway by beating her up, violence doesn't solve anything lubanzi"

Dad: "ayi Nosihle yayivuna wena lengane" he huffs

Mom: "talk to her"

Dad: "do you want history repeating itself Nosihle eh, you want her to fall pregnant at



14” my mom fell pregnant at my age with Siyabulela and dad was in matric so after passing matric he became a policeman in order to take care of mom and Siyabulela. Mom: “was there a need for you to say that at this moment, you act like I got myself pregnant” now their shouting at each other and I’m just sitting on the floor thinking of how fucked up my parents relationship is. Pictures can be deceiving when people look at my family their see the respectable doctor and the strict proper policeman with their well behaved smart kids. I leave them in the lounge and run to my room locking the door behind me. I take a quick shower and put on my long sleeve pjs just to hide the bruises on my arm and legs. Take my pc to watch vampire diaries I love Damon get under the blankets just then I remember that I left my phone at Leon’s place. I must have fallen asleep coz when I woke up the house was dark and quite I was starving. I get up go to the kitchen warm some food while boiling milk when it all done I go to the lounge to eat while watching tv I check the time it was 2:30 am I check outside through the window and see my dads car I guess his sleeping over. My parents relationship is so hard to understand siya and I gave up trying long time ago it just on and off. I must have fallen asleep on the couch coz I wake up as aunt dolly is shaking me in the morning, I sit up and look at her hell she’s mad at me.

Dolly: “sawubona Lelo” eish!

Me: “hi anti unjan”

Dolly: “I’m fine, come help me with breakfast”

Me: ” ok I’m coming” I run to my room, wash my face and rinse my mouth then go down and help her. She making full english breakfast we talking while busy.

Dolly: “Lelo why are you so disrespectful” ashu!!! I wasn’t expecting that at all

Me: “anti I’m sorry about Friday”

Dolly: “kade ukuph”

Me: “Leon didn’t want to bring me back” I say with tears in my eyes

Dolly: “I thought you were dating Tyson nje, whose this Leon manje”

Me: “I lied about being with Tyson”

Dolly: “why” she pauses for awhile and thinks before talking “is he the one who slapped

you last week Saturday” now the tears are just falling freely

Me: in a low voice I say “yes, please don’t tell mom”

She gets so angry and annoyed at the same time

Dolly: “I’m telling your father” she shouts as my parents walk in the kitchen.

Dad: “telling me what dolly” I look at her with pleading eyes as she’s about to say something I jump in

Me: “tell you that I miss Siyabulela” aunt dolly looks at me and shakes her head

Me: “I miss him dad, I want to visit him. He hardly comes home it like he has another family in Cape Town and he had forgotten all about me”

Dad: “Siya is at varsity his not on a holiday, his busy and law is hard he will come home when he can and you can’t just go to cape town”

Me: “ok I see” aunt dolly takes the food to yhe dinning area and we all sit down eat while chatting. After eating I get up collect the dishes and wash them.

The rest of the day goes by quickly mom goes to work and dad goes back to his place. I go to sleep soon my alarm rings at 6:30 am I wake up and prepare for school I have breakfast and my transport comes then it off to school we get dropped off at the school gate. As soon as I get off I see my friends and run to them.

Me: “girls” I say while we hugging each other

Asa: “I missed up and I’ve been trying to call you but your phone is off”

Me: “oh yes, I left it at Leon’s place on Saturday”

Ndumo: ” aibo Lelo don’t tell me you sleeping with him gee”

Me: “no I’m not having sex with him” I roll my eyes

Ndumo: “good, coz you can’t be sharing a dick with Nokukhanya”

I look at her in shock

Me: “that was really unnecessary” I say as I start walking away from them

Ndumo: “I’m sorry Lelo that was insensitive of me to say” she shouts while running after me

Me: “look I know that his sleeping with her but please don’t rub it on my face”

Them: “you deserve better Lelo”

Just than the bell rings and we run off to class, we all in the same class. Soon after 3 periods in break time and we head off to the tuck shop buy some hot dogs, coke and chips. Just as we walking towards our chill place Asa stops and points to the corner.

Asa: "isn't that Leon" I see him, his back is facing us but you can just tell it him.

Me: " I'll be back guys I'm going to get my phone"

I start walking towards him as I get closer I see that his not alone, his actually with Nokukhanya and they kissing my cheeks get hot and red immediately. I walk up to them and clear my throat but thy don't stop so I call out for Leon and he turns sees me standing there with my arms folded.

Leon: "Lelo" he calls out in a questioning tone and Nokukhanya giggles behind him

Me: "can I have my phone back" he walks closer me until our faces are within a kissing distance I can feel the heat of his breath on my skin he grabs my arm and holds in roughly while sinking his fingers in it. He takes out my phone from his pocket.

Leon: "your ugly boyfriend Tyson has been calling non stop it was irritating so I switched it off" he hisses and his eyes are red.

Me: "his not my boyfriend you know" his hold on my arm gets stronger

Leon: "I didn't ask you and don't give me an attitude I'm not your friend" he lets go of my arm and it hurts, I rub it.

Leon: "now run along to your friends I'm busy I'll see you 2nd break" as I start walking off he calls out my name and I look at him

Leon: "I love you" I just nod and walk away but he runs after me and hold my waist from behind

Leon: "I said I love you"

Me: "I love you too" he kisses my cheek and go back to Nokukhanya while I go to my friends who were standing where I left them watching the whole encounter.

## **part 10 I am scared of lonely**

As soon I got to my friends I just walked pass them straight to the toilet locked my self in and cried so much. My friends kept on knocking but I didn't open I just cried harder.

Ndumo: "Lelo please open up his just not worth it" I just sob louder and the bell rings

Asa: "Lelo we need to go to class get out of there and clean yourself so we can go" I block them out and continue crying up until I think they've left coz they no longer knocking. I just sit there asking myself how did I become so weak my thought are interrupted by a knock after it a loud bang, the door is forcefully opened and I look up my eyes meets Tyson's and he offers me his hand and pull me out of the cubical.

Tyson: "it's ok Lelo" I cry harder in his embrace and he just holds me tightly.

Me: "why me Tyson" he doesn't say anything but just holds me. As I cry up until there are no more tears left.

Tyson: "it going to be ok Lelo" he holds my face and look at me deeply in my eyes and I look away.

Me: "who told you I was here"

Tyson: "i saw the whole thing from the time you went to him to the time you ran pass your friends I was standing outside the toilet the whole time your friends were trying to get you out until they gave up" I look at him feeling embarrassed

Me: "oh"

Tyson: "it's ok don't beat you self up, I don't like seeing you cry it hurts" we just stare at each other and he wipes my tears kissing my cheeks then my eyes.

Tyson: "I hate it when you not ok muhle wam" he says while planting kisses all over my face "you deserve better" he leaves a soft peck on my mouth "let me in Lelo"

Me: "Tyson stop"

Tyson: "no Lelo im tired of watching that boy play with your emotions" he brings my face to his and kisses me I respond letting his tongue invade my mouth, our tongues dance together as the kiss gets deeper. All the feeling I had for him that I had managed to ignore come flooding back and it feels like fireworks. He pulls back and I keep my eyes shut im scared of opening them and looking at him.

Tyson: "Lelo open your eyes" I shake my head "please open them I want to talk you" I open them and his looking at me like his trying to figure something out like his searching my soul.

Tyson: "I love you Lelothando I never stopped, let me love you openly allow me in again please"

Me: "Ty I cant"

Tyson: "why not?" I look away coz I know what I'm about to say is not completely true and it going to hurt him

Me: "I love him it him that I want to be with not you"

Tyson: "that kiss that we just shared meant nothing to you?" I nod "don't lie Lelo stop denying what you feel for me"

Me: "look I need to go to class I'm already late I'm sure I missed my 4th period already" I attempt to stand up but he pulls me back down softly.

Tyson: "it ok I'll go with you to your next class and talk to your teacher" Ty is the head prefect at school. I sit next to him and he holds me kissing my forehead and pulls into his lap. I can't help but smile and put my head on his chest listening to his heart beat with him it feels right I feel safe and cared for.

Tyson: "I love you Lelo I love you like I've never loved before. You left me for him but I'm still here in love with you and willing to do everything and anything to get you back even if it means being your fool. I'll always be here for you ready to pick up the pieces every time he hurts you"

Me: "if I asked you to choose between me and varsity what would you choose" deep down I know it selfish of me to ask him that but I just want to know.

Tyson: "Lelo i ..." He doesn't say anything after that and the silence between us is too loud. I get up from him feeling angry.

Me: "don't worry I already know the answer" I run out of there and leave him sitting down and his head down.

## **part 12 I am scared of lonely**

Mmh brother man look really nice in all black it just made him pop out in his yellow self I was just staring at him drooling until he waved his hand in front me.

Me: "oh hey Nelo how are you?" He smiled revealing perfectly white teeth.

Nelo: "I'm good and yourself?" I smiled back

Me: "I'm good too" he came in for a hug and we hugged longer then we should have until Ndumo cleared Her throat and I pulled back

Me: "oh these are my friends Ndumo and Asa" I said pointing to them "and guys this is Nelo aah my new friend" I brushed my hair back

Nelo: "nice meeting you girls .... Yea I'm her new friend" he chuckled

Asa: "join us we going to have lunch" she was looking at his lips while talking and I bumped her shoulder

Nelo: "I'd love to but I'm rushing" kanene this guy is always in a hurry I raised my eyebrow "I was just on lunch I have to head back to work"

Me: "you work ?" I was really confused coz he looks like a 22 year old

Nelo: "yes I do, look I have to run so how about you give me your number since we friends" he said that while smirking

Asa: "yeah give him your digits Lelo so we can all hangout later" I gave her an evil stare I was so annoying the whole time Ndumo didn't say anything.

Me: "yeah sure it 074....." He smiled like there's no tomorrow.

Nelo: "thanks you, I'll call you later" he winked and left. Ndumo and I looked at Asa who was busy drooling over Nelo

Me: "what the fuck was that Asa"

Ndumo: "yea Asa bru you shouldn't have behaved that way especially in front of someone you've never met before"

Asa: "you guys seriously need to take a chill pill didn't you see that guy is hot bra!" She said that while putting her hand on her forehead "tjo my temperature just rose bru hha" we couldn't help but laugh

Ndumo: "true that friend true that I could just lick him" she licked her lips and we laughed harder

Me: "hha enough about Nelo in hungry lets go eat" we walked to chicken lickn

Asa: "a.a Lelothando Lisakhanya don't hold out on us where did you meet"

Me: "I met around home" we got to chicken lickn ate finished went to the saloon

washed my hair did straight back and my nail (clear manicure) Ndumo just relaxed hers while Asa washed and treated hers. Afterwards we went our separate ways. I got home nothing interesting happened my whole weekend was spent indoors chatting to Leon and Nelo things were good between Leon and I. I had accepted that he was with Nokukhanya as well it not like I had a choice though it pained me seeing them together. I think Tyson had had enough of me coz we hadn't talked since that day I asked him to choose outside the toilet. Another week went by it was Saturday I had lunch that with Nelo I was so excited I hardly slept the previous night our talks were exciting we would stay up until 01:00 am chatting about anything and everything but he still hasn't come out and said what are his intentions about me. I woke up Saturday had breakfast took a nice long bath, got out lotioned looked for something to wear for some reason I just couldn't decide I sat down naked with my whole wardrobe out on the floor. Finally decided on a white maxi dress with lace on the back it was a slim fit so it showed my body wore my gold sandals put on gold accessories and a white sling bag. Put on some powder and pink lipstick it was 13:50 and he said he'd be here at 14:00. I called for aunt dolly and she came to my room looked at me and smile

Dolly: "wow you look really beautiful Lelo and so grown up" I turned around and shook my ass a little while we were laughing

Me: "really mah I look ok?" She frowned

Dolly: "you don't look ok, you beautiful wish I could hide from this cruel word" a tear fall from her eye "you growing up too fast Lelo slow down" I went to her and gave her a hug

Me: "I love you mah" she smiled n I smiled back "enough with being emotional my date will be here any minute from now"

Dolly: "tell Tyson I said hi and that he must come over for dinner sometime"

Me: "oryt mah I will" yes I lied about going out with Tyson I had to I had no choice just then Nelo called saying his outside so I puffed some fragrance and left. Got out the gate as I walked towards the car he came out looking delicious in white skinny jeans flooded at the bottom, navy airmax and white tucked in short sleeve shirt.

Nelo: "hi Lelo oh my you look beautiful" he hugged and kissed my forehead I smiled

(dear lord he smelled so good)

Me: "thank you and you look hot I mean nice" he chuckled and opened the door for me  
Drove off to margate mall while talking and listening to music. Got there watched a movie had lunch while having lunch we were doing the whole 'let me know you convo'.

Me: "so where do you work"

Nelo: "uhm at sappi saico" I was shocked

Me: "but the other day you said you on lunch when we met up at Shelly. There's no way you could have left Mkhomas just to come get lunch there"

Nelo: "honestly I just didn't want to have to sit with you and your friends"

Me: "oh" was a little disappointed I don't know why

Nelo: "that Asa looked like she was ready to eat me so I got scared" I laughed so hard the people sitting next to us looked at me

Me: "sorry but she's harmless"

Nelo: "she scared me"

Me: "since you working that side how come you always this side"

Nelo: "well I have a place in Mkhomas but my home is here in margate" he looked at me like he was trying to study me couldn't help but blush "can't believe you 14 if I told how I feel about you it would be wrong".

Me: "well blame my mom for giving me this body" here's the thing about me I have a body of an 18 year old got a huge ass that sticks out in everything I wear, got wide hips I'm a size 32 34 in jeans and I have a really small waist.

Nelo: "you just a kid I feel like I'd be taking advantage of you" a part of me was really disappointed coz it seemed like he didn't want to be in a relationship with me. I also didn't want him that way but it still hurts.

Me: "how old are you?" He laughed

Nelo: "geese Lelo how old do I look"

Me: "20"

Nelo: "I'm actually 23"

Me: "that's not bad" I mumbled



Nelo: "what was that?"

Me: "nothing"

Nelo: "your dad would kill you if you were to be in a relationship with someone my age and kill me too" I fake smiled

Me: "yea he would"

Nelo: "but I'd risk him killing me for you any day"

Me: "oh ja" I really wasn't in the mood anymore. We finished eating and went to the beach took a walk and pictures afterwards he drove me home and dropped me at the gate as I was getting out my phone rang Leon was calling I got out and saw him looking at me standing a house away from my house and my knees got weak. He started walking towards the car I got back in the car and locked the door and Nelo looked at curiously.

Nelo: "what's going on?" I couldn't answer I just stared outside as Leon was walking closer...

(Bae got called in at work so I thought why not post since I can't sleep.)

### **part 13 I am scared of lonely**

Me: "Nelo please drive" I asked with begging eyes

Nelo: "drive where?" He stared at him "I brought you so now what?" Just then Leon knocked on the window on my side and Nelo opened it. Nelo look from me to Leon

Nelo: "do you need something bru" Leon got irritated

Leon: "yea I want to talk to Lelothando for a minute" they both looked at me

Nelo: "Lelo do you want to talk to him" I shook my head "you heard her bra so please walk away"

Leon: "Lelo please come over we need to talk"

Nelo: "right now she's with me, I took her at her home and I intend on making sure she gets in that gate so after that you can tell her to come out and see you so please leave" yoh I was so shocked Leon just went mxm and left

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "it ok please don't cry" yoh me being what I am I just cried harder and he kept on brushing my back.

Nelo: " who is he"

Me: " his my boyfriend" he looked puzzled

Nelo: "why you scared of him"

Me: "he he" I just cried thinking about the time he beat me up because of Tyson

Nelo: "talk to me what did he do to you nana why you scared of him"

Me: " he hits me" Nelo got angry and hit the staring wheel I got more scared

Nelo: "why haven't you left him Lelo"

Me: " I love him"

Nelo: " bullshit lelo that's ridiculous Lelo come on you smart and beautiful" he was shouting

Me: "he loves me his just confused"

Nelo: "Lelo please stop bullshiting me it annoying" aah

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "you beautiful Lelo you don't need him or any guy to fulfill your life even though I'm sure guys fall at your feet, you good and you deserve good not someone who will take out his frustrations and insecurities on you"

Me: "I hear you"

Nelo: "good now I hope you understood me" he looked at me and kissed my forehead "you really pretty, you like a delicate flower" I laugh " it good to see you laughing come let me walk you to the gate and make sure you safe"

Me: " thank you for now and for earlier I had fun"

Nelo: "anything for you nana" he walked me to the gate gave me a hug and left. For some reason I ran inside the house and found mama with aunt dolly watching TV I greeted and walked to my room changed in sweatpants and baggy tshirt. Walked back to the lounge.

Mom: "hha why did you change we going out for dinner"

Dolly: "hhe maybe she's into the whole tomboy look now" we laughed and continue

talking ended up having sandwiches for dinner. It felt good being around mom and aunt. We prayed and went to our separate bedrooms. Got in my room took a shower and wore my pjs watched vampire diaries while chatting with my friends it bothered me that Leon hadn't said anything to me. Woke up Sunday morning went to church with the family, went out for lunch. The day went on normal still nothing from Leon. Woke up Monday morning prepared for school went to school as I got to the gate I met up with my friends who didn't even greet me just started talking.

Ndumo: "yoh Lelo have you seen Leon"

Me: "not since late Saturday why"

Asa: "somebody beat him up Saturday night" I was shocked felt tears threatening my eyes

Me: "what happened" I started panicking "where is he I have to find him" I ran into the school premises and ran towards the ground where he chills with his friends. Found him smoking with his friends yoh he was bruised, blue eye more like navy, cut lip. He saw me and walked towards me the anger in his eyes was scary"

Leon: "Lelo how are you"

Me: "I'm ok baby what happened to you" he was even limping oh God bae wam though

Leon: "why do you hate me so much Lelo what did I ever do to you" I was confused

Me: "I love you baby and you really confusing me" he grabbed my neck roughly and my friends came running to us

Asa: "soze ke Leon wenze leyo kaka in front of us"

Ndumo: "exactly Leon we tired of you bullying her fuck bra act your age" he let go of me and laughed

Leon: "listen here you two bitches mind your business mxm"

Asa: "fuck you bra we not scared of you hha you just a grown little boy you don't rattle us"

Leon: "Lelo we done bra I love you but it over I can't keep on doing this with you" tears streamed down my face

Me: "what did I do to you Leon I gave you my heart fully didn't hold back at all"

Leon: " look at me Lelo fuck! Your new boyfriend did this to me" I was beyond shocked even my eyes dried out same time

Me: "no no Nelo wouldnt do that"

Leon: "so you calling me a liar Lelo neh" he was shouting people started to gather around us

Me: "no it just that ... "

Leon: "no Lelo mf2 he beat me saying I should learn how to treat girls like the fuck Lelo!! What did you say to him you used my name and make yourself look good in front of him" I was shaking my head non stop

Leon: " Lelo we done bru" after that he left and I just broke down felt like my heart is not beating properly.

#### **part 14 I am scared of lonely**

To say I felt shuttered would be an understatement I was hurt and angry at Nelo I mean who the hell gave him the right to interfere in my life like that. My friends took me to the sick room seems like I spend more time there than in class Asa told the nurse I've been vomiting and I have a headache so my mom was called to come take me home. After an hour she came my mom had to leave work because of Nelo I turned all my hurt to anger and that anger was directed to Nelo I hated him from that moment. I got home changed in my pjs took my iPod played some music that's when I fell in love with Ed Sheeran. I cried myself to sleep woke up around 16:00 tried calling Leon but he didn't answer I tried up until his phone went to voicemail think I called him over 15 times the fact that he didn't answer killed me I kept asking myself kuth why won't he give me a chance to explain what was going I wasn't even in a relationship with Nelo. I knew Nelo was trouble from the start. I decided to call him and he answered on the first ring

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "what the fuck Sbonelo?"

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "who gave you the right to interfere in my life like that" he didn't say anything

"Nelo" I screamed

Nelo: "Lelo don't shout at me I can hear you"

Me: "well answer me"

Nelo: "I won't and I'm going to hang up I'll call you when I think you've calmed down and oh Lelo you welcome" he dropped the call after that. I got more angry went to the kitchen made the most oily sandwich ever I fried up a storm (patties, fries, beacon, egg, cheese, onion rings) sat down in the kitchen ate finished left all the dirty dishes there. Went to my room than went back to the down to the kitchen got big pocket of chips, chocolate chip cookies, can of soda and ice cream went to my room and watched Princess Diaries I slept in the middle of it. A knock woke me up

Me: "who is it"

Dolly: "ei Lelo why didn't you clean after yourself" hhe this woman

Me: "is that not your job?" She kept quiet after that I fingered she left. Went back to doing my ish. Mom got back from work knocked but I didn't answer or open the door. Stayed in my room until morning I didn't go to school for two days I'd call Leon everyday even sent him sms saying he must give me a chance to fix things. On Thursday decided to go to school woke up prepared for school and left without talking to anyone mom was at work aunt dolly was giving me silent treatment mxm like I care. Got to school met up with my friends saw Leon walking across the ground ran to him calling out his name but he continued walking. The day went by fast after school I went home made my oily sandwich I lived of it, it's was the only thing I ate besides junk. Nelo called but I didn't answer haven't been answering his calls ever since he dropped tha call the day I called him. I called Leon but he didn't answer 10 minutes later an sms from him came through my heart skipped a beat I was so excited I quickly opened it only to be disappointed as I read it "Lelothando please leave me alone I have moved on I suggest you do the same, you really annoying me with your calls so please stop calling and pretend like you don't know me around school I'll do the same it is OVER"

Yoh I cried harder.

**part 15 I am scared of lonely**

2 weeks later I had gained weight, became introvert, had nightmares every night. Been on and off school was not answering anyone's calls including Nelo and Tysons. Mah tried her best along with aunt dolly they even called Siyabulela to talk to me but I didn't answer his calls as well all I wanted was Leon I called him everyday even after Nokukhanya had answered his phone one night I still didn't stop calling. Until one Saturday Asa and Ndumo came home and found me in my room they brought pizza, hot wings, ice cream and a whole lot of snacks we sat in my room eating and watching movies nobody said anything to anyone around 18:00 their got ready to leave but I begged them to sleep over I talked to mom and she called their parents and they agreed. For the first time in weeks I didn't have nightmares and the feeling of loneliness decreased it didn't go away but it got better. Sunday mom took us to the mall after taking my friends to change we had lunch and went to the beach. Something about the waves calmed me and me realise how foolish I had been. The worse part about my brake up with Leon is that it left me with lot of questions like was my love not enough, did he even love me, was I not beautiful or worthy of being his one and only, why couldn't he just not involve other people in our relationship. Monday I decided to not go to school just take myself out. Went to the mall got my hair done did braids, changed my manicure, went to do a little shopping and had lunch while having Nelo came up to my table didn't even see him entering.

Nelo: "Lelothando hi it been awhile" he pulled a chat and sat down was shocked by his move

Me: "Nelo hi, who said you can sit down"

Nelo: " why not since you sitting alone I thought I would join you for lunch"

Me: " I'm actually waiting for someone" he chuckled

Nelo: "don't lie you alone I saw you shopping by yourself" he had the hugest smirk

Me: "well he'll be any minute now just thought I'd come early and get some shopping done" his face changed immediately he got angry

Nelo: "don't fuck with me Lelo you can't be seeing some new already you've been in your house the whole time only going out for school" my heart stopped

Me: "ho...w how you know I've been at home and that I was shopping alone" he didn't answer "even if I got someone new what is it to you" he chuckled

Nelo: " you mine Lelo and I don't share" the way he said that and the look in his eyes made me shiver a little. I got a sense that he likes control and that made me fall for him instantly.

Me: "oh" he smiled like he wasn't angry a minute ago

Nelo: " now how about we have lunch then I can take home" he called the waiter and asked for something to drink I was staring at his lips wondering how they taste and how they would feel on my body.

Nelo: " so tell me how have you been since the brake up"

Me: "been ok it did hurt but I'm over it now"

Nelo: " good and I'm sorry you had to hurt if hate to see tears in your eyes" he said that with so much passion

Me: "sorry I wasn't answering your calls I was really angry"

Nelo: " about that baby girl if you ever shout at me again or not answer me calls I'll be really upset and you don't want to see that side of me" hha talk about a person with moods I thought to myself

Me: " I'm sorry" he smiled and held my hands on top of the table

Nelo: " it ok hun" we ordered our food arrived we ate he paid we left and he dropped me home. The night went by and talking to Nelo made things better. Tuesday morning went to school decided to put a little make up just for the extra glow I was feeling myself even my walk screamed yeah bitch I'm up what you gona do. Got to school saw Leon and some girl standing outside the gate all cosy walked pass them while swaying my ass left right. Leon called after me and my heart stopped beating for a few seconds, he ran up to me.

Leon: "muntu wam you look beautiful as always" I just stared at him thinking what is this dude trying to do.

Me: "thank Leon and bye leon"

Leon: "wait up I'm talking to you he held my hand"

Me: "oryt talk I'm listening"

Leon: "I miss you Lelo we need to sort things out my life is not the same without you please I'm sorry I need" I didn't say anything for a minute and I saw Nelo's stopping in front of us he opened his window and smiled

Nelo: "Lelo baby" he called out and I felt like jumping up and down with joy

Me: "my love" he came out and walked towards us. He looked Godly in plain black skinny jeans, brown timberland and tucked in navy shirt

Nelo: "I missed you" he said while hugging then held my neck giving a steamy deep kiss it felt amazing we kissed until Leon cleared his throat we stopped.

Nelo: "oh sorry bru just really missed my angel hadn't seen her since yesterday" Leon looked at Nelo up and down

Leon: "mxm" he walked off. I felt good after that.

## **part 16 I am scared of lonely**

The rest of the day went well after school Nelo fetched me and dropped me off home after buying me lunch. This thing of Nelo just showing up especially when he's supposed to be at work bothered me. Few weeks passed I wrote my June exams my report card came my result dropped from an average of 70 to an average of 50 yo dad gave me a mouthful talking about me moving in with him coz it's clear that I think I'm old enough to have boyfriends and sleep over. Thank God for my big brother who calmed him down. It was now June holidays Siyabulela was home and I was beyond happy I spent all my time with him whether indoors or going out. It was Friday Siyabulela was going back to Cape Town on Saturday so we went out for a family dinner even dad was here. We went to Margate mall while walking towards the restaurant I saw Nelo walking with this beautiful woman she was wearing a short black dress showing her thighs with black heels and her hair was on point Nelo was in black chinos with a maroon shirt and here I was in all stars, baggy shorts and a baseball shirt. I felt so basic compared to her, the thing is Nelo and I had been spending a lot of time together but not once did he say I'm his girlfriend the only time we kissed was when he saw me with Leon outside the school gate like I



don't know where I stand with me. His very territorial over me he says I'm his but not once did he say his mine and this always bothered me. Whenever I asked him what's happening between us he just brushed me off. Now seeing him with her just made my whole stomach turn im not a confrontational person but I saw myself walking towards them and Nelo saw me as I was walking but Siya pulled me backing saying I'm going the wrong way I felt so irritated. During dinner Nelo sent an sms didn't even open it I was too scared just thought of the worse possible outcome. After few minutes he called and I didn't answer he kept on calling until mom said I must step out and answer so I did.

Me: "hello"

Nelo: "ooh so I'm no longer baby now you just say hello when greeting me" I didn't say anything after that "where are you I'm at the car park I want to see you before I leave" I was hesitant at first I had lot of questions in my mind

Me: "sorry but I can't im with my family and dad won't allow it" just needed him to push a little more just to see if he really wanted to see me or he was just trying to cover his tracks.

Nelo: "oh ok cool guess I'll see you some other time" tjo that hurt

Me: "yeah sure whatever" I dropped the call and he called again immediately

Nelo: "Lelo what did I say to you"

Me: "in terms of what" I had attitude for days during that moment. He chuckled and breathed in n out loudly

Nelo: "did I not say don't hang up on me"

Me: "look I don't have time for this"

Nelo: "what's gotten into you" the nerve of this dude

Me: "look Sbonelo just leave me in peace so I can enjoy dinner with my family and I'd suggest you do the same"

Nelo: "you would suggest I do what Lelothando" his tone was to calm for comfort and I wanted to start something with him but he was not giving me the energy I needed to get into an argument with him

Me: "I'd suggest you finish your dinner with that lady in a skimpy outfit that you with"

he laughed and I got more irritated “you know what Nelo fuck you bra”

Nelo: “I wish you would fuck me the things I’d do to you and that mouth of yours”

Me: “are you crazy”

Nelo: “you will see crazy when I get to that restaurant and grab you out in front of your parents so as you had a suggestion I would also suggest you come out here and talk me”

Me: “you wouldn’t dare”

Nelo: “don’t temp me Lelo”

Me: “whatever” I dropped the call and walked back to having dinner.

### **part 17 I am scared of lonely**

After the convo with Nelo I wasn’t comfortable at all I kept thinking what if he really comes we finished dinner with my eyes checking the other after every 2 minutes luckily he didn’t come. After dinner we went home and dad was spending the night, nights where by my family and I would spend so much time together we rare but really precious. Nelo sent an sms asking me to come out his parked by the gate, there was no way I could sneak out with dad at home hha that man calls for me every 10 minutes if he can’t see me. He called I couldn’t even answer his calls. Later on everyone went to their rooms I got to mine took a shower wore my short pjs and slept. Sunday we had breakfast as a family aunt dolly had gone to her house for the week. After breakfast the parents took Siya to the airport, 5 minutes after the car was out the gate Nelo called asking to come out asked him to give me an hour so I can bath and he did. An hour later he called again and I went out to him. The way he smiled one would swear nothing happened last night his smile was just too contagious couldn’t help but smile as well. We shared a hug and he kissed my cheek.

Nelo: “I missed you so much nana” yoh ayi this dude was killing though his scent just did to me

Me: “I missed you more” he kissed my forehead

Nelo: “so how are you?” So his really going to avoid what happened last night

Me: “I’m well considering..”

Nelo: "well I'm fine nana thank you for coming out" hha just like that like he didn't even bother asking what I was on about

Nelo: "let's take a drive need to spend sometime with my angel"

Me: "take a drive to where" he shrugged his shoulders

Nelo: "where the wind blows us" he had the cutest smile ever

Me: "I can't Nelo"

Nelo: "please hun promise it won't even take over an hour" lol he even made puppy eyes and who am I to say no to that

Me: "ok let's go" he opened my door, walked to his side and we drove off while listening to some music we drove until we reached a really beautiful beach house. He got in the gate and parked outside, stepped out went to my side and opened the door.

Me: "uhm Nelo whose house is this"

Nelo: "mine nana come lets get in" we walked in

Me: "thought your place was at Mkhomas" he paid no mind to what I was saying just lend me to the sitting area it had a silver and white theme.

Nelo: "I'll get you something to drink" he came back with a bottle of wine, glasses and a plate with provita and cheese

Me: "I don't drink Nelo" he looked kinda shocked

Nelo: "at all?"

Me: "at all I've never even tasted alcohol in all my life"

Nelo: "oh wow sorry nana I'll get a soda" he walked back to the kitchen and came back with juice.

Me: "thank you" we just chilled watched movies while talking until I fell asleep. Woke in a bed with him next to me but he was up busy with his phone.

Me: "hey" he looked at me and kissed my forehead

Nelo: "wow I could get used to this"

Me: "to what"

Nelo: "you waking up next to me, watching you sleep it breathtaking" I just giggled like a school child that I am

Me: "oh well Mr guess you should consider marrying me"

Nelo: "I'd do that in a heartbeat if you gave me a chance to" I didn't say anything just smiled and covered my mouth with the throw i was under

Nelo: "we should talk Lelo"

Me: "about what"

Nelo: "about the fucked up stunt you pulled last night" hha his mood changed instantly anger was visible all over his face

### **part 18 I am scared of lonely**

I just stared at me thinking is this nigga crazy or what ayi he must be out of his mind for reals if he thinks his flipping this. I got up from the position I was in and sat on the bed properly.

Me: "Nelo which stunt are you talking about?" I was cool as cucumber in that moment

Nelo: "you throwing tantrums" I chuckled in disbelief

Me: "you mean me getting hurt coz you were on a 'date' with what so ever her name is. You mean you acting like a bully"

Nelo: "don't shout at me I'm not your age" didn't even realize I had raised my voice

Me: "yea we not the same age why are you even still with me"

Nelo: "what do you mean why am I with you" he sounded a little hurt

Me: "I mean just that"

Nelo: "Lelo you know why"

Me: "actually I don't Nelo I don't even know where I stand with you and it not right"

Nelo: "are my actions not enough Lelo" I raised my eyebrow so he can continue talking "Lelo please"

Me: "no Nelo" I kept quiet for a while "please take me home".

Aibo I'm tired of Nelo it been over two months now all we do is spend time together his territorial over me but I don't know what's happening between us.

Nelo: "why you getting upset"

Me: "I'm just tired of this Nelo I see with someone else and you don't even care to

explain but if I even speak to a guy you get worked up”

Nelo: “it because I love you can’t you see that I love you” woah I took a moment to process that, I’ve been waiting for him to say it since we had our first date.

Me: “that doesn’t change anything please take me home” he looked at me in disbelief

Nelo: “ the fuck Lelo I just told you I love you and all you gona say is that you want to go home” his face turned pink with anger

Me: “what do you expect me to do” I walked out the door didn’t even manage to step out before he pulled me back and kissed me at first I didn’t allow him he traced his tongue on the surrounding parts of my lips the sensation from that was just amazing couldn’t but let out a moan. I kissed him back his tongue invaded my mouth as the kiss went deeper it moved from fast kissed filled with hunger to a slow kiss. He pulled back and held my face looking deep into my eyes

Nelo: “I love you Lelothando Tolo” he kissed my forehead

Me: “I love you more Sbonele Ngcobo”

## **part 19 I am scared of lonely**

We got under the covers and just talked about everything and anything while listening to music until we both fell asleep well he slept first. Woke up around 17:30 didn’t even have to worry about my parents coz I knew mah was going to work and dad was going back to his place. we cooked more like he cooked while I was watching admiring my man’s physic yes I said my MAN I had joy overflowing he kept on kissing me and grabbing my ass mind you I was wearing a short umbrella white dress and his slippers. After cooking we ate in the sitting room while watching TV and talking around 22:00 he took me home. The week went by quick it was Sunday school was opening Monday I was just lazying around in sweatpants and a vest when the intercom rang aunt dolly answered and let whoever it was in. I got the shock of my life when I opened and Tyson was standing there.

Me: “aah Ty hi”

Tyson: “Lelo hey” he smiled revealing his gold tooth

Lelo: "how are you"

Tyson: "I'm good, are you not going to let me in" shit we were still standing by the door

Me: "God sorry come in" I made a way for him to get in.

Tyson: "is aunt dolly in"

Me: "yes" I walked to the kitchen but she wasn't there "mama" I called out

Dolly: "stop screaming Lelo im here" she walked in the lounge "oh Tyson how are you"

Tyson: "I'm good aunt how are you"

Dolly: "I'm good too, nice to see you visiting"

Tyson: "actually I was sent by my mom" aunt offered him a sit

Dolly: "Lelo make yourself useful don't just stand there get Tyson some juice" i walked to kitchen got some juice and chocolate cake aunt dolly loves baking went back to the lounge and gave it to them.

Tyson: "as I was saying mom asked if your family could visit us this weekend we having a thanks giving for my grandma and your presence would be highly appreciated"

Me: "mmh"

Dolly: "do you have something to say Lelo" oh ayi aunt dolly hates that I'm not with Tyson (Tyson is respectful, good hearted boy, he will treat you right, I don't like that you dating but I'd feel better knowing you with him not some low life boy) that's what she would say every time we talked about me dating.

Me: "nope not at all" she gave me an evil stare and Tyson chuckled

Dolly: "I'll talk to Nosihle but I'm sure we will be there and I'll send Lelo to come help out on Friday night"

Me: "aibo aunt without even asking me"

Dolly: "you the kid in this household so you do as you told right?"

Me: "yes ma'am" I rolled my eyes and went to my room.

.

The week went by smoothly saw my boo every now and then when he was not at work.

Tyson kept on trying to make conversation but I'd brush him off. Thursday I asked

Ndumo to sleep over at my place so we could go Tyson's together and she agreed so

Friday she came to school with her bag after school Nelo took us home we got home Ndumo got off and I remained inside just to talk to my man.

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "yes bhabha"

Me: "I love you neh" he laughed

Nelo: "what do you want nana"

Me: "hha can't I just tell my man I love him"

Nelo: "you can baby anytime and any day" he kissed me "but I know you Lelothando so out with it"

Me: "there's really nothing I just wanted to tell you that's all"

Nelo: "oryt I'm sorry nana I love you more" we kissed and I opened the door so I can leave

Me: "I'll see you Sunday ke muntu wam" as standing next to his widow

Nelo: "no I'll see you later today around 19:00"

Me: "I can't baby"

Nelo: "why not"

Me: "have to go help out kaDlamini"

Nelo: "why"

Me: "they having a thanksgiving"

Nelo: "kaDlamini as in at Tyson's place Tyson as in your ex" I stood there looking like an idiot as he got out of his car. He stood in front of me and with him being tall he was looking down at me

Me: "it nothing like that Nelo" he came closer and pressed me on the door his body covered me completely

Nelo: "it not like what bbe"

Me: "like how you think" he chuckled

Nelo: "now you know how I think nana"

Me: "no I dont, I was just assuming"

Nelo: "why you going there"

Me: "mah said I should go help out".

Nelo: "ok but I don't like it"

Me: "nothing will happen" he kissed me and I kissed him back his hand went down to my ass grabbing it and I automatically stood on my toes he tried pulling back but I grabbed his neck and brought him closer we kissed until his breathing changed and we stopped he got in the car and looked my way.

Nelo: "nothing better happen between you two or I will kill him with my bare hands" he said that with such a straight face and drove off leaving me puzzled about whether he meant it or not.

## **part 20 I am scared of lonely**

Got in the house Ndumo and I had lunch then chilled listening to music while busy with our phones we'd talk every now and again. At 19:30 aunt dolly said we should get ready so she will drop us off at Tyson's. We took a shower together got out I wore a black maxi dress and black biker Ndumo wore a knee length skirt with a vest and a biker. We had dinner and left. Got to tyson's place the gate was open with lot of cars in the drive way. We knocked and some lady opened she let us in, left us in the lounge and came back with Tyson's (Ntombi) we shared greetings she offered us something to eat but we declined. She called a girl who was around our age and introduced her to us as zethembe Tyson's cousin after that she left us standing there in awkward silence until Ndumo broke it.

Ndumo: " so zethembe where can we help out?" She laughed

Zethembe: "geese Ndumo you sound like my mom please call me Zee" she smiled showing off her gold tooth \*oh guess gold teeth are the in thing with this family\* I was just irritated by the whole thing of having to be here like I'd seriously rather be with Nelo.

Me: "oh well Zee can you lead us to the kitchen" I knew where it was just didn't wana look forward

Zee: "I'm sure you know your way around this house Lelothando" I fake smiled "you



probably know it more than I do”

Me: “and why would I know my way around here”

Zee: “considering that you dating Tyson” she looked at me up and down. Ndumo and I laughed but I quickly snapped out of it when I saw Tyson approaching us. He gave Ndumo a brief hug than came to me but I offered him my hand and he looked at me in a confused manner.

Tyson: “Lelo Ndumo thanks for coming, how are you guys doing?” He was staring at me the whole time he was speaking

Ndumo: “we good Tyson and you”

Tyson: “I’m well, Nosi has been asking where about you Lelo” I involuntarily smile it was hard to not love that soul she was the most adorable thing ever.

Me: “where is she I’ve missed her”

Tyson: “just her” he mumbled

Me: “what was that”

Tyson: “oh nothing she’s in her room lets go check on her” we left leaving Ndumo and Zee behind Tyson put his hand around my waist ushering me in front of him

Tyson: “you look beautiful muhle wam”

Me: “when are you moving on Ty” he stopped walking and turned me to look at him

Tyson: “the day I stop loving you”

Me: “oh” he leaned in to kiss me but someone cleared his/her throat. We turned to see who it was and it was some woman

Woman: “this is the only thing you good at Tyson bring you stupid floozy in my sister’s house, you so disrespectful” yoh ayike his woman

Tyson: “was just taking her to see Nosi aunt” he looked down

Woman: “Nosi is not sick” she looked at me “make yourself useful and go help out in the kitchen” at that moment I was boiling with anger

Me: “yes ma’am” I walked past her to find Ndumo I found her in the kitchen chopping butternut, we chopped it together and I told her about what just went and she laughed at me. Later on all the ladies that were in the kitchen were having tea and muffins in the

lounge and I was in the kitchen washing the knives I felt hands hugging me from behind and I just knew that it Tyson by his cologne he kissed my neck and I lost all senses.

Tyson: "I miss you lelo" he said while nibbling on my ear I let out a soft moan

Me: "Ty stop I'm with someone" everything in me was saying shut up let him continue but Nelo's words were playing in my mind. He sucked on my neck while biting it I held on the sink.

Tyson: "I can't stop loving you" his voice was soft I turned around and his eyes were red. We were so close I could feel his manhood poking my thigh.

Me: "we in your mothers kitchen please stop" he chuckled

Tyson: "you've never had a problem with that before" memories of us making out on the counter and him muffing me with my back on the counter and my legs on his shoulders came flooding back I got wet immediately and blushed.

Me: "that was different"

Tyson: "it doesn't have to be" he kissed and I responded the kiss got heated and I pulled back

Tyson: "let's go to my car this house is crowded" I nodded couldn't even find my voice. We walked outside through the kitchen door. He opened the backseat of his car and we got in. I sat on top of him and started kissing deeply and passionately. He took my jacket off while kissing my neck and I was holding his neck my dress followed our tongues were dancing while our bodies were moving in rhythm even I don't know what was created by what. I took off his tshirt my fingers went on a searching spree as I was touching him all over just then my phone rang it was on the seat Nelo's picture and name flashing through it my heart stopped beating for a second.

Tyson: "answer it" I looked at him and picked it up clearing my throat before answering

Me: "uhm hello" my voice was rough he laughed

Nelo: "hello? Seriously baby you gonna say hello when answering my call"

Me: "I can't talk now"

Nelo: "don't fuck with me Lelothando" he roared and I dropped the call. All senses came back I started panicking I moved from being on top of Tyson and sat down on the other

side. I put my dress on Tyson was just staring me when I was about to open the door he held my hand and shook his hand.

Me: "I need to go Tyson"

Tyson: "where"

Me: "home" he wore his tshirt as we were about to step out Nelo called again. I breathed in and out a couple of time before answering.

Me: "baby I was about to call you, I was with the elders but I'm outside the house now" he breathed out loudly

Nelo: "ok nana I'm by Tyson's gate come out so I can take you home it late now"

Me: "ok let me say my goodbyes and call Ndumo will be there now just give me 5 minutes"

Nelo: "oryt baby I love you" I giggled

Me: "I love you to" I turned around and saw Tyson standing behind me his eyes filled with tears.

Me: "Ty" he just lifted his hand up stopping me from talking and walked in the house straight up to his room. I got in called Ndumo we said by and left. Found Nelo standing outside his car with hands in pockets got closer he hugged him and opened my door we got in and drove off, got home Ndumo got off and I remained in. Nelo switched the light in the car and looked at me for a long minute.

Nelo: "why do you like fucking with me Lelo" I looked at him confused

Me: "I don't understand baby"

Nelo: "you smell like a man, your lips are swollen and that love bite on neck is not magic" tears started falling from my eyes

Nelo: "I'll askk again Lelothando why do you like fucking with me" his was too calm and that scared the living shit out of me

Me: "baby I can explain, it not what you think I swear it was a mistake"

**part 21 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo: "I don't need your explanation Lelo just tell me why?" His voice was soft

Me: "I... I don't know" I couldn't stop the tears from falling

Nelo: "ok" he wiped my tears using his finger

Me: "baby" he kissed my eyes then my forehead

Nelo: "go sleep it late"

Me: "no I want to go with you"

Nelo: "that's no a good idea please leave now"

Me: "Sbonele" I pleaded. He looked hurt and seeing him like that killed me I just wanted to be with him

Nelo: "Lelo go sleep" he said with authority in his voice. I opened the door and got out.

Me: "will you call me when you get to your place"

Nelo: "yes I will"

Me: "ok bye" I started walking in the gate

Nelo: "Lelo!" I turned and looked at him "I love you nana" I nodded with tears running down my face I walked in went straight in my room Ndumo was watching pretty little liars on my laptop she was already under the covers. Didn't even change into pjs I just joined her she came closer to me and cuddled me while I just cried.

Ndumo: "it going to be ok Lelo whatever it is it going to be ok. I'm here and I love you"

Me: "how could I be so stupid"

Ndumo: "at our age it expected"

Me: "I love Nelo gee but when Tyson and I are together I just don't know what happens"

Ndumo: "it ok to be confused Lelo" I just cried and she kept on brushing my back. Just then an sms came through from Nelo.

.  
.  
.

*I just cried harder after reading it. Eventually I fell asleep, woke up in the morning with a banging headache. Went to mah's bathroom and took some painkillers. Walked to the*

*kitchen aunt dolly and Ndumo were seating around the counter having breakfast.*

*Me: "morning fam"*

*Ndumo: "morning little sis"*

*Me: "we a month apart Ndumo that doesn't make you older"*

*Ndumo: "it does" she stuck her tongue out and aunt dolly was laughing the whole time*

*Dolly: "you guys are silly"*

*Us: "we love you too mama" we all laughed*

*Dolly: "eat up Lelo your food is in the microwave, we have to go at the Dlamini's at 13:00 it already 11:20 " yoh ayike aunt dolly*

*Me: "do we have to go there"*

*Ndumo: "really mah I see no need for us to go there, we helped out last night that should be good enough"*

*Dolly: "we won't stay more than an hour, your mom is at work it won't look good if you also don't go"*

*Me: "but mama"*

*Dolly: "but nothing Lelo we have to"*

*Me: "eish ok"*

*Dolly: "good now finish up" she walked out the kitchen "no pants!" She shouted*

*Ndumo: "I'm sorry gee"*

*Me: "it ok sis"*

*Ndumo: "what really happened last night" I tell her everything and she laughs at how Nelo called in a heated moment*

*Ndumo: "I'm sorry sis, I'll make sure Tyson stays away from you"*

*Me: "well thank your highness" we laughed and finished eating and went to my room to get ready. While preparing to take a bath Nelo called.*

*Me: "hey baby" I said with excitement in my voice*

*Nelo: "hi nana, unjan"*

*Me: "I'm ok, how are you"*

*Nelo: "I'm good baby"*

*Me: "I'm sorry about last night"*

*Nelo: "just never do it again coz you end up feeling shitty after it"*

*Me: "yeah true, when are you coming to see me"*

*Nelo: "maybe Friday"*

*Me: "aibo Nelo it only Saturday"*

*Nelo: "need to focus on work Lelo, I can't always be around you I have to earn a living"*

*Me: "oh I understand"*

*Nelo: "what are you doing"*

*Me: "I'm about to bath"*

*Nelo: "why so early, where you off to" I didn't say anything for a little bit of time*

*Me: "the beach with the girls" no way I was about to say I'm going to Tysons*

*Nelo: "don't lie baby it not in you"*

*Me: "we going to the Dlamini household" he chuckled*

*Nelo: "oryt baby will talk later, I love you" he dropped the call before I could say anything.*

*I joined Ndumo in the shower after showering we lotioned and got dressed. I wore a blue umbrella dress with short sleeves and a white boyfriend blazer with white stilettos, Ndumo wore a black body hugging dress just below the knees and red wedges. We fixed our hair put on a little powder, lipstick and mascara with eyeliner. We got out, went to the lounge and waited for aunt dolly she came and we left it was already 13:50 the main event was starting at 13:00 so we were late. When we go there everyone was seated we found our table and sat down. After the speechs food was served I hardly ate just kept playing with my food while chatting with Siyabulela Nelo wasn't replying to my texts so I figured I should let him be. After the lunch gifts were given after the gifts everything was done there was going to be a braai at night around 18:00 people started to leave Ndumo and I helped out with the dishes so much for leaving after an hour. Tyson's mom came in the kitchen while we were washing dishes*

*Ntombi: "thank you so much girls for helping even yesterday" she's such a beautiful lady, yellow bone with curly long hair, not so much blessed on curves she was slender.*

*Us: "it nothing mah"*

*Ntombi: "you can leave now so you can get some rest before the braai starts" Ndumo and I looked at each other*

*Me: "we not coming back mah"*

*Ntombi: "nonsense you have to come back I'll tell Ty to take you home and fetch you later"*

*Me: "there's really no need mah"*

*Ntombi: "I'm serious Lelo at 22:00 I want you back here" she walked out after that Ndumo and I looked at each other.*

*Ndumo: "oh well I guess it party time" she started dancing I just laughed*

*Me: "guess so"*

*Ndumo: "let's fetch Asa I'm sure she's bored"*

*Me: "that would be cool but aunt dolly will refuse to go fetch her"*

*Tyson: "I'll take you there since I'm already your driver for the night" didn't even hear him coming in*

*Me: "oh hey Ty"*

*Tyson: "mom said you guys need transport" he was so cold*

*Ndumo: "yep Mr prefect you sir are our driver, you taking us to fetch Asa then back home to change and you bringing us back here" Tyson and I laughed*

*Tyson: "well let's get going" we left on our way we called Asa let her know about our plans and she was excited. we got to her place she was already dressed in white jeans denim shirt and blue vans she had an over night bag. We left for my place got Tyson dropped house and said he also need to change and freshen up. Ndumo and I took a quick shower got our got dressed. I wore a black skinny jean, white oversized mid sleeve shirt tucked in front with white all stars. Ndumo wore an ink bum shirt with blue shirt and navy air max. We fixed our hair went all out on the make up topped it of with dark lipstick. We waited for Tyson he called after 10 minutes and said his by the gate we went out and found him standing with 4 other guys next a Land Rover. We got to them and Tyson gave a hug which came as a surprise to me considering that he was cold before.*

*Tyson was wearing black skinny jeans with black tshirt and red n black jordan sneakers. He introduced the guys as Lindo, Mfundo, monwabisi and Bhunu his cousins. We all got in the car Tyson was driving, we got to his house we all walked to his room chilled everyone was drinking besides Tyson and I. Tyson went out and came back with the meat after eating we left for the beach. Got there the guys took out camp chairs and a cooler box filled with alcohol. Bhunu played some music and opened the car doors we chilled there Tyson was also drinking now. Asa got drunk pretty quickly and started making out with Lindo she was on top of dry humping him like there's no tomorrow. Another car arrived with 1 guy who was driving and 4 girls. Everyone was drinking and I was just chilling drinking my soda it was all nice and fun times until Tyson started dancing. And this girl joined him she kept on shaking her ass and griding on Tyson I got so irritated. Worse part she was hot, dark, short, slender, wearing a bum short her butt chicks were visible and a vest her breast were nice and big. I stood up and grabbed Tyson by his tshirt and pulled him to the car.*

## **part 22 I am scared of lonely**

Tyson: "what's wrong with you"

Me: "nothing" I spat back at him

Tyson: "hey .... Are you mad at me?"

Me: "I don't know ... You seemed to really enjoy what she was doing to you"

Tyson: "no, but babe you know I wouldn't touch another girl especially in your presence that's not me"

Me: "oh" he sighed

Tyson: "now can we go have fun" I looked down

Me: "I wana go home Ty"

Tyson: "the others are still having fun we'll go a little bit later" he pulled my hand and we went back to the others. I sat there, fuming and watching this girl throw herself at Tyson. Until I couldn't take it anymore I just started walking towards the water. I sat there and watched the waves ended up crying the thought of Tyson actually moving in



didn't sit well with me. I buried my head in my eyes and thought about why can't I just be alone and not be in a relationship, why did Tyson have to leave the following year. His going to varsity surely he will find someone who he will love more than he ever loved him. I've heard the stories about how people change at varsity, about the hot girl, about the parties and clubs. Who am I to compete with all of that I'm just a 14 year old who hasn't even had sex yet. Just like Siyabulela Tyson won't come home that much and I'll be left alone even if we did fix things it only a matter of time before he leaves me for greener pastures.

"Lelo" Tyson's voice broke through my dark thoughts. Did it have to be him though

Me: "what, Tyson"

Tyson: "are you ok?" His voice was soft and concerned. I lifted my head up from my knees and stared at him.

Me: "what are you doing here? Shouldn't you be there ? Having fun" I couldn't stop the tears. He frowned

Tyson: "Lelo" he said my name in a questioning manner I looked at him and he smiled sadly

Me: "what do you wants Tyson" he pulled me up and brushed the sad off my ass.

Tyson: "let's take a walk" we walked around the beach it was a bit difficult with the shoes we were both wearing.

Tyson: "why you upset Lelo"

Me: "I don't know"

Tyson: "what am I to you Lelo"

Me: "you my ex" I rolled my eyes. He stopped walking and made me face him. He moved closer to me and leaned in for a kiss but changed his mind and started walking again.

Tyson: "were you jealous when you saw me dancing with her" his voice seemed amused by the idea.

Me: "no"

Tyson: "good, because you shouldn't be"

Me: "but you're mine" I mumbled a little louder than I intended to

Tyson: "that's just it Lelothando, I'm not yours" he cocked his head to the side "you ended things Lelothando and you moved on with two other people"

Me: "I know that, I was there" I stated coldly and he frowned. I walked back to the cars more like tried running and he just sat down on the sand. Everyone was still drinking and dancing, the sight of that girl made my blood boil. I just wanted to go home but I couldn't really force the others to leave just because I'm not having fun anymore, I thought about calling Nelo but decided against it. I started walking away from the cars, didn't even know where I was walking to but I just wanted to go home. After 5 minutes of walking I heard someone calling out my name I turned to see who it was and it was Monwabisi I waited for until he reached.

Monwa: "hey are you ok" I fake smiled

Me: "yea I'm good just need to clear my mind"

Monwa: "by walking alone at this time, girl you crazy" I laughed

Me: "I'm not scared of the dark"

Monwa: "you should be, people do crazy things to beautiful girls, worse ke it the weekend people are drunk" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "guess you right"

Monwa: "if you don't mind me asking, what's going on between you and my cousin"

Me: "oh nothing"

Monwa: "in all my years I've never seen Tyson this hang up over a girl" I frowned

Me: "oh well"

Monwa: "what ever it is that he did wrong just give him a chance to fix things" I felt guilty coz Ty has never done me any wrong

Me: "I hear you" he smiled and put his hand over my shoulder

Monwa: "let's go back to the others so we can go home" we walked back found Tyson in the car, he got out of the car when he saw and monwa let go of I walked to him. He opened the front door for me and he got in on the other side and sat down. He took my hand, put it on top of his and held the gear. He kissed my forehead.

Tyson: "I'm sorry Lelo" didn't even know what he was apologizing for.

Me: "it ok, I'm sorry to" he smiled "I love you Tyson" hi pulled me to sit on top of him and he adjusted the car seat.

Tyson: "I've missed hearing those words come from your mouth" we kissed and I didn't care what was going to happen tomorrow or a month from now or even next year.

What mattered was that I love him and with him love feels right and worth it. He pulled back and looked into my eyes

Tyson: "I love you muhle wam" he held me close

### **part 23 I am scared of lonely**

Everyone got in the car and we left, the boys had to help me with Ndumo and Asa coz they passed out in the car. We put them in my room and I slept in the guest room ain't no way I was sharing a bed with them while they drunk. Sunday morning I woke up made breakfast for everyone. Went to check on my friends and they were still sleeping so I woked them up called aunt dolly we had breakfast while talking. Later on the girls went back to their homes. Sunday's are such a drag spent my day and night watching TV and doing my homeworks.

.

Monday morning received a call phone call I answered without checking the caller ID.

Me: "hello"

Caller: "baby... Are you still asleep" it was Nelo last time we spoke it was Saturday morning

Me: "yeah but was going to wake up soon" I cleared my throat

Nelo: "sorry nana. Just wanted to tell you that I'll come fetch you so I can take you to school"

Me: "oryt baby I'll get ready. Be here around 7:15"

Nelo: "go back to sleep ke nana I'll see you soon" I giggled

Me: "I'm already up Nelo I'll just get ready"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "love you more" he dropped the call. I sat up on the bed and thought about how is this whole thing going to play out. I love them both I just can't choose. It not selfish of me to want them both and it not like they from the same neighborhood so it cool, I tried to convince myself. Got up and prepared for school while listening to some music \*thank God for music channels\* finished getting ready took my blazer and bag went to the kitchen to have breakfast while waiting for Nelo \*i get my allowance once for the whole month coz mah is hardly at home\*. Nelo called to say his parked outside the gate, I got out locked the door and left. I walked out and found him standing outside the car. He smiled and opened his arms and I ran into them we shared a hug then kissed for over five minutes I pulled back and he frowned.

Me: "hi baby"

Nelo: "you don't wana kiss me" he sulked and I giggled. I gave him a baby kiss but he sucked my bottom lip we ended up sharing a deep passionate kiss.

Nelo: "I missed you so much nana"

Me: "I missed you more babe"

Nelo: "bunk school baby please, just wana spend the day with you I'll bring you back later"

Me: "you should have told me last night baby I would have made up an excuse to miss school. I can't just go with you in my school uniform"

Nelo: "please baby will spend the day indoors" he made a puppy face and who am I to say no to that face

Me: "ok let's go" we left for his place. got there I took my uniform off and wore his tshirt. I got under the cover then he laid down on top of the covers next to me. I considered telling him to get underneath with me but he rolled to face putting a leg over mine and an arm around my stomach he softly pecked my nose making it wiggle.

Me: "Sbonele"

Nelo: "yeah?" His voice was low and husky

Me: "get under the cover" he chuckled slightly. Took off his jeans and shirt left only his boxers and got in, settled down on his pillow snuggling closer to me. I could hear his

heart beating.

Nelo: "who was your first?" I looked at him as he propped himself up on an elbow to gaze at me.

Me: "my first what"

Nelo: "you know baby, the first guy you slept with"

Me: "oh... I... I'm still a virgin" I swallowed my embarrassment and he noticed

Nelo: "wow baby ... Don't be embarrassed about it, that's amazing"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "I'd be honored to be your first one day whenever you ready"

Me: "I see" he brought his hand up to run his fingers through my hair. I felt warm and nice, I nestled more into his chest and he kissed the top of my head. Must have fell asleep coz I woke up when my phone was ringing I looked at him first before answering the call he was asleep.

Me: "hello"

Tyson: "hey baby how are you"

Me: "I'm ok and you"

Tyson: "I'm good, why you not in school"

Me: "I'm not well"

Tyson: "what's wrong" I could hear the concern in his voice

Me: "think I'm getting fever or something"

Tyson: "oh ok, get well soon muhle wam I love you"

Me: "me too" I dropped the ca before he could say anything else. I turned to look at Nelo he was still asleep I kissed his cheek and got closer to him again. He looked so peaceful and cute with his lips pouting I giggled and kissed him. He woke up.

Nelo: "what you doing baby" I just giggled more he started tickling me and I laughed so hard until I couldn't breath and he stopped. He got on top me with his legs in between mine.

Nelo: "nana?"

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "I love you you" I sighed dramatically. His hand was drawing circles on my thigh and his other one brushing my cheek, I was covered fully by his body. He kissed every corner of my mouth, barely brushing my bottom lip and he breathed lightly down my neck sending shivers down my spine. He lowered his lips to my jaw and kissed me softly then trailed his lips to my neck. I let out a soft moan and his breathing sped up. He came back to my lips and kissed his tongue invading my mouth while his hand was on top of my panty rubbing my punani. I softly bite his ear and he moaned

Nelo: "tell me to stop when you feel uncomfortable"

Me: "mmh". He took the tshirt off kissed me from my mouth to my belly button than came up to sucking my breast while playing with the other one. He went down and took my panties off and kissed the inner part of my thighs giving me shocks all over my body. I felt his warm tongue touch my clit his tongue flicked on the sensitive part of my clit and I let out a loud moan. He put one finger in me and started going in circles while his tongue was still on my clit, he took the finger out and shove his tongue in and out of me. While I was still trying to grasp what his doing he shove two fingers in and i gaps. I was moan like crazy the movement from tongue to his fingers was too magical I came, he licked me clean and came up to kiss me we shared a deep kiss with our tongues dancing together. I put my hand in his boxers yoh mapholoba was huge the hugest I've ever seen. I started playing with his manhood, took my hand out put it in my mouth to make it wet than went back to stroking his manhood. He took of his boxers and positioned himself on top of me. I felt his dick poking my punani and I pushed him back.

Nelo: "I'll just rub it on you I won't enter" I nodded.

## **part 24 I am scared of lonely**

He started rubbing it slowly his other hand was busy rubbing on my clit. We were both moaning his pace picked up, he stopped rubbing it and he laid next to me. Lifted me up and positioned me to sit on top of me with his dick directly under my punani he told me to start moving slowly and I did he held my waist directing me on how I should move. I got the hang of it, started moving in circles he was massaging my breast with his eyes

closed. Suddenly he grabbed my waist and pulled me off him. He put me down and got on top of, started rubbing his dick on my punani violently until his sperms flew out of him landing all over my body. He pulled my face to his and kissed me roughly before pulling out.

Nelo: "let's take a quick shower so we can get some food" indeed we showered got out lotioned lol I smelt like him. He took out a blue shirt for me I wore it with my panty luckily his shirt covered my ass it actually looked like a dress I fixed my hair and wore his cap and his flops which were huge im like a size 3 and his a 9.

Nelo: "you look so cute baby" I frowned and he laughed so hard I wanted to cry.

Nelo: "I'm joking babe don't cry but you look really cute my love you should go home wearing that"

Me: "mxm" I rolled my eyes and went downstairs to the kitchen poured myself some juice. He came down wearing jean shorts and a blue tshirt with slippers. He kissed me and lifted me up I wrapped my legs around his waist. He moved to the lounge and laid me on the sofa ... Got on top of me his hand moved under the shirt he moved my panty to the side and slowly stuck his finger in me moving it around in circles taking it in and out. He stopped while I was enjoying it, I frowned and he smirked.

Me: "ayi Nelo"

Nelo: "you want some baby"

Me: "ofcos" he laughed so hard and stood up

Nelo: "let go baby let me feed you" I rolled my eyes

Me: "I'm not hungry"

Nelo: "I know you hungry come lets go"

Me: "mxm I'm not going go by yourself" he laughed and shook his head. Suddenly lifted me up putting me over his shoulder, got his keys and wallet. Walked out locking the door behind him. I tried wiggling myself out of his hold and he spanked my ass lightly biting it.

Me: "Nelo stop" he say on his car and got between my legs

Nelo: " I love you"

Me: "I don't really love you right now" he tickled me and I was laughing non stop

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you baby" he stopped tickling me and kissed me. I got off and went in the car we drove towards kfc.

Nelo: "let's go feed you"

Me: "aibo you can't expect me to get out wearing nothing but your shirt" he brushed my thighs

Nelo: "I don't care let's go"

Me: "no" he laughed

Nelo: "I'll carry you in baby if you don't get out on your own" I frowned and he just pecked my lips and got out. He came to my side and opened my door I stepped out.

Nelo: "I'll walk behind you don't worry" we walked in with him walking behind me and his hands on waist. People gave us weird looks and he kept on kissing my neck while we were waiting in the line. We bought our food and left. Got to his place ate and just chilled watched movies. Later he took me home found aunt dolly watching generations.

Dolly: "where were you?"

Me: "sorry aunt I should have called you, we got an assignment so we went to Asa's house to get it started her mom just dropped me off" was getting used to lying.

Dolly: "ok"

Me: "is mom here?"

Dolly: "no she's at work"

Me: "oh... Ok goodnight I'm going to my room need to rest"

Dolly: "sit down, I want to talk to you"

Me: "can I take a quick shower please"

Dolly: "be quick" I rushed to my room took a quick shower got into my pjs. Took my phone from bag had like 5 missed calls from Tyson. Walked back to the lounge and sat down. Quickly rushed to the kitchen took some ice cream and chips. Then went to aunt dolly and sat directly opposite her.

Me: "I'm here"



Dolly: "are you having sex Lelothando" yoh this woman

Me: "no no no I'm not"

Dolly: "don't lie I'm trying to help you here"

Me: "I swear I'm not" she sighted

Dolly: "you do know that sex leads to pregnancy"

Me: "yes ofcos they teach us at school"

Dolly: "tell me when you having sex Lelothando so I can take you to the clinic for some contraceptive" didn't even know what to say to that.

Me: "I will, can I be excused now"

Dolly: "goodnight I love you"

Me: "love you to" I walked to room finished my chips and ice cream. Just than Tyson called me.

Me: "baby"

Tyson: "hi baby you sound better"

Me: "I took some medicine"

Tyson: "can I see you now"

Me: "yea tell me when you outside I'll come to you"

## **part 25 I am scared of lonely**

Tyson called after 5 minutes, I wore my gown and went to him. Found him standing a house away from mine. We hugged and he kissed my forehead.

Tyson: "you look cute in your pjs how come I've never seen you in them before. I blushed

Me: "I don't know" my arms were around his neck and his arms were around my waist.

Tyson: "I missed you muhle wam" I was smiling like an idiot

Me: "yea I know" I rolled my eyes and we laughed

Tyson: "I'm joking"

Me: "mxm liar" I pouted

Tyson: "I love you"

Me: "and I you" he gave me a soft peck on my lips. We continued having silly conversation until it got really cold and he walked me back to my house. Got in and slept immediately.

6:30 am I alarm rang I woke up prepared for school, had breakfast while talking to aunt dolly who was up making me lunch. My transport arrived, went to school met up with my friends at the gate. After greeting each other we walked to the grounds while talking.

Asa: "lelo when last did you talk to Tyson" I looked at her puzzled because I didn't tell them about Tyson and I being together again

Me: "it been awhile, why?"

Asa: "no just asking"

Ndumo: "out with it Asa"

Asa: "ok ok ok twist my arm why won't you" she covered her eyes with her hands "Lindo and I are kinda dating" she said jumping up and down

Ndumo: "geese Asa isn't he a little old"

Asa: "don't start Ndumo please don't bust my bubble" (Lindo was Tyson's 27 years old cousin who stayed and worked in durban, drove a Land Rover, he worked at Eskimo)

Me: "since when coz you just met him on Saturday night and it tuesday now"

Asa: "we exchanged numbers on Saturday"

Me: "what about sphe" sphe was Asa bf from mthwalume

Asa: "don't involve him this"

Ndumo: "we have to"

Me: "let it be Ndumo"

Ndumo: "no, what she's doing is wrong you can't be with two people at the same time you going to get hurt and sphe loves you. You don't even know this Lindo character"

Asa: "oh there we go miss judgmental"

Ndumo: "sorry you feel that I don't want you getting hurt or doing things you might regret later, anyway I love you gee and if anyone of them hurt you I'll be here for you"

Asa: "I won't get hurt" she gave Ndumo an attitude

Me: "Asa don't"

Asa: "I love you to gee" just then the bell rang for class. Time went by I spent my breaks with my friends. I hardly ever got to spend time with Tyson at school he was always busy.

.

Few weeks later things were still good with both my relationships even though I saw less of Tyson Nelo was still amazing saw him all the time when he was not at work. He would even come see after work and we'd sometimes have dinner in his car. I was falling harder for Nelo couldn't bare the thought of not being with him, not a day went by without us talking and without him telling me how I was his breath and that his heart beat for me.

This one day after school I went home found mom and dad in the lounge watching TV.

Me: "hello"

Them: "hey"

Dad: "how are you"

Me: "I'm good, just hungry"

Mom: "go change so you can eat" I did as told and ate, after eating went to my room did my homework and catches up with my work while listening to music. Fell asleep while reading a prescribed novel for school. Aunt dolly woke me saying dinner is ready. We had dinner, after dinner I washed the dishes and cleaned the kitchen. Mom called me to the lounge.

Me: "yebo"

Mom: "we need to talk" she was seating there with dad and aunt dolly I also sat down.

Mom: "I got a promotion at work"

Me: "oh that nice" it just meant she will spend even lesser time at home I just got irritated but didn't want to show it

Mom: "but it in durban" I stood up and sat down again

Me: "what does that mean for me"

Dad: "means staying with me until you finish grade 9" there was no way I was going to stay with dad for the rest of the day it was only September

Me: "I don't understand" dad stayed at park rynie and my school was in port shepstone that's almost an hour drive.

Mom: "you will stay with your dad, there are kids who stay that side and go to your school using transport you will use the same transport"

Me: "but mom"

Mom: "we have to Lelo this is a good opportunity for me, I start work in October"

Me: "it a good opportunity for you, well if that the case congratulations. Can I be excused it late and I have school in the morning" I said in a soft voice

Dad: "goodnight"

Me: "goodnight" I went to my room and cried myself to sleep. I hated my mother that moment, how could she let me leave with a man even she couldn't leave with. Mom spent that whole week at home she was moving to durban in two weeks, going to be staying at a flat in Glenwood while looking for a house that side, her promotion was at King Edward hospital. I was giving her the silent treatment, that was the only way I could express my anger at home because talking back at my parents meant being grounded and no cellphone. I didn't tell my friends or nelo and Tyson about me moving. I knew the move wouldn't affect my relationship with Nelo coz I'd actually be closer to him but the move meant I might as well brake up with Tyson because I hardly got to see him during school hours.

## **part 26 I am scared of lonely**

It was now a Thursday mom was moving Saturday, still wasn't talking to mom even refused going to the mall with her one day. Just felt tired of her thinking buying me clothes or taking me out will solve things between us or that it makes her a good mom. She works hard I under that like I understand that she wants us to have all the things she didn't get when she was growing up but in the mist of her trying to provide us with all the material things emotionally she was an absent mother. I loved that my account

always had money, I loved that I got everything I needed and wanted at that moment but I didn't have the mother and daughter bond that other kids had I couldn't ask my mom for advice unless it was school related, when I had my first heartbreak I couldn't open up about it to my mom 'because she was working hard to ensure Siya and I had everything' if only she knew.

.

I thought and thought trying to come up with ideas on how I could not move to leave with my dad. Until I thought of calling Siyabulela it rang twice and he answered.

Siya: "Lelo ka mama"

Me: "mah hates me" I started crying

Siya: "what happened" I just cried and didn't say anything "is it about her new job"

Me: "yes"

Siya: "that why you upset?" I sniffed "Lelo mah doesn't hate you"

Me: "how can she just expect me to pack and go stay with dad"

Siya: "but next year you will join her, it only two months of school than you will also move to durban" I just cried harder hha the thought of actually staying in durban being away from my friends killed me. I've always been introvert I met Ndumo through my brother our brothers were friends and I met Asa through Ndumo I've never been good with associating with people and moving to durban meant having no friends.

Me: "I don't want to move siyabulela please talk to mah please big bro I'll stay with Ndumo or aunt dolly can stay with me, she practically raised me anyway" he sighted

Siya: "I'll talk to her lelo but I doubt she will agree"

Me: "thank you"

Siya: "oryt, goodnight little sis I love you"

Me: "I love you to" I dropped the call and doze off.

Work up at 6:30 my alarm rang and I switched it off, prepared for school it was a cold rainy day. Took my school bag put on my blazer and walked to the kitchen. Found mom and aunty dolly up talking.

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning"

Dolly: "how are you"

Me: "I'm ok"

Mom: "you slept well?"

Me: \*mute\* I finished making cereal sat down and ate

Dolly: "I'll make you lunch" she got up

Me: "no it ok aunt I'll buy something at school I really don't feel like eating bread"

Dolly: "oh wow really since when you don't like bread"

Me: "I don't know but it taste funny worse ke if it has egg or cheese" aunt dolly and mom looked at me funny

Dolly: "but you've always loved cheese"

Mom: "yeah you put cheese with everything you eat"

Me: "actually on second thought I'll have lunch please make me a peanut butter and jam sandwich" she shook her head and made, I continued eating while mom and aunt dolly kept on talking about the move. Apparently aunt was moving with me to dad's place and mom was not selling the house. Knowing I'll go with aunt made things better. It was now 7:35 my transport comes at 7:30.

Me: "I'm running late" mom checked her watch

Mom: "oh sorry lets go"

Me: "no I'll wait for my transport"

Mom: "it nice to know that you can still talk to me"

Me: "not like I got a choice" I mumbled

Mom: "what was that?"

Me: "nothing"

Mom: "ok than lets go, dolly lets go" all 3 of us left only mom and aunt dolly wear talking I had my earphones off but I wasn't playing music just didn't want to talk to mom and I was chatting to Nelo. Finally told him about moving and he was excited because driving from mkomaas to park rynie is less than 30 minutes. Arrived at school and got off without saying goodbye. Got to school found my friends □ we chilled Asa

was telling us about how madly she's in love with Lindo.

Asa: "I love him so much you guys"

Ndumo: "is the feeling mutual though?"

Asa: "ofcos it is"

Me: "we happy for you" Ndumo just rolled her eyes

Asa: "I have something to tell"

Me: "what's that?"

Asa: "Ndumo don't judge" I laughed and Ndumo nodded

Asa: "we did it"

Me: "you did what"

Asa: "Lindo and I did it"

Me: "did what" Ndumo got irritated by me

Ndumo: "she means they had sex you dummy"

Me: "oh my God Asanda, when? "

Asa: "last weekend"

Ndumo: "how was it" she squealed

Asa: "painful at first but amazing the following day" she started doing some random dance moves

Ndumo: "can't believe you Asa" she was laughing the whole time while Asa was dancing

Asa: "his huge you guys"

Me: "woah too much info" just than the bell rang we walked to class, first and second period went by during third period I texted tyson telling him we need to talk, he texted back saying 2nd break. First break we went to the tuck shop to buy food, I bought soda wine gums chips (razzel dazzle, those sticky pop corn covered in melted sugar) I had my peanut butter and jam sandwich. We walk to the grounds.

Ndumo: "so much food Lelo"

Me: "I'm hungry"

Asa: "is it just that"

Me: "mxm, I need to tell you guys something"

Ndumo: "oh not you to" she laughed

Me: "don't worry I'm still a virgin" Asa looked at us and rolled her eyes we laughed at her

Me: "on a serious note though you guys we need to talk"

Asa: "we listening"

Me: "I'm moving im going to stay with dad"

Ndumo: "why"

Me: "mom is moving to durban"

Asa: "What about school"

Me: "I'll use transport to get her"

Ndumo: "this is bad"

Asa: "this means we'll only see you during school hours"

Me: "you guys will come for sleep overs"

Ndumo: "it won't be the same" we hugged each other and continue eating. Bell rang time flew to the 2nd break, while I was with my friends tyson came to us and we excused ourselves.

Tyson: "I feel like I hardly see you babe"

Me: "I know the feeling babe and it sucks" he brought me closer to him and lifted my chin and kissed me. Leon walked passed us and said mxm get a room, we ignored him.

Tyson: "what did you want to talk about"

Me: "I .... I'm moving to stay with dad"

Tyson: "why?" I told him the whole story he was so sad I ended up crying.

Me: "I'll still you at school"

Tyson: "that's the thing Lelo, you won't"

Me: "what do you mean"

Tyson: "I'm starting exams soon I won't be coming to school"

Me: "where does this leave us"

Tyson: "I don't know Lelo I really don't" I couldn't stop the tears

Me: "Ty..." He gave me a tight hug and kissed my eyes than my lips



Tyson: "I'm sorry but I have to go" he walked away and I just ran to the toilet and cried my eyes out.

## **part 26 I am scared of lonely**

It was now a Thursday mom was moving Saturday, still wasn't talking to mom even refused going to the mall with her one day. Just felt tired of her thinking buying me clothes or taking me out will solve things between us or that it makes her a good mom. She works hard I understand that like I understand that she wants us to have all the things she didn't get when she was growing up but in the mist of her trying to provide us with all the material things emotionally she was an absent mother. I loved that my account always had money, I loved that I got everything I needed and wanted at that moment but I didn't have the mother and daughter bond that other kids had I couldn't ask my mom for advice unless it was school related, when I had my first heartbreak I couldn't open up about it to my mom 'because she was working hard to ensure Siya and I had everything' if only she knew.

I thought and thought trying to come up with ideas on how I could not move to leave with my dad. Until I thought of calling Siyabulela it rang twice and he answered.

Siya: "Lelo ka mama"

Me: "mah hates me" I started crying

Siya: "what happened" I just cried and didn't say anything "is it about her new job"

Me: "yes"

Siya: "that why you upset?" I sniffed "Lelo mah doesn't hate you"

Me: "how can she just expect me to pack and go stay with dad"

Siya: "but next year you will join her, it only two months of school than you will also move to durban" I just cried harder hha the thought of actually staying in durban being away from my friends killed me. I've always been introvert I met Ndumo through my brother our brothers were friends and I met Asa through Ndumo I've never been good with associating with people and moving to durban meant having no friends.

Me: "I don't want to move siyabulela please talk to mah please big bro I'll stay with Ndumo or aunt dolly can stay with me, she practically raised me anyway" he sighted

Siya: "I'll talk to her lelo but I doubt she will agree"

Me: "thank you"

Siya: "oryt, goodnight little sis I love you"

Me: "I love you to" I dropped the call and doze off.

Work up at 6:30 my alarm rang and I switched it off, prepared for school it was a cold rainy day. Took my school bag put on my blazer and walked to the kitchen. Found mom and aunty dolly up talking.

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning"

Dolly: "how are you"

Me: "I'm ok"

Mom: "you slept well?"

Me: \*mute\* I finished making cereal sat down and ate

Dolly: "I'll make you lunch" she got up

Me: "no it ok aunt I'll buy something at school I really don't feel like eating bread"

Dolly: "oh wow really since when you don't like bread"

Me: "I don't know but it taste funny worse ke if it has egg or cheese" aunt dolly and mom looked at me funny

Dolly: "but you've always loved cheese"

Mom: "yeah you put cheese with everything you eat"

Me: "actually on second thought I'll have lunch please make me a peanut butter and jam sandwich" she shook her head and made, I continued eating while mom and aunt dolly kept on talking about the move. Apparently aunt was moving with me to dad's place and mom was not selling the house. Knowing I'll go with aunt made things better. It was now 7:35 my transport comes at 7:30.

Me: "I'm running late" mom checked her watch

Mom: "oh sorry lets go"

Me: "no I'll wait for my transport"

Mom: "it nice to know that you can still talk to me"

Me: "not like I got a choice" I mumbled

Mom: "what was that?"

Me: "nothing"

Mom: "ok than lets go, dolly lets go" all 3 of us left only mom and aunt dolly wear talking I had my earphones off but I wasn't playing music just didn't want to talk to mom and I was chatting to Nelo. Finally told him about moving and he was excited because driving from mkomaas to park rynie is less than 30 minutes. Arrived at school and got off without saying goodbye. Got to school found my friends □ we chilled Asa was telling us about how madly she's in love with Lindo.

Asa: "I love him so much you guys"

Ndumo: "is the feeling mutual though?"

Asa: "ofcos it is"

Me: "we happy for you" Ndumo just rolled her eyes

Asa: "I have something to tell"

Me: "what's that?"

Asa: "Ndumo don't judge" I laughed and Ndumo nodded

Asa: "we did it"

Me: "you did what"

Asa: "Lindo and I did it"

Me: "did what" Ndumo got irritated by me

Ndumo: "she means they had sex you dummy"

Me: "oh my God Asanda, when? "

Asa: "last weekend"

Ndumo: "how was it" she squealed

Asa: "painful at first but amazing the following day" she started doing some random dance moves

Ndumo: "can't believe you Asa" she was laughing the whole time while Asa was dancing

Asa: "his huge you guys"

Me: "woah too much info" just than the bell rang we walked to class, first and second period went by during third period I texted tyson telling him we need to talk, he texted back saying 2nd break. First break we went to the tuck shop to buy food, I bought soda wine gums chips (razzel dazzle, those sticky pop corn covered in melted sugar) I had my peanut butter and jam sandwich. We walk to the grounds.

Ndumo: "so much food Lelo"

Me: "I'm hungry"

Asa: "is it just that"

Me: "mxm, I need to tell you guys something"

Ndumo: "oh not you to" she laughed

Me: "don't worry I'm still a virgin" Asa looked at us and rolled her eyes we laughed at her

Me: "on a serious note though you guys we need to talk"

Asa: "we listening"

Me: "I'm moving im going to stay with dad"

Ndumo: "why"

Me: "mom is moving to durban"

Asa: "What about school"

Me: "I'll use transport to get her"

Ndumo: "this is bad"

Asa: "this means we'll only see you during school hours"

Me: "you guys will come for sleep overs"

Ndumo: "it won't be the same" we hugged each other and continue eating. Bell rang time flew to the 2nd break, while I was with my friends tyson came to us and we excused ourselves.

Tyson: "I feel like I hardly see you babe"

Me: "I know the feeling babe and it sucks" he brought me closer to him and lifted my chin and kissed me. Leon walked passed us and said mxm get a room, we ignored him.

Tyson: "what did you want to talk about"

Me: "I .... I'm moving to stay with dad"

Tyson: "why?" I told him the whole story he was so sad I ended up crying.

Me: "I'll still you at school"

Tyson: "that's the thing Lelo, you won't"

Me: "what do you mean"

Tyson: "I'm starting exams soon I won't be coming to school"

Me: "where does this leave us"

Tyson: "I don't know Lelo I really don't" I couldn't stop the tears

Me: "Ty..." He gave me a tight hug and kissed my eyes than my lips

Tyson: "I'm sorry but I have to go" he walked away and I just ran to the toilet and cried my eyes out.

## **part 27 I am scared of lonely**

The rest of the day was just a drag. I got home took a bath wore my sweat pants and tshirt made my peanut butter and jam sandwich with tea ate in my room while watching vampire diaries. Slept after eating, my phone ringing woke me up. I answered without checking the caller ID in a sleepy voice (even if I say so myself but I got a really sexy voice when I wake up it rough but sexy rough bru)

.

Me: "hello"

Voice: "hey muhle wam" I just knew it was tyson

Me: "Ty "

Tyson: "did I wake you up"

Me: "yes, but it ok need to get my homework done anyway"

Tyson: "can I see you later"

Me: "yea cool"

Tyson: "ok I'll see you later than"

Me: "oryt"

Tyson: "Lelo"

Me: "yes"

Tyson: "I love you baby" I giggled

Me: "I love you more" he chuckled

Tyson: "that's debatable" I laughed

Me: "whatever"

Tyson: "see you later" he dropped the call.

I got up washed my face, rinsed my mouth. Plugged my iPod on the speakers played music, did my homework later on I got done. It was late and mom & aunt dolly were still not back. Went to the kitchen made my sandwich took some wine gums sat in the lounge and watched tv while chatting to my people. Mom and aunt came back while I was watching TV around 21:00 with spur take away, aunt dished up for us the smell of the ribs made my stomach turn, I felt like throwing up right there and then. I took a sip of coke just to settle my stomach, took the ribs and left them in the fridge just ate the wings with fries and onion rings. The whole time mom was looking at me like I've gone insane.

Mom: "Lelothando"

Me: "mah"

Mom: "are you ok"

Me: "yea"

Mom: "you would tell me if you were having sex right" I chocked

Me: "aunt dolly already gave me that talk so don't bother" she looked at aunt dolly and she nodded

Mom: "oh" I rolled my eyes and continued eating

Dolly: "she assured me that she's not"

Mom: "did she now" the sarcasm on her voice couldn't be missed

Me: "goodnight people" I got off the couch

Mom: "sit down!" Yoh her face changed instantly and I sat down

Me: "I'm sleepy and I have school in the morning"

Mom: "the day you decide to be a woman or a mother you will leave my house" I just stared at her "am I clear lelothando"

Me: "yes mother" I hissed

Mom: "good, you can be excused" I went to my room and changed into my pjs got under the blanket and chatted. Until Tyson called saying his outside, luckily the house was quiet meaning mom n aunt dolly were asleep. I got dressed on top of my pjs in sweatpants and hoody. Sneaked out to Tyson, got to him n he just hugged me tightly without saying anything for about 5 minutes, he cupped my face and kissed me he pulled back after awhile.

Tyson: "bbe"

Me: "hey"

Tyson: "let's go home it cold"

Me: "it already late"

Tyson: "I'll wake you up in early in the morning you will sleep over" at that moment I didnt give a rats ass about my mom.

Me: "ok let's go" indeed we walked to his house, we got there and walked straight to his room. I took my sweatpants and hoody off, he also took of his clothes was left with boxers. We got under the covers and spooned.

Tyson: "I love you Lelo and I don't know how we going to cope with this move"

Me: "please tell me we going to be ok Ty"

Tyson: "we going to be ok"

Me: "I love you mina and I don't want to be without you" I sniffed and he made me turn so we can face each other. We looked at my eyes deeply like he was searching my soul or trying to solve a puzzle. He kissed me and I allowed him, we kissed slowly and passionately until I pulled back. He opened his eyes and there were red, his faced displayed different emotions at the same time lust, hurt, confusion, fear and love were all visible at the same time. He squeezed me hard like he was scared I was going to disappear.

Tyson: "we going to make it work I promise you"

Me: “you better keep your promise”

Tyson: “I will I swear” he kept on running his fingers on my hair until I fell asleep.

.

I woke up when I felt some shaking me, I open my eyes to meet his peircing through mine.

Tyson: “morning muhle wam” I smiled and covered my mouth with my hand.

Me: “morning baby how are you” he removed my hand and kissed me but I pushed him of me.

Tyson: “what now”

Me: “I haven’t even rinsed mouth” he laughed and tickled me, I laughed while begging him to stop.

Tyson: “kiss me first” and I did we kissed for a long time until our breathing changed and I pulled back.

Me: “what’s the time” he took his phone and checked.

Tyson: “it’s 06:10”

Me: “I should go prepare for school” he got off me

Tyson: “yea ... Come let me walk you home” we left, I got home and sneaked to my bedroom prepared for school then walked to the kitchen, made some coco pops I took one spoon and felt like throwing up the milk tasted like it rotten. Didn’t even make it to the bathroom I threw up in the passage as I was running to the bathroom.

## **part 28 I am scared of lonely**

I cleaned up, went to the bathroom room rinsed my mouth. Couldn’t have breakfast anymore coz of time. My transport came and I left for school spent time with Tyson before the bell rang. Time went by soon it was break time my friends and I bought food and walked to the grounds sat down and ate while talking.

Ndumo: “geeze Lelo slow down before you choke to death” I was eating like the world is set to end in a minute.

Me: “I didn’t have breakfast I’m really hungry”



Asa: "why didn't you eat?"

Me: "tried but I just threw up"

Ndumo: "that's weird" we laughed

Me: "tell me about it"

Asa: "maybe you pregnant" she giggled

Me: "fuck you" I showed her the middle finger

Ndumo: "maybe she's right"

Me: "you have to have sex in order to get pregnant"

Them: "true" we laughed and I thought how silly I mean I'd remember if I had sex. While we were chilling Leon walked to us.

Leon: "hi" he was looking at me

Me: "hey"

Leon: "can I talk to you Lelo"

Asa: "no" Ndumo chuckled

Leon: "I said Lelo not you Asa"

Asa: "and I said no"

Leon: "Lelo" he offered his hand and I took it, he pulled me up. We walked a bit further from my friends.

Me: "what do you want Leon"

Leon: "I miss you"

Me: "oh"

Leon: "please Lelo"

Me: "please what exactly"

Leon: "I messed up I know but you and I we work we can still work"

Me: "I don't wana have to feel like how I felt when I was with you I'm sorry but I can't" I started to walk away but he pulled me back to him and smashed his lips to mine and started kissing me in hunger for a second I allowed him I allowed myself to get lost in his kiss in his hold. I pulled back and he put his forehead on mine his eyes were closed.

Leon: "I love you muntu wam" I pushed him back

Me: "don't ever do that again, We not together anymore im not your. You have no right!" I screamed and stormed off to my friends.

Ndumo: "Lelo don't do it"

Asa: "yea Lelo his trouble"

Me: "I know"

We chilled until the bell rang soon it was the 2nd break and last period was cancelled because of a soccer match that was taking place. my friends and I went to watch after buying some wine gums and razzel dazzle pop corn. We watched the game and it was boring until 2nd half and Leon got in to play. He scored and pulled his tshirt up revealing his six pack the girls screamed I couldn't help but get lost and drool.

Asa: "close your mouth before flies get in"

Me: "oh shit" we laughed.

School was out after the match Leon's team won. My friends and I walked to the gate, while waiting for transport Tyson came to us.

Tyson: "hey girls"

Ndumo: "hey Mr prefect" Asa was just blushing away I poked Ndumo and pointed to Asa with my eyes we laughed at her she got angry and left us standing there.

Ndumo: "Asa wait up" she ran after her.

Tyson: "what was that about"

Me: "oh nothing" I said while laughing.

Tyson: "can I take you home"

Me: "yea sure" we walked to his car and he drove me home while we listened to some music and sang along. He dropped me off a house away from mine and drove off. Got home found mom and aunt dolly in the kitchen eating I dropped my bag and joined them.

Mom: "you don't even greet lelo"

Me: "sorry I'm hungry" I said while chewing

Dolly: "don't talk with food in your mouth it rude" I looked down and continued eating

Mom: "you need to pack, we spending the night at your fathers I need to make sure you

settled before I leave” I started crying

Me: “I will as soon as I’m done eating” I sniffed

Mom: “in less than two months you will join me Lelo” that didn’t stop my tears

Me: “I know” I finished eating and went to my room played some music loudly. Took my suitcases and started packing with tears streaming down my face. Couldn’t finish packing I got on top of the bed dropped all the clothes to the floor got under the covers rocked myself to sleep while crying.

## **part 29 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up when I felt the bed move and it was mom, she got under the covers and held me.

Mom: “are you okay?” She started brushing my hair and drawing circles on my head.

Me: “I’ll be fine mah”

Mom: “you need to finish packing it getting late”

Me: “why can’t I just stay here with aunt dolly”

Mom: “your father didn’t allow it”

Me: “oh ok, well let me finish up” she kissed my head and left. I continued packing everything I will need. Got finished and went to the lounge where mom and aunt dolly were watching generations.

Me: “what time are we leaving?”

Mom: “it already late we gona leave tomorrow morning” I sat down and watched tv with them

Dolly: “your food is in the microwave” I got up took my food and ate in the kitchen alone while chatting with Tyson.

Me: “I’m not leave today anymore I’ll leave tomorrow”

Tyson: “does that mean I’ll still see you?”

Me: “yep”

Tyson: “cool”

Nelo called while I was chatting to Tyson I didn’t answer his call. He just irritated me

sometimes for no reason I felt like he was annoying at times. After eating I went to my room took a shower and wore my pjs, watched a movie while chatting. Tyson called later on and I spent the night at his place. Woke up Saturday morning at 6 and he walked me home.

.

Got home and slept since it was still early everyone was still asleep. Woke up around 10 took a bath before leaving my room, did my bed packed my toiletries. Walked to the lounge and found aunt & mom eating breakfast in front of the tv I joined them we ate while having light conversations. At 13:00 we all left after putting our stuff in the cars I rode with mom and aunt dolly drove alone behind us. Got to my dad's I took my stuff to my room and left mah's in the car. We settled in nicely spent the rest of the day unpacking. We went to scottburgh mall for dinner. Got back home and slept mom left Sunday morning. Monday didn't go to school had major period pains like never before. The rest of the week went by slowly. I got used to waking up at 5:00 every day for school.

.

Two weeks later things were still good though I ate a lot and was tired all the time. Dad was just the best never came home drunk we spent more time together than ever. He would work 4 night shift and 5 day shift than have days off. I spent less time with Nelo being with him made me want to cry, seeing his face just angered me. Tyson and I were still good even though we didn't see each other, calls and chats made it better. Friday night dad was working night shift 6 to 6 and I was spending the night at Nelo's place. He picked me up at 19:00 we bought dinner before going to his place. We fought more like I was screaming my lungs out and he was calm as a cucumber. I got angry because he left a dish in the sink instead of washing it. I screamed and told him I'm not his wife or maid, all he did was just say sorry nana it will never happen again and that just made me more angry I cried myself to sleep and he slept in another room because I didn't want him near me. He woke me up at 5:00 Saturday morning so he could take me home before dad got back from work. I got home and found my dad's car in the drive way and

I just new shit was about to go down.

Me: “dad is home”

Nelo: “I’m sure his asleep”

Me: “I’m scared”

Nelo: “do you want me to get in with you”

Me: “are you crazy” I snapped

Nelo: “I’m just trying to help”

Me: “just unlock this bloody car” he did and I left without even saying goodbye. I opened the door slowly so it wouldn’t make noise. Got in and locked as I started walking to my room dad talked.

Dad: “where are you coming from lelothando” he was sitting on the couch still in his work clothes.

Me: “I ... I ... I”

Dad: “you you what” he started screaming

Me: “I’m sorry dad” I looked down

Dad: “sorry dad my foot, where the hell were you Lelo mani” he roared before I could answer I felt a hot hard slap on my cheek I held my cheek another one followed on my other cheek and I fell on the tiles and hit my head.

Dad: “you want to get pregnant neh” a kick followed “who is going to raise that bloody baby” another kick “I’m talking to you Lisakhanya answer me” couple of kicks followed and I became really weak my vision got blurry I screamed for aunt dolly, another kick he pulled me up so I can stand on my feet and they wobbled. He took off his belt and started beating until aunt dolly came rushing to the lounge.

Dolly: “you going to kill her”

Dad: “I don’t have time for little bitchz in my house”

Me: “I’m sorry dad” he threw me on the couch but I missed it and fell down after that everything went blank.

**part 30 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up when I heard voices, tried opening my eyes but i couldn't all I felt was pain my head, my stomach, my arm, my chest and my lower back. Could hear voices but in a whisper "look at what you've done" it sounded like mom but she was crying her voice was braking. Another voice "why is she still unconscious" couldn't make out who the voice belonged to but it was a man's voice "she hit her head pretty badly but there's no major damage she will wake up when she's ready to" I try to open my eyes but I can't boom blank again. I wake again I can hear sounds but my eyes or mouth refuse to open "why won't she wake up aunt Nosihle" it sounds like Ty ... Ty though what would I be without his love I think to myself. I'm brought back from my thoughts when I hear a loud voice filled with anger "Nosihle what is this child doing here it his fault Lelo is in that bed!" That's my dad. Unconsciousness consumes me again. "She's going to be fine Siya don't worry" .... "You know how your father is" .... "She slept out" ... "She was pregnant" after hearing that I struggle so hard to open my eyes and finally their open, first the lights hits me to hard I close them only to open them a second later.

Me: "mah" she looks at me and drops the call

Mom: "oh Lelo my child I'm so sorry" she says in between sobs

Me: "mah it hurts so bad" she brushes my face "my head hurts" I start crying, she rushes out and screams for a nurse who comes in immediately.

Nurse: "nice to see you up Lelo"

Me: "everything hurts"

Nurse: "I'll get the doctor" she walks out

Me: "mama" she looks at me with so much pity and disappointment "mama I'm sorry"

Mom: "it ok Lelo, I'm sorry too" the doctor comes in

Dr: "nice to see you up ms Tolo" I give him a weak smile

Mom: "she'll be fine ryt" after that I zone out something the doctor says brings me back

Me: "excuse me doc but what baby" he stares at mom who just shrugges her shoulders

Dr: "you were pregnant I'm sorry but you lost the baby" I stare at him in disbelief and I start shaking my head violently

Me: "no no no there's a mistake I was not pregnant"

Mom: "Lelo it ok what's done is done" I look at mom with so much anger and hurt

Me: "I swear mom I was not pregnant I've never had sex before I'm still a virgin I promise you" I cry hysterically

Dr: "I'll be out if you need me"

Me: "mama please" she just looks me and shakes her head "mah please you have to believe me I don't know what that doctor is talking about i wasn't pregant I've never had sex before mama please" she wakes to my side and hugs me tightly while brushing my back and I sob louder

Mom: "it ok Lelo my child it ok" she lets go of me "move a bit" I make way for her and she joins me in the bed. I put my head on her thighs while she's brushing my head. The nurse gets in and gives me an injection I slowly drift off. I get a pressing need to pee so I wake up and I'm alone I take out the iv that's attached to me and try to woke to the bathroom. With every step I take I feel pain, I find my way to the bathroom and walk back to my room that's when I see Tyson sitting on the chair next to my bed.

Tyson: "Lelo" he calls out in a questioning tone and his voice is filled with relieve. He hugs a little to tightly and I wince in pain. "I'm sorry" he frowns and I give him a weak smile

Me: "hey" the concern on his face makes me sad I get on top of the bed.

Tyson: "how you feeling" he strokes his thumbs across my cheekbones.

Me: "I've been better"

Tyson: "I'm so sorry Lelo if I could take the pain away I would" his voice is scratchy I can tell that his upset and his been crying

Me: "it not your fault"

Tyson: "I thought I'd lost you" he exhaled deeply and gave me me a kiss on my badged forehead.

Me: "did mom say anything about my phone" needed to let Nelo know where I am and what's going on

Tyson: "you want to call him" I stare at him in disbelief "you can use my phone if you know the number by heart"

Me: "you're not angry" he looks down for a moment his jaw clenched

Tyson: "I'm beyond angry lelo"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Tyson: "so his the father of your baby"

Me: "I wasn't pregnant I've never slept with him"

Tyson: "think hard Lelo" then it all comes back to me this whole shit of him rubbing his D.. On me how he would release his sperms all over my thighs.

Me: "I don't understand" tears start falling down my face

Tyson: "I wish you'd just told me from the beginning" I touch my stomach without meaning to

Me: "I ...I ..I" he gets up and tries to calm me down but lot of thought are running through my mind \*i was pregnant, dad killed my baby, what is Nelo going to say, where is he anyway when I need him the most, my parents must be so ashamed to be called my parents, I'm sure aunt dolly can't even look at me that's why she hasnt been here, I was going to be a mom at 14\* I cry so hard all the pain comes back my head starts pounding so much (I still suffer from persistent headaches since that year). my heart starts thumping and the monitor picks up it pace to match it. I cry for what seemed like an eternity with Tyson trying to calm me down. A while later my mom comes in.

Mom: "hey you awake"

Me: "how could you mom" she gives me a puzzled look "how can you leave me with him"

Mom: "well I didn't know you were going to decide to be a woman sleep out and get pregnant in the middle of all of that" those words hurt more than my father's beating, I bit my lips to stop them from shivering but that didn't stop the tears.

Me: "mah" her eyes were filled with regret she pulled me to her chest and held me softly

Mom: "I'm so sorry baby im so sorry I have no excuse you too young to go through all of this I'm sorry my child please forgive me it hurts to see you hurting" she was also crying. We heard the door opening and it was Tyson I didn't even realize he had left the room.



Me: "it ok mom"

Mom: "I think you need to see someone to talk to"

Me: "someone like"

Mom: "a psychologist" I chuckled

Me: "that's so white mom" she laughed but her laugh was filled with sadness

Mom: "I think you in denial baby and when this hits you it won't be pleasant"

Me: "I'm good mom really I'll be fine"

Mom: "ok I'll go get you guys some food" she left

Tyson: "maybe your mom is right about seeing someone"

Me: "I'll be fine really and anyway I got you"

Tyson: "that's it you don't have me Lelo" I opened my mouth to try and speak but nothing came out "do you know your parents think you were with me, that I made you pregnant"

Me: "I'm sorry" that's the only rational thing that could come out of my mouth. He kissed my lips softly

Me: "what now... Where do we go from here" his face was calm and sad at the same time

Tyson: "we go nowhere Lelo" tears started falling from both of us

Me: "I ... I don't understand"

Tyson: "I'm sorry"

Me: "but I love you"

Tyson: "I know and I love you more than you could ever imagine... But I don't think we love each other the same way"

Me: "Ty..." I let out a loud sob with shaking fingers he brushed my cheeks and kissed my forehead, he turned and walked towards the door.

Me: "Ty please"

Tyson: "I'm sorry Lelo" tears didn't stop falling from his face.

Me: "Tyson" I screamed for him but he walked out and left me crying and hurting emotionally and physically.

## **part 31 I am scared of lonely**

I got discharged the following day it was Wednesday we went home not my fathers place, mom was off at work for he week. Hadn't seen Nelo since the morning dad beat me up not that I blame him though I had no idea where my phone was. For some reason didn't even feel like being social and not having my phone helped with that. Was in my room watching a movie on my pc when mom came in my room and sat on my bed, I put my head on her thighs and she played with my hair no said anything for about 5 minutes but the silence was not awkward.

Me: "mah"

Mom: "Lelo wam"

Me: "I'm really sorry mah"

Mom: "why can't you talk to me and be open with me"

Me: "you hardly around mah" she sighted

Mom: "I know I'm sorry" she bend down and kissed my head

Me: "I'll try to be open"

Mom: "I do love you Lelothando you my only daughter, you our princess your father and I only wants what's best for you"

Me: "I know I'm sorry im such a disappointment to you and dad"

Mom: "no baby, don't ever think like that, you made a mistake and your dad shouldn't have reached that way"

Me: "I'm sorry" I felt my cheek getting wet I looked at mom and she was crying silently my heart broke.

Me: "please mah I'm so sorry" she quickly wiped them.

Mom: "it not your fault" she kissed my forehead i just nodded we remained silent for awhile.

Mom: "please talk to me Lelo ka mama" I looked at her

Me: "I don't understand mom"

Mom: "I talked to tyson and he knew nothing about the baby"

Me: "I also didn't know that I was pregnant"

Mom: "how do I feel"

Me: "I feel normal mah"

Mom: "was tyson the father" I didn't say anything didn't know what to say "Lelo talk to me" I just cried

Me: "mah" she looked deeply into my eyes than held me rocking me back and forth "I don't understand mah"

Mom: "what don't you understand"

Me: "this whole me being pregnant issue I've never had sex before"

Mom: "oh". I knew she didn't believe me that oh just said it all.

Me: "it wasn't Tyson... I'm so sorry mom"

Mom: "ssh it ok"

Me: "I've been seeing someone else"

Mom: "what do you mean"

Me: "I've been seeing this guy now for a couple of months"

Mom: "what guy"

Me: "Sbonele Ngcobo"

Mom: "oh I see" (I don't come from a strictly traditional family and I wouldn't say my mom is modernized but she's cool)

Me: "it him"

Mom: "tell me how you got pregnant since you claim you never had sex with this Sbonelo guy" yoh!!

Me: "ayi mama"

Mom: "I'm just trying to understand" she chuckled. There was no way I was about to tell mom what Nelo and I do.

Me: "it complicated"

Mom: "mmh"

Me: "where's my phone"

Mom: "it in my bag, I'm going back to durban on Sunday. Your father and I need to meet this Sbonelo guy before Sunday"

Me: “yoh mom why”

Mom: “you wouldn’t understand”

We continued watching the movie silently until we both fell asleep.

.

I woke up later it was already dark outside and mom was still asleep. Went to the bathroom washed my face and rinsed my mouth. Woke mom up.

Mom: “mmh”

Me: “I’m hungry”

Mom: “fusteki !!” I chuckled and went to the kitchen made a sandwich ate than went to mom’s room took my phone from her bag. Switched it on messages flooded in mostly from 144, Nelo and my friends. Decided to call Nelo first.

Nelo: “hi”

Me: “hey”

Nelo: “where have you been”

Me: “I..” Didn’t even let me finish

Nelo: “are you cheating on me !! Eh Lelo”

Me: “aa..”

Nelo: “know what I’m coming there”

Me: “shut up you fool!!”

Nelo: “don’t use that tone with me don’t you dare”

Me: “know what fuck you dude” I dropped the call. He called back immediately but I didn’t answer. He sent an sms saying his coming, I sent him one telling him that I’m at home not at my dad’s. After an hour or so he called saying his outside and I went to him. Saw him standing next to his car with his hands in his pockets and his head down, he heard the gate opening and looked up \*Nelo Is hot you guys like he just looks godly in everything that he wears, the way he smells could melt any female\* I got to him, he looked at my slightly bruised face and gave me a hard hug I winced in pain

Me: “ouch” he let go of

Nelo: “what happened nana” told him the whole story about dad beating me up when

he dropped me off his eyes burned with range.

Nelo: "I'm so sorry nana if I knew you were in hospital I would have came im so sorry" I cried in his arms he kept on apologizing and brushing my back.

Me: "I have something to tell you"

Nelo: "what"

Me: "I'm scared you won't believe me even I don't understand" he cupped my face and kissed me tenderly

Nelo: "talk to me"

Me: "I ... I"

Nelo: "I'm listening baby" I looked down and played with my fingers

Me: "I was pregnant" he didn't say anything for a minute or so

Nelo: "I don't understand"

Me: "I was pregnant Nelo and I lost the baby when dad hit me" he looked at me than softly pushed me away from him. He turned and buried his head on the car.

Nelo: "that fucker!!" He punched the car widow and it broke, he got in and drove off.

### **part 33 I am scared of lonely**

I narrowed my eyes and pouted, he let out a loud laugh couldn't help but smile like you guys wouldn't understand I loves me some Sbonelo Ngcobo.

Nelo: "nana" he called out in between his laughter.

Me: "what?" I sulked and he grabbed my face gave me a long deep kiss he pulled back but I kept my eyes closed I could feel the heat of his breath on my face.

Me: "kiss me" my eyes were still closed after a minute or so I felt a cold wet thing on my face I opened my eyes and he was licking my face I pushed him while laughing.

Me: "eewu Sbonele that's disgusting"

Nelo: "shut up coz you like it" he picked me up and spinned me around we were both laughing

Me: "put me down nelo" he didn't listen until we were both dizzy, he sat on the

pavement with me on top of him.

Nelo: "I love you nana" I giggled and held him.

Me: "I need to go home" the sun was rising

Nelo: "don't leave me Lelothando" I chuckled

Me: "I have to go home"

Nelo: "I understand that, I'm not talking about now. I'm saying don't walk out of my life"

he looked so fragile I gave him a soft peck on his lips

Me: "never"

Nelo: "I mean it nana, you see this" he pointed to his heart and I nodded "it beats for you" I gave him a reassuring smile "you make me strong but you also my weakness nana, I'd die before I let someone harm you"

Me: "what's wrong" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "I hate what your father did to you, if he does that again I'll kill him" the coldness in his voice could not be missed.

Me: "his my dad, it his way of discipline" couldn't even look at him coz I also knew what I was saying was pure bullshit.

Nelo: "mmh" I looked at him, his eyes were half closed. I just pulled him to me and kissed him wrapping my hands around his neck. We kissed for a long time I could feel his manhood getting harder with every passing second under me, I pulled out.

Me: "walk me home" he chuckled. We stood up and walked home, he was walking behind me holding my waist he kept on nibbling on my neck until we got home.

Nelo: "will see you soon" he hugged me and kissed my head. I walked in the gate and closed it behind me. Blew him a kiss he pretended to catch it and I laughed.

Nelo: "you need to change your hairstyle love" I immediately touched my head. Showed him my middle finger he laughed I walked up the drive way sneaked back in, went to my room and prepared for school it was already 06:00 am. Finished up wore my blazer even though it was hot just to hide the light bruises. By 07:20 am was already in the kitchen having breakfast, mom walked in.

Mom: "morning Lelo wami" she kissed my cheek and I smiled finished chewing.

Me: "morning mommy, how you doing?"

Mom: "I'm good, well rested. How are you"

Me: "I'm fresh" we laughed "slept well?"

Mom: "yep, next time if you going to sneak out have the decency to close the door properly behind you" I chocked and started coughing.

Me: "mom ..."

Mom: "eat your food you gona be late and I have to drop you off".

Indeed I finished up and she took me to school. Got to school went to the grounds looking for my friends but I couldn't find them. Called Ndumo she said they by the tuck shop so I went to them. We hugged greeted each other. The school was a little quieter than normal the grade 12s were not coming to school anymore. We were also close to starting exams it was basically revision time through out the whole school. The bell rang, 3 periods went pass fast soon it was break time the girls and I went to the tuck shop bought food sat by the grounds eating while talking.

Asa: "still can't believe that your dad beat you up to the point where you became unconscious"

Me: "yeah well it is what it is" Ndumo was quite the whole time it was starting to bother me. Ndumo and I were closer than Asa and I.

Me: "what's wrong Ndumo?"

Ndumo: "nothing"

Asa: "there she goes with her moods" I slightly pushed Asa

Me: "hayi Asanda don't start" she shrugged her shoulders

Ndumo: "mxm" we continued eating. Nokukhanya and her friends walked pass us she looked back when she was a bit far from us.

Nokukhanya: "heard your boyfriend beat up so bad you ended up in hospital" I didn't say anything.

Asa: "ei fuck you granny" I laughed

Nokukhanya: "well that's what you getting for dating old guys, bitch you couldn't satisfy leon what we're doing trying to be with an older guy" Ndumo laughed and I looked at

her in disbelief Nokukhanya walked away. Asa and I looked at Ndumo with that wtf look she rolled her eyes. The bell rang we went to class. Time moved fast after the second break a meeting for grade 9s was called. It was about careers and what subjects to do if you want to pursue a certain career. We were given forms to bring back the following day about the subjects we wanted to do the following year. Soon it was after school mom picked me up, we went home. While on my way home I logged in on facebook browsed through news feed and Ndumo's status caught my eye.

\*aint nobody got time for spoilt self-centered little bitches\*

That bothered me cause it was clear that something was going on with her.

Got home changed into a short summer dress and flops had lunch. Did my homework, took the form to my mom she filled it in I was to do geography, life science, physics, maths. Which was cool with me, took a nap. Woke up later on called Ndumo but she didn't answer so I called Asa and asked her what's happening with Ndumo she had no idea. Thursday and Friday went by everything was cool Ndumo was distancing herself from us it was worrying me but Asa didn't care. Saturday mom and I went to the mall got my hair n nails done, we did a little bit of shopping had lunch. While having lunch Nelo walked in the restaurant with a boy around my age our eyes met he winked at me and I smiled mom turned to see who I was smiling at I chuckled.

Mom: "whose that" she pointed to Nelo with her head

Me: "I don't know" my phone beeped signaling an sms it was from Nelo

\*i see you took my advice about the hair, you look pretty ma'Tolo\*

I blushed and looked at him. Mom was staring at me.

Mom: "what's going on lelothando, who is that"

Me: "hha mama I don't know" Nelo were sitting at a table across us, we kept glancing at each other and smiling, he sent another sms.

\*can I come say hi to my mother in law\*

I looked at him and shook my head. We continued eating, we finished mom settled the bill. As we were walking past Nelo he cleared his throat and said bye mom looked at him confused shook her head walked out.



Mom: "was that sbonelo" mom asked as soon as we walked out.

Me: "no"

Mom: "don't lie"

Me: "I'm not lying" she gave me a dead stare "yes it was him"

Mom: "call him"

Me: "no"

Mom: "now!!" I walked back in and went to his table.

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "well hey nana" he smiled stood up and gave me a hug "this is my little brother Sfuno" I waved at his brother

Me: "mom wants to meet you"

Nelo: "yea cool, I'll be right back Sfuno" we went to mom. She looked at him from the toes to his head and raised her one eyebrow.

Nelo: "uhm hello" he looked a little frightened it was cute.

Mom: "hi" Nelo stretched his head. "So you are sbonelo"

Nelo: "ah yes ma'am"

Mom: "mmh, well it was nice meeting you"

Nelo: "same here"

Mom: "bye" she started walking off and I stood there frozen for a second "Lelothando come"

Me: "yes mom" Nelo spanked my butt and I squealed he winked and walked back to the restaurant I ran after my mom. We got in the car and drove off in silence until she spoke.

Mom: "his old"

Me: "not that old I mumbled"

Mom: "you need to brake up with him"

Me: "mama no" i said in a plea

Mom: "yes or I will tell your father"

**part 34 I am scared of lonely**

Me: "I don't care mom, I don't care go on tell dad. Tell him so he can beat me to death it not like you two ever loved me anyway" I was so hurt but I didn't wana cry I've cried enough.

Mom: "see you already got attitude, noba ucinga kuthi you old enough now. You think you can just open your mouth and talk however and whatever you want". After that I didn't say anything all the way home until she parked the car in the garage.

Mom: "Lelo you will leave that boy actually his not even a boy his a man" I didn't say anything just got out the car slammed the door and ran to my room lock the door behind me. She tried opening the door but couldn't.

Mom: "open this door Lisakhanya"

Me: "no leave me alone"

Mom: "you open this door, come to the kitchen and pack that grocery". For some stupid reason I laughed, stood up took my iPod and earphones plugged in my earphones listened to music, walked out went to the kitchen left mom standing outside my door. I unpacked the grocery, don't even know why she did it coz she's leaving Sunday and it was already Saturday, I was also going back to my dads the following day. Finished up went back to my room chatted to Nelo until I fell asleep. Woke up when I felt someone shaking me, opened my eyes and it was dad.

Me: "dad?" I rubbed my eyes

Dad: "come to the lounge your mother and I need to talk to you"

Me: "ok" he left my room I got up went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth and washed my face. Went to the lounge dad was watching soccer, I sat on the couch opposite him mom came in from the kitchen and sat next to dad. I took a look at them my parents make a good couple mom is light skinned while dad is dark mom is shorter and smaller than dad, mom is the complete opposite of dad in everything.

Mom: "we want to talk to you about your living arrangements"

Me: "oh"

Dad: "yes, with school being like a month away from closing"

Me: "oh"

Dad: "you coming back to stay with me then after exams you can go to durban to your mom, Siyabulela will be back by the time you done with your exams so you two can stay here with dolly" I involuntarily smiled that whole sentence screamed FREEDOM.

Me: "does this mean I have a choice between the two?"

Dad: "yes"

Me: "than I'd rather be here with Siyabulela"

Dad: "I need that boys number" my heart skipped a beat

Me: "aah what .. What boy" I looked at mom with hatred couldn't believe she really told dad.

Mom: "I will smack you so hard"

Me: "what did I do" dad was looking at both of us his jaws clenched.

Me: "can I go lie down I got a headache"

Dad: "we still talking, give me his number Lelothando I don't have time to go back n forth with you"

Me: "I'll go get my phone" I walked to my room, took my phone and called Nelo.

Nelo: "hey nana"

Me: "dad wants your number" there was awkward silence after that, I cleared my throat.

Nelo: "give it to him"

Me: "oh" he chuckled

Nelo: "it ok nana, give it to him"

Me: "oryt bye"

Nelo: "hey I love you ok, don't worry about your dad n I "

Me: "easier said than done" I dropped the call, walked to the Lounge gave dad his number.

Me: "why do you want it dad"

Dad: "there are things I need to discuss with him" I got curious

Me: "what things?"

Mom: "ayi Lelo know your place"

Me: "oryt than" I walked to my room. Time went by fast, Sunday moved back to dad.

My exams came I burried myself I to my books hardly saw Nelo. Dad and Nelo's father talked Nelo paid damages, his family did the whole cleansing ceremony. I wasn't happy about the whole thing I didn't wana do it but dad pushed saying it necessary or I'll have bad luck. It was just embarrassing for me felt like I'm putting my business in the open I found the whole thing unnecessary. Mom was still pushing me to brake up with Nelo but that just made me fall for him deeper and want to spend all my time with him, my relationship with Nelo was getting stronger day by day he was just amazing. I got done with my exams, my friendship with Ndumo was still rocky she wouldn't tell me what I did wrong Asa said we shouldn't pay any attention to her moods she was just on and off, rumors around school was that she's dating Leon she denied it when I asked her so I left it as it is and moved on. Asa and I spent a week after the exams in durban at mom's flat, she was still looking for a house. It was amazing my bond with Asa was getting stronger. Second week of December I went back home siyabulela and aunt dolly were there, my cousin Philisiwe from my mom side was visiting. She was older than me in she was 17 but she was cool and a lesbian. So this Wednesday we were sitting at home bored watching tv everyone was busy with their phones aunty dolly was out.

Philisiwe: "aah you guys" we looked at her "my girlfriend is coming to see me"

Me: "oh cool" Siya chuckled

Siya: "you serious about this lesbian thing of yours"

Philisiwe: "what is that supposed to mean" I laughed

Siya: "no just that I thought it was just a phase" she stood up fixed her short skirt and walked to the kitchen I was laughing the whole time. She came back with a glass of ice water and gave to Siya we both looked at her puzzled.

Philisiwe: "you my brother need to chill" I laughed at them. We continued chilling a while later we heard a knock she opened the door.

Philisiwe: "baby!" We couldn't see who it was

Voice: " I missed you so much"

Philisiwe: “come on in” I was shocked there in front of my eyes stood skimpy outfit ( that girl who was with Nelo at the mall the other night in July) she looked pretty in short floral dress.

Siya: “oh my God” his mouth was open

Philisiwe: “close your mouth bro flies might get in” I laughed “well guys this is my baby ...” She didn’t get to finish Siya disturbed her

Siya: “Nobuhle!” We all looked at him skimpy outfit raised her eyebrow giving Siya an attitude

Philisiwe: “yes, you know her”

Siya: “she’s my exe” I laughed out loud

Me: “amen”

### **part 35 I am scared of lonely**

We all stood there in awkward silence Siya was looking at Nobuhle who was looking at me and Philisiwe was looking at Siya it was kinda funny so I laughed out loud.

Nobuhle: “and you, what are you laughing at?” She kept her eyes on me.

Me: “nothing makoti” I laughed harder

Siya: “so you into girls now you grew tired of the dick”

Philisiwe: “Siyabulela no!!” She attempted to pull Nobuhle’s hand but she didn’t wana move.

Siya: “Nobuhle I’m talking to you, since when are you a lesbian”

Nobuhle: “Siya can we talk in your room please”

Me: “hhe” I laughed and looked at Philisiwe who looked like steam was about to come out of her nose, she gave me a dead stare.

Me: “sorry” I took my phone and pretended to be chatting but I was still listening this seemed interesting.

Siya: “no we’ll talk here”

Philisiwe: “baby what’s going on”

Nobuhle: “nothing” Philisiwe took Nobuhle’s hand and they walked to the room

Philisiwe uses at home. Siya sat down on the couch and drank the water Philisiwe had brought for him earlier.

Me: "bigbro are you ok?"

Siya: "yea, just can't believe she's into fingers now" he chuckled and I raised my eyebrow

Me: "can see you hurting"

Siya: "she did something really bad when we were together"

Me: "what's that?"

Siya: "nothing Lelo lets just get over this"

We chilled and continued watching tv, Philisiwe walked through the lounge to the kitchen and came back awhile later with a snack, went back to the room. After awhile we heard shouting come from Philisiwe's room followed by a loud bang so we ran to her room tried opening the door but it was locked another loud bang followed right after it there was a loud sob. Siya tried opening the door but it wouldn't.

Siya: "open this door now"

Philisiwe: "please go away" her voice was soft

Me: "are you ok"

Philisiwe: "yeah everything is fine" Siya and I looked at each other, i shrugged shoulders and went to my room, called my boo thang he answered on the 3rd ring.

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey daddy" he chuckled

Nelo: "mmh" I giggled

Me: "I miss you"

Nelo: "I know nana I also miss you"

Me: "it sad, it makes me sad"

Nelo: "we wouldn't want that right"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I'll come that side later how about we do dinner"

Me: "I'd love that" I couldn't hide the excitement in my voice he laughed

Nelo: "you miss me that much" I giggled

Me: "nope not at all daddy just excited about the free meal" he laughed

Nelo: "and here I was thinking you miss me"

Me: "nah just miss the free food"

Nelo: "you eat a lot"

Me: "are you saying I'm fat"

Nelo: "no I'm saying you eat a lot"

Me: "mxm" he chuckled

Nelo: "your birthday is coming up"

Me: "oh ja that"

Nelo: "what do you wana do"

Me: "anything I'm cool"

Nelo: "you sure?"

Me: "yep"

Nelo: "it your birthday so I know you want to ride out, even if we only go to my house, sip more weezy as we sit on my couch feels so good I know you want to cry out ... You say you want passion I think you found it get ready for action don't be astounded we switching positions you feel surrounded tell me where you want your gift girl ... Birthday sex birthday sex it the best day of the year girl" he was singing to me

Me: "tryna tell me something"

Nelo: "don't need candles and cake just need your body to make good" he continued singing, his voice was seductive

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "we ...w....we haven't really had the sex talk" he laughed

Nelo: "relax Lelo" I sighted

Me: "oryt"

Nelo: "whenever you ready nana"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "bye"

Nelo: "will pick up at 07:00 pm"

Me: "cool" i dropped the call. It was already 5:30 so I had enough time to get ready. I went to the lounge to talk to Siya.

Me: "hey hello hey" he laughed

Siya: "what's up"

Me: "well" I looked at him and he shook it head

Siya: "talk lelo ka mama"

Me: "Nelo wants to take me to dinner was wondering if you could cover for me with aunt dolly" I said really fast

Siya: "nope"

Me: "aibo" he laughed

Siya: "I'm joking and it about time I met this Nelo guy, let me know when his hear don't sneak out like you always do" I giggled

Me: "oryt will do" I ran to my room right to the bathroom took a shower, got out did all the necessities then came the hard part finding something to wear. The weather was changing it was getting cold. I sat on my bed half naked my phone beeped signaling an sms it was from Nelo.

\*im on my way nana hope you ready, don't keep me waiting as always\*

I started panicking got to my wore drop pulled all the clothes out (I still do this all the time I go out). With all my clothes on the floor I started fixing different outfits and putting them on the bed. Ended up choosing black leggings with a black oversized shirt, got dressed tucked in the shirt on the front and wore my knee length boots. Fixed my yanky into a bun applied light make up. Nelo called saying his a house up mine told him to park in front of the gate. Took my maroon purse put all my things in it and walked to the lounge Siya and Philisiwe we're watching tv guess Nobuhle had left.

Philisiwe: "wow you look pretty" I smiled and bowed Siya laughed

Siya: "you better come back or I'm telling mom"



Me: “yea yea, come Nelo is out already”

Philisiwe: “I also wana meet him” I laughed we all walked out, as we walked down the drive I saw my boo thang standing outside his car busy on his phone I just smiled we walked out the gate. We got to him and he hugged me n kissed my forehead Siya cleared his throat.

Me: “oh Nelo this is my brother and cousin” Nelo hugged Philisiwe and fist pumped Siya. My boo thang looked godly in dark ink skinny jeans dropped a little low navy shirt and black air. Philisiwe kept on pinching me while Siya and Nelo were talking and laughing I wasn’t even paying attention to what they were talking about I just kept looking at Nelo’s lips. After awhile we left, had dinner and watched a late movie afterwards he took me home.

.

A week later on Friday it was the 16th of December we had plans, Nelo and Siya got along so well that even when mom started her anti-Nelo campaign Siya defended him. We were going to scottburgh beach, I drove with Nelo and Asa while Siya was driving his car it was him and Philisiwe. We went to scottburgh mall first for late lunch Siya were going to meet us at the mall. They found us at wimpy siya was with a beautiful short girl that he introduced as Pinky his two other friends Jr Ndumo’s brother and sbu. We had lunch than went to the beach took out camp chairs and cooler boxz. They started drinking everyone was drinking besides me Asa and pinky were dancing I decided to take a walk. While walking this boy came to me introduced himself as Lindo we exchanged number while walking and laughing I felt hands holding my waist I turned and it was Nelo, he gave me a long deep kiss his hand grabbed my ass I couldn’t help but let out a moan as his tongue invaded my mouth my breathing changed and he pulled back turned me around so I could see Lindo who was still standing there I felt embarrassed,

Nelo: “sho mf2”

Lindo: “uhm hey”

Nelo: “bye” he put me in front of him and walked behind me holding my waist.

Nelo: "what was that about"

Me: "nothing, he was just saying hi"

Nelo: "let's hope so" I stopped walking and turned looked at him.

Me: "don't start" he closed his eyes and breathed out loudly when he opened them their we filled with lust.

Nelo: "I'm horny" he took my hand and madee feel his dick which was hard.

Me: "it not my fault"

Nelo: "what am I supposed to do when you look this good" he bite his lower lip

Me: "let's leave" he kissed me again and slide his hand under my short summer dress kept on brushing my thigh his hand went up to my punani I stepped back he took his hand out.

Me: "let's go to your place"

### **part 36 I am scared of lonely**

He looked at me and smile, his eyes were half closed he shook his head lightly.

Nelo: "you wana take advantage of me coz I've been drinking" he ran his tongue on my lower lip n I got a tingling feeling. I parted my lips slightly letting out a small moan, he whispered I love you on my ear than bite it after that he blowed on it and my body shook a little. He let out a chuckle looked at me deeply in my eyes as if he was looking for something, he smashed his lips on mine we kissed hungrily until he heard someone clearing their throat and it was Philisiwe.

Philisiwe: "get a room" Nelo laughed for some reason I was embarrassed couldn't even look at her.

Nelo: "fuck you" they both laughed I was standing there like a statue. Nelo pulled me and we started walking towards where everyone was seated. Nelo sat down and I gave him a look, he pulled me to his lap.

Me: "thought we were leaving"

Nelo: "later" he kissed my cheek and continued drinking. Everyone was having fun and I was kinda bored took my phone just browsed on facebook while busy on facebook an

sms came through from a number I didn't know.

\*you seem bored\*

I looked around and my eyes landed on Lindo I smiled and texted him back.

\*lol yeah a little\*

\*come here\* I looked at Nelo who was busy talking to the guys than looked up at Lindo.

\*my bf won't like that\*

\*thats his problem not mine\* I laughed I was still seating on Nelo's lap his one hand was around my waist while he had a glass on the other one. He looked at me in a questioning manner than gave me a soft peck on my lips.

Nelo: "what's funny nana why you laughing by yourself"

Me: "oh it nothing was just on facebook" he nodded than went back to his conversation, another sms came through.

\*so?\*

\*i can't\*

\*promise me that you will see me before you leave please Lelothando\*

\*i will\*

\*you look pretty by the way\* I smiled and didn't reply. I pulled Nelo's face to mine and kissed him, he deepened the kiss.

Siya: "ei fok of mani" Nelo chuckled and I pouted.

Nelo: "sorry bru but she just can't stay away" I sulked

Siya: "don't hurt my sister Sbonelo coz I'll come after you"

Nelo: "not in a million years, this is my queen"

Me: "I'm still here" I rolled my eyes

Jr: "you so calm Siya, I don't know how I'd feel about my sister having a bf" I shifted uncomfortably but Nelo brought me closer to him

Siya: "might as well accept it coz she'll sneak out either way" we all laughed

Nelo: "I love her" he looked at me and kissed my forehead I smiled shyly. There was a moment of silence but not awkward silence. Everyone went back to their drinking and talking

Me: "I love you more daddy" I whispered into his ear, he looked at me and gave me this smile that I feel is just reserved for me. Everyone continued drinking until it got late Nelo suggested we move to his house and everyone agreed coz they still wanted to drink and we couldn't go home because of aunt dolly. We got to Nelo's place Asa and Siya were complaining about hunger so the guys ended up braaiing, the music was playing and some of Nelo's friends joined us with some girls I stayed up trying to mingle until I got fed up, walked to the kitchen to drink water and Nelo followed me he was kak drunk.

Nelo: "nana" he walked to me picked me up and sat me on the counter. He got between my legs and he buried his face on my thighs.

Nelo: "I love you" he mumbled and I brushed his head.

Me: "I'm going to sleep"

Nelo: "do you want me to come with you"

Me: "no it ok, go on and have fun" he lifted me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist.

Nelo: "you heavy"

Me: "fuck you" he laughed and walked through the lounge where everyone was seated.

Philisiwe: "and than?"

Nelo: "I'm taking my wife to bed" the guys laughed, Siya and pinky were already asleep in one of the rooms. He got to his room and opened the door with one hand. He laid me on the bed and got on top of me. He grabbed me by my hip and pull me to him my hand goes to his head, he kisses me softly and passionately I moan into his mouth. He kisses the base of my ear down to my neck, he takes off my dress in one easy move than leave kisses all over my body as he goes down and kiss my inner thighs biting them softly. He looks at me and I close my eyes.

Nelo: "keep them open" his voice is hoarse. He takes off my panties I blush and he grins wickedly. His cold tongue finds my clit and I groan, he doesn't stop his tongue circles my clit driving me insane I grab the spread the feeling goes on and on, his tongue moving round and round I pant, he shoves his tongue in my punani I moan loudly.

Me: "Nelo ... Please" he comes back up and take my bra off his lips finds mine I can taste my juices. His hand goes to punani he starts rubbing on it in a slow motion, his kisses each of my breast and teases my nipples I groan n writhe under him. His finger slowly sinks into me and he moves it in slow circular pace it goes in n out, in n out I lift my pelvis up to meet his finger he and he puts in the 2nd one n I wince a little it painful yet pleasurable at the same time. He goes faster he moves from my mouth to my clit without hesitation the sensation I receive from his tongue on my clit and his fingers in me becomes my undoing and I explode with a loud moan. He pulls his fingers out and smirks at me and I smile shyly.

Nelo: "I love you nana" he kisses my forehead and cuddles me

Me: "I love you baby"

Nelo: "I want you nana a lot, but not when ive been drinking"

Me: "you got visitors downstairs" he chuckles and stands up walks in the bathroom and come out kisses my forehead.

Nelo: "sleep nana I'll join you soon" with that he walks out. I get up go to the bathroom and take a quick hot shower come out and put on his tshirt. Take my phone and I have floods of smsz from Lindo I decide to call him.

Lindo: "hey"

Me: " sorry I left without seeing you"

Lindo: "it cool I understand, can I see you soon maybe tomorrow"

Me: "we'll talk tomorrow about meeting up"

Lindo: "what you busy with"

Me: "I'm about to sleep, so goodnight"

Lindo: "goodnight beautiful" I dropped the call and slept.

### **part 37 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up with Nelo wrapped around me like he was scared I was going to run away, I felt hot and suffocated but I loved it. Tried getting out of bed and he woke rubbed his eyes he looked so adorable.

Nelo: "nana" his voice was rough and bass

Me: "morning baby"

Nelo: "it still early nana let's sleep"

Me: "ok let me pee first" he kissed my forehead, I got out of bed went to the bathroom.

When I came out he was asleep I went to his side and kissed him. Walked back to the bathroom and took a long hot bath got out did all the necessity using his toiletries.

Wore his boxers and tshirt it about time I had some of my clothes here. Walked to the lounge and it was a mess, I sat down thinking about the mess. I'm a very lazy person I even thought about going back to bed but ended up cleaning. By the time Philisiwe woke up I was done cleaning.

Philisiwe: "awu wifey"

Me: "mxm" we laughed

Philisiwe: "slept well after all that moaning you were doing"

Me: "you heard that"

Philisiwe: "everyone did, we even lowered the volume on the radio"

Me: "fuck you bra" I left her there in the lounge and went to the kitchen but she followed me.

Philisiwe: "what's for breakfast im starving"

Me: "I'm not your maid, where's everyone?" She laughed

Philisiwe: "Siya and pinky are sleeping, the others left and I don't know where Asa is"

Me: "what you mean you don't know"

Philisiwe: "she disappeared while we were drinking"

Me: "haibo Philisiwe" I ran upstairs to Nelo's room took my phone and called her but her phone rang unanswered I kept on calling her until someone answered

Voice: "hello" it was a man's voice

Me: "hello, where's Asa"

Voice: "she's asleep"

Me: "whose this"

Voice: "qiniso" qiniso was one of Nelo's friends who were here last night.

Me: "oh ok, uhm please tell her to call me when she's up" I walked to the kitchen and found Philisiwe making breakfast, Siya and Pinky were up as well.

Me: "hello fam"

Siya: "lil sis" pinky just waved

Me: "you guys slept well?"

Them: "yep"

Pinky: "let's leave baby I need to bath"

Siya: "let's eat first" Philisiwe finished up I took Nelo's food and put it in the microwave we ate and finished, pinky washed the dishes.

Siya: "let's leave"

Me: "can I stay behind please Nelo will bring me home"

Philisiwe: "ok cool" we looked at her and she laughed

Me: "was actually talking to siyabulela not you"

Philisiwe: "ouch" we all laughed

Siya: "yea sure, but come back you know mom is coming home tomorrow" they left I opened the gate for them and closed it after they drove out I went to the lounge and watched tv. Must have fell asleep coz I woke up when I felt someone picking me up.

Me: "baby" my eyes were still closed

Nelo: "ssh I'm taking you to bed" he carried me to the bed, laid me down under the cover and spooned me.

Me: "I love you" he kissed the back of my head and I slept. Woke up alone in bed searched for my phone found it under the bed filled with missed and texts from Lindo. Decided to call Asa again and this time she answered.

Asa: "hey"

Me: "Asanda where the hell did you sleep" she laughed

Asa: "relax, I slept at Qiniso's place"

Me: "hoe"

Asa: "whatever, where are you"

Me: "at Nelo's, where are you"

Asa: "at home"

Me: "what happened"

Asa: "well .... Well Qiniso and I were felling each other so we left for his place and got it on" she squealed

Me: "what about your bf"

Asa: "what about him"

Me: "mmh I ain't saying none, just be careful"

Asa: "I'm grown"

Me: "if you say so look I gotta go"

Asa: "bye" I dropped the call went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth walked out and found Nelo fixing the bed.

Me: "hey baby" he came to me and held my waist

Nelo: "nana, how you feeling"

Me: "I'm hungry" he chuckled

Nelo: "well let's feed you" he pulled my hand and we walked to the kitchen I sat on the high chair while he prepared sandwiches.

Nelo: "you sleeping over right"

Me: "I can't mom is coming back tomorrow"

Nelo: "please nana I'll send you back in the morning"

Me: "I want to but I can't" he pouted and I laughed

Me: "you look like a cat" he laughed

Nelo: "I want you to stay nana so I'll even look like a cat if it will make you stay"

Me: "no I cant"

Nelo: "mmh" he finished making the food, gave me mine kissed my forehead and we ate. After eating we watched tv under the blanket with my head on his thighs.

Nelo: "how do you feel about spending Christmas with my family"

Me: "not sure"

Nelo: " why not nana I mean it not like you haven't met them before"

Me: " I get that daddy but they met me due to different circumstances I don't think I



want to be there”

Nelo: “oh” he sounded disappointed

Me: “let me think about it ok” he didn’t say anything and I felt bad. When I met Nelo’s family it wasn’t on a good frame, I know I wouldn’t have had met them if we didn’t put ourselves on that situation so spending Christmas with his family was something different.

Nelo: “do you have doubt about us”

Me: “where is that coming from”

Nelo: “it just a question nana answer it”

Me: “no I don’t”

Nelo: “why you were hesitant”

Me: “stop trying to start something” I got up went to the kitchen drank water stood at the door and opened the top part of it. The weather had changed it was raining I’ve loved the rain ever since I can remember something about it just calms me. I stood there thinking about my relationship with Nelo I love him im in love with him, would walk a thousand miles for him but sometimes he gets a little too possessive. Sometimes I think I need someone my age maybe mom is right after all mothers know best. While I was still thinking I felt Nelo’s hands wrap around my waist and he kissed my cheek.

Nelo: “I’m sorry nana” I didn’t say anything he turned me around I kept my head down. He lifted my chin with his index finger and looked at my eyes until I blushed. He grabbed my neck and brought me closer to him, kissed me deeply.

Nelo: “I’m sorry” he mumbled in my mouth “I didn’t mean to upset you nana, sometimes I get a little insecure” I pulled back and looked at him shook my head slightly

Nelo: “let’s cook perfect weather for dumplings” I smiled and nodded like a child he laughed and we kissed.

Me: “dumplings and mutton”

Nelo: “yep, just the way you like them”. We cooked while listening to music and talking about everything and anything. By the time we finished cooking it was already late so I decided to spend the night after calling Philisiwe. We ate in front of the tv.

Me: damn baby you really good at this” the food was amazing he laughed

Nelo: “yeah I’m keeper neh” I looked at him and smiled

Me: “totally daddy” my phone rang, the thing is when I’m with Nelo it like I don’t even have a phone I only remember it when I need to make a call plus I keep it on silent don’t know why it wasn’t that night. I tried ignoring it but it just kept ringing in the kitchen Nelo went to get it and gave it to me but it stopped ringing. He gave me a questioning look but I shrugged my shoulders and it rang again it was an unsaved number but I recognised it and it was Lindo. Didn’t know whether to answer or not but Nelo was already giving me the look so I answered.

Me: “hello” my voice was sketchy

Lindo: “hey beautiful how you doing”

Me: “I’m good”

Lindo: “been trying to reach you the whole day, I thought we had plans”

Me: “I’m sorry but who is this”

Lindo: “oh wow” I didn’t say anything “really lelothando”

Me: “I think you got a wrong number” I dropped the call.

Nelo: “who was that”

Me: “wrong number”

Nelo: “oryt” I wanted to text him and explain so I stood up in an attempt to go to the toilet.

Nelo: “where you going”

Me: “bathroom I need to pee”

Nelo: “leave your phone than” flip I left my phone there and went upstairs to the bathroom.

### **part 38 I am scared of lonely**

Ended up going to the bathroom for no reason when I went back to the lounge Nelo was busy on my phone my heart kinda skipped a beat.

Me: “ba... Baby what’s you doing?”

Nelo: "come sit down" he didn't look up at me, I sat down and took my plate to continue eating.

Nelo: "Lelo"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "don't do something stupid"

Me: "what .... What do you mean"

Nelo: "just that nana" he was calm and the entire time he didn't look at me, we finished eating in silence. Later on we took a shower together and went to bed things were kinda awkward Nelo hadn't said anything since dinner. We got under the blanket and I stayed on my side of the bed we were both not facing each other. Every time I was about to fall asleep he would move, after about an hour or so we were both still up he sighed I just ignored him.

Nelo: "nana" I kept quiet "lelo I know you still up" he pulled me to him but I kept my eyes closed, he started tickling me and I laughed but kept my eyes closed "open your eyes nana" he didn't stop tickling me until I did

Me: "baby" I said in between the laughter, he stopped and looked me

Nelo: "I love you" I giggled

Me: "love you more" he pulled me on top of me

Nelo: "let's sleep" I tried moving but he held me "sleep on top of me nana"

Me: "ayi baby you going to drop me"

Nelo: "trust me". We slept like that until morning, when I woke up I was still on top of him. Took my time staring at him, he looked so adorable with his lips slightly open.

Me: "Sbonelo wake up" I shook him

Nelo: "mmh"

Me: "get up I need to go home"

Nelo: "you irritating nana"

Me: "I don't care, wake up" he woke up flipped me and got on top of me.

Nelo: "you annoying nana" I sulked and he chuckled

Me: "I wana go home"

Nelo: "no" he kissed me and we kissed for awhile. We got up took a shower got out I wore my dress, we had breakfast and he took me home.

.

Things were good at home aunty dolly left for her house, mom was home even though she was on call at work. The next two days went by smoothly didn't see Nelo, decided it best if Lindo and I became friends and he was cool with it.

.

Woke up to a call on the 21st of December.

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "happy birthday to you happy birthday nana happy birthday to you" he was singing and I kept on laughing

Me: "thank you baby"

Nelo: "may you have a 100 more spent with me ofcos"

Me: "I love you daddy"

Nelo: "love you more nana, so what time should I pick you up"

Me: "what's the time now"

Nelo: "9"

Me: "come around 12"

Nelo: "ok nana" he dropped the call. I got up and went to the kitchen found mom making breakfast.

Mom: "lelo wam" she came and hugged me kissing my forehead. "Happy birthday baby"

Me: "thank you mom" Siya walked in the kitchen

Siya: "happy birthday lil sis"

Me: "thanks bigbro"

Mom: "12 hours of labour"

Us: "there we go again"

Mom: "stop being ungrateful"

Me: "but mom you say this every year" she sniffed Siya n I looked at each other we got up and shared a group hug

Me: "I'm sorry you had to go through pain mommy and I am grateful"

Siya: "we both grateful" Philisiwe walked in while we were hugging

Philisiwe: "ncooh"

Mom: "come join us" we all laughed while hugging. We had breakfast over light conversation.

Mom: "get ready we all going out"

Me: "count me out"

Mom: "but we celebrating you birthday"

Me: "I got plans"

Mom: "cancel them"

Me: "I cant"

Mom: "you can and you will cancel them"

Me: "mom"

Siya: "let her go mom we'll celebrate tomorrow"

Mom: "no"

Me: "it my birthday"

Mom: "so"

Siya n I: "mom!"

Mom: "ok fine" she left us in the dinning room still having breakfast.

Philisiwe: "yoh!"

.

I got ready and Nelo picked me up we spent the day at Gateways, baby spoilt me rotten we watched a movie had lunch and did a lot of shopping. Came back at night he dropped me off at home. Days went by spent Christmas at home with my family including my cousins and aunts, had a joyous Christmas. Spent the 26th at my uncles house in westville braiing with the fam. Spent the 27th n 28th at Nelo's place, mom was at dads. Days went by on the 31st Nelo was hosting a party at his house so during the day we went shopping and bought similar outfits I got a maroon short jumpsuit with navy 3 inch heels and he got navy chinos with a navy shirt n maroon blazer with black

formal shoes. We had lunch then met up with his friend they bought the stuff that they needed. We left for Nelo's i stayed in his room napping while they prepared for later. Nelo woke me up around 8 we got ready people started coming in just after 10, Siya came in with pinky Philisiwe and Nobuhle I tried my level best to ignore her. Pinky pulled into one of the rooms downstairs she was already tipsy.

Me: "what's going on?"

Pinky: "how do you stand her?"

Me: "stand who"

Pinky: "that bitch Nobuhle"

Me: "oh her mxm"

Pinky: "I cant stand her fuck, Siyabulela cheated on me with her while she was dating both Siya and Nelo at the same time even got pregnant and had an abortion now she's a flipn lesbian"

Me: "wh.... What !? My head spinned

### **part 39 I am scared of lonely**

I stood there paralyzed and confused as hell. How come no one told me all of this? Was the baby Nelo's or Siyabulela's? How could I have been so blind?

Me: "what the fuck are you talking"

Pinky: "what you mean" I got more pissed off

Me: "I mean what the bloody hell are you talking about pinky damn it"

Pinky: "lelo I"

Me: "you what ... fuck pinky!"

Pinky: "hey don't get mad at me coz your man should have told you, I'm sorry I thought you knew"

Me: "clearly I didnt" I walked out boiling with anger. I went to the lounge people were having fun drinking the night away I looked around for Nelo but my eyes landed on Nobuhle who was busy touchn n feeln on Siya with her breast all over his face that just made me more angry than ever. I walked pass them to the outside found Nelo drinking

with his friends and some girls I went to him stood in front of him folded my arms on my chest.

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "we need to talk"

Nelo: "now?" I raised my eyebrow "nana"

Me: "leave it" I walked back inside went to the kitchen the counter was filled with different kinds of alcohol I took a closed bottle of vodka, opened the fridge took apple juice glass and went upstairs locked my self in Nelo's room. Started drinking it tasted horrible at first but I started enjoying it as time went on. Took my phone from the wore drop it was almost midnight. Someone tried opening the door but it was locked so they knocked I ignored them walked in the bathroom and called Lindo.

Lindo: "hey"

Me: "Lindo" he chuckled

Lindo: "have you been drinking"

Me: "maybe"

Lindo: "thought you didn't drink"

Me: "there's a first time for everything" we laughed I heard people scream outside and fireworks going off on the line

Lindo: "happy new year beautiful" I started crying "lelo what's wrong what's going on"

Me: "nothing" I continued crying

Lindo: "talk to me" I dropped the call and switched off my phone. Whoever was knocking had stopped, I took my clothes off and soaked myself in the bathtub while drinking and crying. Don't know maybe it was the alcohol or knowing that I'm not worth his honesty but another part kept on telling me that it happened before we met so maybe I was not even entitled to the truth. I got out wore my pjs yea I have clothes at his place now, I was stumbling all over the room. I got under the cover and slept.

.

Was woken up by someone banging on the door.

Nelo: "nana please open the door" he kept on knocking until I got irritated and opened

the door. He walked in and looked around the room like he was searching for something I just said mxm and went to bed but he pulled the covers off me.

Nelo: "who was here with you"

Me: "fuck you"

Nelo: "nc nc ei Lelothando what did you just say" I didn't say anything "I dare you to repeat what you just said"

Me: "can I sleep please"

Nelo: "so you drink now" I ignored him he pulled my leg dragging me to him.

Me: "let me go Sbonelo!!" I screamed from the top of my voice

Nelo: "shut up" he hissed and I started crying

Me: "why you doing this to me" I was sitting up now he kneeled in front of me and cupped my face

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana please don't cry please ma'Tolo wam" one thing I had noticed about Nelo was that his scared of my tears. "I'm sorry nana I didn't mean to shout" he kissed my eyes and my anger started boiling up again. I pulled away from him and walked to the bathroom rinsed my face took my phone and switched it on sat on the toilet sit, he was standing by the door staring at me.

Me: "has everyone left"

Nelo: "no they still drinking"

Me: "can you take me home"

Nelo: "in the morning" I nodded "what's going on lelo, why you upset"

Me: "did you know she was pregnant" he didn't say anything "mmh" I walked to the door "can I please pass" he moved and walked to the bed got under the covers and cried silently. He joined me in bed after switching off the lights he tried holding me but I moved.

Nelo: "nana please"

Me: "sbonelo don't"

Nelo: "you can't deny me of holding you while we in our bed" I chuckled

Me: "ours" I laughed sarcastically



Nelo: "don't do that" he brought me to him and held me I let him we slept.

.

I woke up early he was still asleep, I didn't even bath just rinsed my mouth and washed my face. Changed into jeans tshirt and vans, took my handbag and cellphone walked downstairs it was a mess some people were sleeping on the couches. I left took a taxi home got there opened the gate, went in and nobody was home guess they slept at Nelo's. I went to my room switched my phone off plugged in my iPod on the speakers played music loudly locked the door and slept. I woke during the day turned my phone on and it flooded with messages and missed calls from Nelo but I didn't read any. There was also an sms from Lindo asking if I'm ok or not so I called him.

Lindo: "lelo I've been worried sick" I giggled

Me: "I'm ok, where are you?"

lindo: "I'm at scottburgh beach"

Me: "oh ok cool"

Lindo: "come joine us im with my friends or I can come get you"

Me: "it late" he laughed

Lindo: "it only 2 come on I'll take you back home"

Me: "ok I'm coming will call you when im there I'll take a taxi"

Lindo: "oryt see you soon" I hang up went to the bathroom took a quick shower.

Finished up wore my black ripped Jean bum shorts white oversized shirt and sandlas fixed my hair applied make up. Took my sling bag put all my necessary stuff in it and left. Nelo kept on calling I put his number on reject list, didn't even answer Siyabulela's calls but I called Philisiwe and told her I'm ok and I'm at scottburgh beach they shouldn't worry I'm good.

#### **part 40 I am scared of lonely**

Got to scottburgh and called Lindo, he picked me up we met up with his friends everyone was cool besides this 1 girl who kept on giving me the evil eye. Lindo was going to be in grade 11 that year 16 years old so all his friends were in our age group

and in high school of course. So it felt good being around them we drank yes I had alcohol and enjoyed the feeling braiid. It was all nice and fun until that girl who had been giving me the evil eye started talking.

Girl: "why are you here" she pointed to me

Me: "excuse me?"

Girl: "yes why are you here and you Lindo wheres Samke" I chuckled in disbelief

Lindo: "mind your own business thobeka"

Thobeka: "no Lindo we always go together with Samke suddenly she's not here because of this bitch" everyone was quite now listening to her, I just shook my head and walked away. Just didn't have time for teenage drama . Lindo came after me, I just felt irritated even by him.

Lindo: "sorry Lelo"

Me: "it not your fault" we walked in silence it was already getting dark.

Me: "why didn't you come here with your gf"

Lindo: "she didn't wana come"

Me: "oh ok" he stopped me from walking stood in front of me and smashed his lips on mine I gapsed in shock n opened my lips slightly he so that as an invite to shoving his tongue in my mouth I pushed him off and slapped him.

Me: "the fuck Lindo" he looked down

Lindo: "sorry I just thought... You know"

Me: "mxm" I walked back to his friends and sat down. I even stopped drinking just didn't wana be here anymore so I called Siya but he didn't answer I called Philisiwe and she said she's at home Siya left. Thought about calling dad or taking a taxi to his place but didn't want to have to deal with mom and him. So I had to call Nelo so he could come pick me up, I called him and he answered on the 1st ring.

Nelo: "Lelo" his voice was low

Me: "uhm hi ... Please come pick me up"

Nelo: "no" after that he dropped the call my heart broke, had no choice but to take a taxi to dads. I took my bag in an attempt to start walking to the taxi rank Lindo stopped

me.

Lindo: "where you going"

Me: "home"

Lindo: "but was going to ask my brother to drop you off when he comes to pick me up"

Me: "no I don't wana wait I'll take a taxi home"

Lindo: "you won't find taxis"

Me: "I will im just going to my dads at park rynie" just than my phone rang it was Nelo so I answered.

Me: "hello"

Nelo: "I'm coming"

Me: "I'm at scottburgh"

Nelo: "I know" he dropped the call, I told Lindo and we walked back to the others so I could wait for Nelo. Within an hour Nelo called saying I should wait for him at the parking lot, it was really late n dark people were drunk all over the beach so Lindo insisted on going to wait for me. I knew how Nelo would react if he saw me with him so I asked one of the girls to join us. We didn't wait that long at the parking space Nelo arrived when we had just arrived. he came to us n greeted us giving Lindo a look that Lindo was even shifting uncomfortably. We walked to the car he opened my door I got in and he banged the door. Got in on his side and drove off, he was speeding all the way home the only noise that filled the car was the music. He drove pass steers and bought burgers I didn't even realize I was hungry until I saw food in front of me I ate while he drove. He would clench his jaw n shake his head from time to time. We got to my neighborhood and we parked two houses away from mine. I tried opening the door but it was locked so we stayed in the car for what seemed like 20 minutes no one spoke. I was even starting to feel sleepy, he would look at me but I kept my eyes on the outside. He licked his tongue and got out opened my door I also got out attempted to walk away but he held me and pinned me on the car.

Nelo: "you drink now you a drunkard now" he hissed

Me: "it has nothing to do with you" he grabbed my jaws and tightened his hold.

Nelo: "ei Lelothando don't piss me off more than I already am" I didn't say anything  
"didn't I say don't do anything stupid Lelo, what are you doing with that kid"

Me: "I didn't do anything stupid his my friend"

Nelo: "you friends with boys now"

Me: "stop being a bully"

Nelo: "how am I being a bully Lelo"

Me: "this .... what you doing now"

Nelo: "don't fuck with me" I didn't say anything "and what's with this drinking thing"

Me: "it nothing I'll stop"

Nelo: "how did you get home in morning"

Me: "I took a taxi"

Nelo: "mxm" he looked at me like he wanted to beating the living shit out of me "if you ever do that again Lelothando I promise you I won't hold myself back" I nodded "why were you acting out last night to top it of we had guest"

Me: "you had guest no me" he held my thigh digging his nails in it I flinched.

Me: "you hurting me"

Nelo: "what don't I give to you Lelo coz I'm transparent with you, you got my love and loyalty fully"

Me: "you not being honest"

Nelo: "what did I lie about or even keep from you"

Me: "the Nobuhle situation"

Nelo: "what about it"

Me: "why didn't you tell me that you made Nobuhle pregant"

Nelo: "even she didn't know who the father of her baby was so why would you assume it was mine not Siyas"

Me: " so you knew she was two timing you with Siya"

Nelo: "yes she told us when she found out she was pregant"

Me: " why didn't you tell me"

Nelo: "because it was and still is none of your business. My past relationships have

nothing to do with you”

Me: “oh ok”

Nelo: “I love you” he kissed my forehead and drove off.

### **part 41 I am scared of lonely**

Time went by Nelo and I were good we never spoke about the Nobuhle situation phof I just told myself to mind my own business and not bother myself with things that upsets me or that don't benefit me in any kind of way. When I asked Siya about he said he won't discuss his relationships with me I'm his little sister not friend so I let him be. Philisiwe had gone back to her home in malangeni, I stopped being friends with Lindo after Nelo found us at Shelly center we were chilling walking around after we had watched a movie We ran into Nelo he got so angry and punched Lindo. Nelo and I didn't speak for a week after that, I gave him silent treatment I just couldn't and didn't wana deal with him, my phone was switched off for the entire week when he called the land line I'd drop the call after hearing that it's him. Dad got a new woman nice short chubby lady with dimples and dark in completion mom was beyond furious when she heard. She even found me a school in durban she wanted me to move in with her coz there was just no way she was going to let her daughter stay with another woman. After begging and crying and lot of emotional blackmail as well as silent treatments she finally agreed for me to stay at home with aunt dolly and my cousin Sthe she was going to be repeating grade 10 at our school we weren't close but just cool. Matric results came out Tyson did really well he even got a bursary to study medicine at Ukzn, Philisiwe was going to do hr at Mut after she found out about Nobuhle and the whole pregnancy saga she called her a manipulative witcha d broke up with her. Asa was now officially dating Qiniso Nelo's friend who was 28 while Asa was 15 but hey who am I to judge. Ndumo and I didn't talk the entire holidays but it was cool judging from facebook she was madly in love with leon. Siyabulela had gone back to Cape Town as well he actually left the first week of January he was going to start with his 3rd year.

.

Woke up to my alarm ringing at 6:00 in the morning it was the first day of school. The weird thing but than it wasn't really weird because it was something I was used to just that it had been months since I last had them, my nightmares were back in an aggressive manner I hated having to go to sleep. Went to wake up Sthe she didn't have a phone after failing her grade 10 her mom took her phone away (her mom is my aunt from mom's side, I'm not close with my dad's side of the family) she wasn't going to get it back unless her March result showed improvement. Anyway we got ready for school and met in the kitchen for breakfast I found her and aunty dolly there.

Me: "morning mama" I starting making my breakfast she was busy making lunch for us Sthe was already eating.

Dolly: "morning how are you"

Me: "I'm good just a little nervous about grade 10" honestly speaking I was scared about being in a higher grade there's nothing I hate more than the thought of failure.

Dolly: "you girls are going to be fine, and you Sthe how you feel about being in a new school" she shrugged her shoulders

Sthe: "I don't know really just hope and pray my life at that school won't have drama"

Sthe is one of those loud and I don't take nonsense kind of girls, she drinks occasionally but smokes full time, beautiful and yellow with an ass for decades kind of ass you can't help but stare at it, into sugar daddies but she's very respectful and she makes sure her mom is not aware of what she gets up to at home everyone thinks she's an angel besides us her cousins.

Me: "if you avoid it, it won't follow you" we all laughed finished up eating, took our stuff and went to wait for transport. It came and we left for school met Asa waiting for us at the gate, she hugged us and we went in.

Asa: "can't wait for this year to be over" we all laughed

Sthe: "it hasn't even started ke"

Me: "have you seen Ndumo"

Asa: "no not yet, why?"

Me: "just kinda miss her"

Asa: "I know the feeling"

Sthe: "think I need a bf here in school"

Asa: "why, I mean school boys are so inexperienced" Sthe laughed

Sthe: "true that I prefer my man matured"

Me: "you mean old" we laughed

Sthe: "no honey I mean rich with a good dick game" that one thing that confused me about Sthe she had everything that she needed and wanted her father worked for the government so when he passed he left her with money and her mom was an OD practitioner.

Me: "you crazy"

Asa: "Lelo wouldn't know anything about the dick game" she said in between her laughter

Sthe: "cuz are you a virgin" she was shocked

Asa: "mother marry"

Sthe: "but I heard you had a miscarriage"

Me: "it complicated"

Asa: "I don't know how that hotness keep up with you not giving it up"

Me: "I didn't know you thought Nelo was hot"

Sthe: "cuz your man is beyond hot plus his dress sense is on point"

Asa: "Nelo is yummy Lelo everyone can see that"

Me: "mmh" honestly after the Ndumo n Leon saga I don't know how I felt about knowing Asa thinks Nelo is attractive

Sthe: "stop making the poor guy suffer"

Asa: "if he don't get it from you he will go look for it from someone else if his not already getting it from someone already"

Sthe: "worse part his an older guy Lelo you going to lose him"

Asa: "true"

Sthe: "besides sex will make your relationship stronger" they giggled and high fived each other.

The bell rang we went for assembly than grade 10s were called in we were put in different classes Asa and Sthe we put together and I was alone in my class. Time flew by before I realized it was break time, Asa Sthe and I were sitting by the stadium having lunch when Ndumo walked pass us with leon holding hands I don't know why but it kinda pissed me off, as they were walking past us leon looked back at us and winked we all looked at each other in confusion. The break was soon over we went back to our classes, after two periods it was the 2nd break as I was walking to the cafeteria to meet up with my girls I heard someone calling my name I turned and saw leon walking towards me he reached me and gave me an awkward hug.

Leon: "Ive missed you how have you been"

Me: "Ive been good and you"

Leon: "so and so muntuwam, can I see you after school maybe I could come by your place and we can take a walk you know talk about stuff"

Me: "that's not a go..." Didn't even finish Ndumo was already in front of us looking at me from head to toe " that's not a good idea leon" I finished talking and tried walking away but Ndumo pulled my arm

Ndumo: "stay away from my man you bitch" I chuckled in disbelief

Me: "what?"

Ndumo: "you heard me" I looked at leon and raised my eyebrow

Leon: "Ndumo dont"

Ndumo: "no baby she needs to stop running after you, so you can focus on us and our baby"

Me: "what baby"

Ndumo: "you didn't hear, I'm pregant with Leon's child" I left them standing there and walked off

## **part 42 I am scared of lonely**

I walked to the cafe and found the girls there buying snacks, we walked to the grounds.

Me: "Ndumo is pregnant" I blurted out Asa gapsed



Asa: "you lie"

Sthe: "with that leon kid's baby" I nodded Asa n Sthe laughed

Me: "I'm feel some typa way about it" honestly speaking it bothered me

Asa: "she's going to regret it coz leon is having too much fun being the bad boy of the school"

Sthe: "I don't understand the hype about this leon even some girls were talking about him in class" I sighted

Asa: "enough about other people's bussiness we not gossipers our lives are more important" we laughed

Me: "true"

Sthe: "do you guys know sphe his in grade 11" Asa n I looked at each other than nodded

Asa: "his such a druggie" we all laughed

Me: "don't tell me you think his cute"

Asa: "eewu!!" Sthe laughed

Sthe: "no man they having a house party on Friday and we invited" Asa screamed while jumping up n down

Me: "count me out"

Sthe: "stop being a party pooper you know I can't go without you"

Asa: "yea stop being a goody"

Me: "let me think about it"

Sthe: "there's nothing to think about, we bunking school Friday and going to that party"

Me: "oh" we carried on chilling until the bell rang we went to our classes after school we went home found mommy home. They had just came back from doing the grocery aunt dolly was packing it, mom called me to get room.

Me: "sit down" I sat on the couch in her room she came back from the bathroom and sat on her bed.

Mom: "how are things with you and Sbonelo"

Me: "ok I guess" she raised her eyebrow

Mom: "you sleeping with him"

Me: "aibo mom no"

Mom: "don't lie Lelo, you need to be open with me about these thing I don't want you falling pregnant again it going to slow down your life"

Me: "I see" this whole conversation was making me uncomfortable and I hated it, she went to her work bag and took out an injection needle and medication.

Mom: "this is for preventing pregnancy"

Me: "what am I supposed to do with it mom"

Mom: "I'll give you a shot I'll give you one shot every 2 months"

Me: "mama no!! I'm not even having sex for God sakes stop being forward" I walked out her room and locked myself in my room. Took my uniform off just wore a vest and got on the bed, just as I was about to fall asleep Nelo called.

Me: "hey baby"

Nelo: "hey nana, how was your first day at school"

Me: "it was ok I guess" I was down mom really upset me

Nelo: "what's wrong" I sighted

Me: "it mom"

Nelo: "what did she do"

Me: "can we talk about it later"

Nelo: "oh oryt, look nana I need to see you after work with your mom being at home will you be able to come out"

Me: "yea just come late"

nelo: "ok I love you nana"

Me: "bye" he dropped the call and I slept.

Woke up late took a shower got out wore a maxi dress and flops, went to the kitchen aunt dolly was almost done cooking dinner so I just grabbed a fruit went to the loung mom and Sthe were watching tv I joined them we watched while having small conversations. Awhile later dinner was ready we ate in the dinning room. After dinner I washed the dishes while everyone was watching tv so I joined them when I was done eventually mom and aunt dolly went to sleep.

Sthe: "yoh I thought they would never leave" I laughed

Me: "what's up" she giggled

Sthe: "Bheki is coming to pick me up I'll come back really early in morning"

Me: "but it's school night"

Sthe: "I'll be here by 5 in the morning"

Me: "oh"

Sthe: "wait let me call him and tell him to pick me up" she called him on the landline afterwards she went to her room n I followed her. She went to the bathroom and took a shower I stayed in her room chatting to Nelo who was on his way. She come back lotioned her body and put on a red lace lingerie with a corset and half stockings and put black heels on the side and wore a trench coat on top looked at her fascinated.

Me: "wow you only wearing that" she giggled

Sthe: "ofcos he needs to know I'm there for business"

Me: "wow cuz I'm speech less"

Sthe: "once you start giving that hot man of your some come to me I'll give you tips" she winked, just than my phone rang it was Nelo saying his out. Went to my room wore my jacket and walked out, he got out of the car and stood next to it when I was approaching the car. He picked me up and spunned me around I laughed out loud he put me down and we kissed.

Nelo: "I've missed you so much" I punched him playfully

Me: "you saw me just yesterday"

Nelo: "can't stay away" he pulled me to him and we kissed again this time deeper the kiss was filled with lust he grabbed my ass making me stand on my toes we stopped kissing when a Range Rover parked a bit further from us.

Nelo: "and then" I shrugged my shoulders just then Sthe came out the gate she had an over night bag with her she was already in her heels.

Sthe: "goodnight little cuz, hey sbonelo" I waved she got in the car, it drove off going down than made a turn and came back up stopping right in front of us the drivers widow opened. An old man about my fathers age appeared he gave us a nod and Sthe

spoke saying she took the spare key with her after that they drove off.

Nelo: "wow"

Me: "what"

Nelo: "that guy was old even chubby you can just see that he had a potbelly" we laughed

Me: "well that her bheki"

Nelo: "don't like your cousin she's not right don't let her influence you nana"

Me: "I wont" I gave him a peck on his lips

Nelo: "so what's happing with your mom" I told him and he laughed

Me: "mxm, don't laugh baby it not funny"

Nelo: "she's just tryna look after you and it a good thing she has a point"

Me: "we not even having sex"

Nelo: "yea I know" the sarcasm on his voice could not be missed

Me: "baby" he didn't say anything just kissed me and we kissed for a while until I pulled back

Me: "I love you" he smiled

Nelo: "i love you more nana"

Me: "that debatable" he laughed "you said you wanted us to talk"

Nelo: "yea, I ..." He stretched his head "I have to go to Pretoria tomorrow, I have an interview there on Wednesday"

Me: "what does that mean"

Nelo: "it means if the interview goes well I'll have to move to Pretoria"

Me: "oh" that the only rational thing that could come out of my mouth.

### **part 43 I am scared of lonely**

Nobody said anything for over a minute after that, my thoughts were too loud and were running wild I couldn't take it anymore. I looked everywhere but at him I could feel his eyes on me though.

Me: "I should go sleep I have school tomorrow" I got out of his hold but he brought me

back to his chest and held me.

Nelo: "I need this nana, this interview is going to open doors for my career nana, if everything goes well I'll be a technical supervisor of a substation within the plant"

Me: "I hope everything goes well" and I meant it I hate the idea of him leaving in another province coz I know kuth chances of us surviving were 0 to none.

Nelo: "thank you nana" he kissed my head and held me tighter "I love you nana"

Me: "love you more". We continued having meaningless conversation until he left and I went to sleep.

.

Indeed Wednesday came he went for his interview I called before it started wishing him good luck after it was done he called me saying the interview was basically a formal process that had to be done but the job was already his. He was given a contract, all the legal processes were conducted. His job was actually in Mpumalanga at the komat eskom plantation so he'll be staying in Mpumalanga at Witbank. I was really happy for him but dying inside for us. He came back Friday, I didn't go to the house party but Asa and Sthe went. I was going to be spending the weekend at Nelo's, after begging and lying to both mom and aunt dolly saying I'm spending it at Asa's house they let me. So Friday after school I got home took a shower and wore a cool tight fitting navy maxi dress packed my weekend bag Nelo picked me up I hadn't seen him since Monday when he came to tell me his leaving. I walked out the gate and walked towards his car it was parked a bit further from the gate, as he me approaching he stepped out his car to meet me halfway. He got to me and picked me up causing me to drop my bag I giggled and we shared a long kiss after that he put me down and hugged his joy was just contagious I even forgot about him moving for a minute.

Nelo: "I've missed you so much nana" I giggle everyone wants to be missed it a good feeling

Me: "I missed you too daddy, this felt like the longest weekend ever" I pulled his by his tshirt to me and kissed him, he laughed in my mouth. I pulled back but was still holding his tshirt.

Nelo: "you wana take my tshirt off nana" he laughed and winked I just had a goofy smile plastered on my face.

Me: "let's go home lover boy" I pulled him, he picked up my bag and we got to his car he opened my door I got it than he went in on his side.

Nelo: "I should teach you how to drive nana" he drove off

Me: "no thank you baby I'm good" he chuckled

Nelo: "still scared of cars"

Me: "totally" I plugged my phone on the radio using the aux cable and we listened to some hip hop while singing along to songs we know both knew and talking.

Me: "I'm hungry"

Nelo: "you always hungry"

Me: "mxm" I pushed him slightly and he laughed

Nelo: "I'm joking, we'll go past the shops so I can feed you"

Me: "I love it when you feed you" my voice was soft he looked at me smiled before looking back at the road

Nelo: "I love feeding you" i kissed him cheek, he took my hand and put it on his thigh.

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I should marry you" I laughed

Me: "totally" he kept on looking at me and smiling.

Nelo: "you really beautiful Lelothando" he said in such a serious tone I couldn't help but blush

Me: "thank you daddy"

Nelo: "we would have cute and adorable babies" I smiled

Me: "one day" we drove pass spar bought a little bit of grocery than went to debonairs and bought pizza. We got to his place I went to put my bag in his room when I got to his room something caught my eyes in the wore drop I took it out. It was a red small gift bag I called out for him and he can in the room I showed him the gift bag he smiled and held my waist.

Nelo: "open it" I smiled

Me: "Is it mine" he nodded and I opened it with excitement, inside was two boxes a ring box n a rectangular box. Opened the rectangular box first it was a gold Guess bracelet with charms he took it out and put in on my wrist it was absolutely stunning I smiled and kissed him.

Me: "thank you thank you baby I love it"

Nelo: "anything for you" he pecked my lips I took out the ring box looked at it and raised my eyebrow he smiled mischievously, I opened it and jumped up n down it was small stunt diamond earrings.

Me: "wow daddy they beautiful" I kissed him he picked me up and threw me on the bed I shifted up causing my dress to go up. He got on top of me looked at my eyes deeply and I smiled shyly he gave me a baby kiss.

Nelo: "I know you concerned about us with me moving to Mpumalanga" I nodded "it not going to change anything ok"

Me: "it will change everything and you know it"

Nelo: "I'll still see you nana it might not be as much as it is now but I will see you, you will visit every now and then I'll come home often. I'll be a phone call away, we'll talk everyday I promise I love you nana and we going to work"

Me: "I'm scared Nelo, you going to leave and move I'll be left here all by myself"

Nelo: "you trust me" I nodded "you know I love you" I nodded again "believe me when I say we going to work"

Me: "I believe you" he pecked my lips

Nelo: "good, now let's go eat" we walked downstairs ate while watching tv after eating we cuddled on the couch having light conversations talking about our dreams and hopes. What I loved about Nelo is that whenever he spoke about his future he involved me in it his dreams were more constructed around us as an item not just him. His sentences had more of 'we and us' instead of 'i' and I loved it. Later on around 8 I prepared dinner, made steak with stir fry and mash coated in cheese sauce. I finished we ate he had a glass of wine while I drank juice, after eating I washed the dishes and cleaned up in the kitchen. We watched tv till late, went to his room took shower

together got out I wore my pjs and he wore his boxer we got under the covers and spooned. I turned to look at him could feel the heat of his breath on mine he kissed my nose and I giggled.

Nelo: "what's wrong nana"

Me: "nothing"

Nelo: "I want to make love to you"

Me: "I also want you to" he widened his eyes

Nelo: "you sure"

Me: "yes" I replied in a whisper and he gave me a wicked grin I giggled shyly. He got on top of me I opened my legs he got between them, he gently ran his fingers around the nape of my neck, he got on his knees pulled me to him took off my hair band I shook my head letting my ultra flow loosely than he pushed me back so I can lay my back on the bed again. He gazed down at kisses every inch of my face.

Nelo: "you so beautiful my love" kisses my lips gently sucking on my bottom lip than bites it and I moaned. He slowly ran his fingers down my cheek to my chin, he took my pj top of as he kissed me across my jaw to the corners of my mouth and i let out a soft moan. His tongue invades me mouth n our tongues meet as he puts one hand under me bringing me even closer to him. I feel his erection as he moves bringing my hip to his can't help but moan. He gazed up at me

Nelo: "I love you nana" he runs his tongue down my stomach when he gets to my navel I receive a tingling feeling I shift a little.

Nelo: "can't wait to feel your warmth and be inside you" his tone is seductive the only thing that my mouth could form as a reply was a "ah" as I groaned. He looked at me his eyes half closed taking my pj short off. He comes back up still gazing at me cups my breast, my nipple hardens as he blows on it than shoves it in his mouth circling his tongue around it while his other hand is busy playing with my other breast. I pant as my breathing picks up it a sweet sensational feeling, my fingers hold the sheet tightly he moves his mouth to the other nipple he continues with his slow sensual move I groan as my legs stiffens and I let go with a huge moan as I come. He gazed down at me with a



grin on his face I cover my face with my hands but he removes them.

Nelo: "don't do that" I nod, he gently shoves his finger in me and I cry out "you so wet" he bites his bottom lips, his tongue finds my clit while his finger is moving in circles in me the feeling is do amazing that I let out a loud cry. He pulls off his boxers and his erection springs free it so huge I can't even keep my eyes on it. He reaches over to the bedside drawer and takes out a pack of condoms, he kneels up and puts it on. He comes back on top of me

Nelo: "you still want me to" I nod, he gets between my legs and positions the head of his erection on the entrance of my punani. He tries getting in but fails he tries again n I wince in pain and move up the bed using the headboard but he brings me down, he puts his finger in me again move it in circles as if his trying to open me up he puts a second finger and I moan. He takes out his fingers and gently slams into me "aah" I cry out loudly as I feel a strong pinching sensation deep inside me it hurts as a mother fucker. I close my eyes "please open your eyes nana" I obey him as a single tear falls out of my left eye and he kisses my eye. He keeps his gaze on me his mouth slightly open his breathing harsh. "You so tight it feels absolutely amazing" he groans. "I'm going to start moving now nana, I'm sorry about the pain it will get better" I nod, true to his word he start moving slowly and with every move all I feel is pain. He eases back slowly and groans while thrusting back in me he repeats this movement again and I cry out "there's no way you can take all of me in" I widen my eyes and he smirks. He eases himself in and out of me once again, his speed picks up and I can't contain my moans and screams. He smashes his lips on mine kissing me hungry as much as I'm feeling pain I can also feel pleasure trying to erupt within me. I close my eyes as I feel him deepening in me as he thrust n moves in circular motion my hands find his back and I burry my nails in his skin as I come when I open my eyes his forehead is pressed against mine his eyes also closed "oh my god" he whispers his lips find mine again his speed picks furiously he thrusts deep in me and stop moving tries to control his breathing. Starts moving again slowly but soon he picks up his speed again and calls out my name thrusting hard and aggressively as he comes. He stays in me after coming and we share a long slow

passionate kiss “open your eyes nana” I open them and he looks at me as if he is searching for something I give him a reassuring smile he kisses my forehead ” I love you so much nana n I’m so grateful” I smile shyly “I love you to baby” he gets off me and walks to bathroom comes back with a towel and wipes I shift uncomfortably as the warm towel reaches my flesh I feel as if it pressed on an open wound, he goes to the bathroom and comes back from the and gets under the covers picks me up, puts me on top of him.

Nelo: “I love you” he brushes my hair as I fall asleep.

#### **part 44 I am scared of lonely**

Was woken up by soft lips kissing me all over my face I giggled and opened my eyes only to see my boo thang hovering on top of me.

Nelo: “morning nana” I smiled and covered my eyes as flash backs of the previous night came flooding back.

Me: “I’m still sleepy” he removed my hands from my face and pecked my nose.

Nelo: “you have to wake up nana I got plans for today, breakfast is already done and we need to get ready”

Me: “move baby I want to sleep just one more hour please” he laughed got off and walked to the bathroom, I pulled the covers over me again tried going back to sleep. As I was slowly drifting back to sleep Nelo pulled the cover off me and picked me up in a speed rushed to bathroom while I was screaming at him to put me down. He put me in the bathtub it was already filled with water.

Me: “I can’t believe you just did that” he laughed I splashed water on him wetting his shorts n tshirt

Nelo: “I see you want me to join” he was laughing and taking his tshirt off.

Me: “no no no don’t !!”

Nelo: “why not” he had a wicked grin on his face and his tone was soft

Me: “let me enjoy the water alone” he put his tshirt back on and walked out when he was at the door he turned and looked at me

Nelo: "you sure you don't want me to join you I really don't mind taking a bath again"  
he raised his eyebrows and I nodded he shrugged his shoulders and walked out. I stayed in the hot water enjoying how it felt until the water was getting cold, I got wrapped a towel around my body walked to the bedroom. Nelo was sitting on the bed it was already made he was busy on my phone I let him be. Lotioned my body wore my panty and his tshirt, laid on the bed on my stomach he put my phone on the side and got on my back opening my legs with his knees. Kissed my neck sucking hard on it I let out a small moan, he took off my tshirt then cupped my ass biting each of my butt cheek softly. He turned me around so I could face him and we had an amazing round the pains were slowly fading away. After calming down we went downstairs and had breakfast over small conversation.

Nelo: "hurry nana we still have to get ready" I finished chewing swallowed

Me: "ready for?"

Nelo: "told you I got plans for today"

Me: "what plans" he smiled and shook his head

Nelo: "you will see" I shrugged my shoulders and continued eating. When we were done I washed the dishes and the pan. We had to freshen up so we took a shower, got out lotioned I applied light make up while he was getting dressed. He was just wearing simple black skinny jeans a white shirt with flooded sleeves and white Adidas sneakers, I was sitting in front of the mirror looking at him on the mirror.

Nelo: "stop staring and get ready" he wasn't looking at me, he was fixing his sneakers.

Me: "I don't know what to wear" he chuckled walked to the wore drop and came back with powder blue bob tube medium height lose dress put it on the bed and I smiled.

Me: "and the shoes"

Nelo: "might as well since I work for you" he took out a white wedge

Me: "where are we going"

Nelo: "just taking you out" I nodded with a smile and got dressed, we finished up and got in the car n left. He was playing John legend we sang along more like he sang and I screamed, I can't sing like my voice just doesn't allow me to while Nelo on the other

side is an expect. We drove towards durban, we got to mhlanga went to this really nice fancy 5 star restaurant the food was amazing Nelo even let me have a glass of white wine.

Nelo: "promise me that you won't make a habit of drinking"

Me: "I promise"

Nelo: "I still blame myself that you even know how alcohol tastes now" I felt a bit guilty so I looked down but he lifted my chin with his finger we were seated next to each other not opposite each other. He softly pecked my lips I blushed and my eyes wondered around.

Nelo: "you so cute when you blush" I chuckled and pushed him

Me: "can I eat in peace"

Nelo: "yes ma'am" we finished eating he paid and we left, drove to gateway did a little bit of shopping. Watched a late night romantic movie, there were so many sex scenes in the movie I kept my focus like I was watching an educational documentary. While concentrating on the movie I felt Nelo's hand going up my thighs I opened my legs a little giving him access, He tore through my lace panty with his thumb. Than gently shoved his index finger in me.

Nelo: "you all wet for my hardness" he whispered in my ear those words just did something to my body I tried breathing in and out slowly just to contain the moans that wanted to come out. He took my hand and put it on top of his dick it was hard it felt like it was about to bust out of his jean, I brushed it over his jean while his finger was going it circular motion in me. He took it out and sucked on it with his eyes half closed I let out a stifled moan. We didn't even finish the movie we walked out of the cinema laughing and rushing to car. He was speeding all the way home but weird enough I fell asleep while he was driving, woke up when he was parking the car in the garage. As soon as we got in the house he took my dress off laid me on the couch kneeled in front of me and went down on me after that we bapsed on the couch then went to sleep without bathing and naked.

.

Woke up Sunday morning with a heavy heart knowing that I have to go back home and that Nelo would be leaving for Mpumalanga the following Saturday. He was still asleep when I woke so I took a quick shower got dressed in shorts and vest. Went to tidy up downstairs then did breakfast when I was done went to the bedroom to wake him up. Walked over to his side shook his lightly he mumbled something and turned to the other side I shook him again calling out his name and he woke up. Sat on the bed rubbing his eyes.

Nelo: "morning nana" he pulled me on the bed and I sat on top of him we kissed.

Me: "morning sbonelo"

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing" I got off him and walked out but remembered why I woke him up so I went back to the bedroom he was still sitting on the bed and he looked like he was thinking about something concerning.

Me: "breakfast is ready come down" he didn't say anything "Nelo!!" He quickly turned to me "breakfast is ready come eat" . He came down we ate and spent the rest of the day in doors just watching movies and cuddling, didn't have sex later on he took me home. When the car parked a bit further from my house I just couldn't stop the tears that had been threatening to come out the whole day. When he noticed I was crying he didn't say anything he just held me tightly brushing my back.

Me: "I'm sorry"

Nelo: "don't apologize for hurting nana"

Me: "I just wish you didn't have to go" he pulled away from me, grabbed my face making me look at him.

Nelo: "I love you nana ok" I nodded "me not being around full time is not going to change anything"

Me: "I hope so"

Nelo: "it won't if we don't allow it to" I nodded and we kissed, got out the car shared a long warm hug. I walked home got in aunt dolly and Sthe were watching a movie I just greeted and went to my room ironed my uniform and polished my shoes packed my

school bag and slept.

.

The week went by too quickly I wished I could stop time, saw Nelo everyday sometimes we would even sleep in his car whenever he came to see me at night he would bring a throw with him. He picked me up from school everyday for that week, Friday night I told aunt dolly the whole story about Nelo moving she sympathized and let me spend the night with him. We packed up his things, made love throughout the whole night. spent the whole day in doors and in bed on Saturday, later on we packed what he was taking with him in his car. He was driving to Mpumalanga, after packing his things he took me home. I cried all the way home I just couldn't stop the tears from falling no matter what he said it just didn't make it better. Out of all the words he spoke he didn't say what I wanted him to say, I needed him to say that his staying his no longer moving but he didn't and as much as I needed him to say those words I wouldn't have let him stay I just couldn't be selfish with him. We got home and said goodbye it was a sour moment, I got home and cried myself to sleep.

#### **part 45 I am scared of lonely**

The next two weeks were the worst, felt like time was on a stand still. all I did was go to school come back eat in my room do my homeworks and sleep if I'm not chatting to Nelo. My phone was on my hand all the time the only thing that brought excitement or joy in my life was the midday calls I'd get from Nelo during his lunch break, the late nights chats n phone calls we'd have. Eventually I kind of got used to it as time went by learnt how to smile n laugh even though I didn't want to because everyone was complaining and aunt dolly was worried. On February 14 everyone around me was excited about valentines day Sthe was going to Cape Town on that day coming back on the 16 her Bheki was taking her out she spinned some lies to mom n her mom and it worked out for her. It had been a month since Nelo left, everyday that passed felt like a year I was starting to get lonely and it freaked me out. The phones calls and chats weren't enough anymore, I needed more I needed affection and attention. I loved Nelo

a lot in a way that I've never loved anyone before, him being away just changed things. Anyway I woke up that morning Friday the 14th prepared for school, went to the kitchen Sthe was having breakfast while aunt dolly was making lunch for us I don't know why she insisted on making it for us.

Me: "morning family"

Dolly: "morning Lelo ka mamakhe" Sthe waved I sat down and ate my breakfast.

Me: "when's your flight"

Sthe: "17:30" I nodded

Dolly: "sizwe is going to be staying here for two weeks I already spoke to your mom about it" sizwe is aunt Dolly's son he was in matric the previous year didn't do good on his results so he was taking a gap year to fix his results so he could study engineering.

me: "that's nice but if you don't mind me asking mah why is he"

Dolly: "his having problems with his father"

Me: "oh ok cool" we finished eating and left for school the entire day all Asa n Sthe talked about was the plans they had for the weekend. For me it was just a long sad day at school we hadn't talked with Nelo the whole day and he was walking the previous night. Soon it was after school our transport came and we went home, when we got home sizwe was already there.

Sthe: "well hello there stranger" I laughed out loud and sizwe looked puzzled Sthe sat on the couch next to the one sizwe was seated on.

Me: "hey sizwe"

Sizwe: "hey Lelothando" I giggled

Me: "you still won't call me Lelo" he shook his head and I punched him softly he stood up n we hugged it felt so good n warm we hugged until Sthe cleared her throat we let go of each other there was a little awkwardness.

Me: "uhm Sthe this is sizwe, sizwe that's Sthe my cousin" Sthe stood up and they hugged but it was brief.

Sthe: "well why was my hug so short" sizwe looked down and I laughed so hard tears started trickling from my eyes aunt dolly came in from the kitchen.

Dolly: "I missed that" we looked at her and she smiled

Me: "missed what mama"

Dolly: "your real laughter not this thing you've been doing for the past weeks"

Me: "mah"

Dolly: "go on change so you can have lunch" indeed we went to our rooms, I got to my room took my phone out of my bag there was no missed calls from Nelo, I called him but his phone went to voice mail. I just took my uniform off wore my pjs, took my iPod plugged in my earphones and slept. Someone knocking on the door woke me up, I went to open the door and it was Sizwe.

Me: "hey what's up" I rubbed my eyes and yawned

Sizwe: "was just checking on you, you didn't come back down for lunch"

Me: "something came up" I opened the door and he came in my room

Sizwe: "you were asleep"

Me: "yeah, what's the time"

Sizwe: "just after 5"

Me: "mmh" I took my phone under the pillow still nothing from Nelo, my tears just started falling. Sizwe noticed I was crying he brought me closer to him and hugged me brushing my back.

Sizwe: "ssh it ok Lelothando" I chuckled while crying, it kinda feels weird when someone says my full name.

Me: "please stop" I giggled

Sizwe: "you know what lets go get some ice cream and a whole lot of snacks so we can sit here and watch movies"

Me: "do you have any idea how far shops are around here and the only place we can find an open shop is at the mall"

Sizwe: "let's go to the mall than" I chuckled

Me: "no way bro"

Sizwe: "come on Lelothando" he started tickling me and I was laughing from the top of my voice for that one minute I forgot all about Nelo.



Me: "ok ok I'll go" he stopped tickling me

Sizwe: "good, go wash your face you look ugly" I punched him, he laughed and walked out my room. I went to the bathroom took off my pjs putting them in the laundry basket stood naked with just my panty looked at my body. My body was changing I had lost weight even my boobs were smaller than usual, while busy looking at myself my phone rang. I ran to my room still naked when I saw the caller ID my heart sank.

Me: "hello mom"

Mom: "hey baby, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good n you"

Mom: "I'm good too, was just checking on you"

Me: "oh thanks mom everything is good"

Mom: "oryt bye" just as mom dropped the call Sizwe can barging in my room without knocking I jumped and got under the cover.

Me: "dude!!" He laughed

Sizwe: "what it nothing I've never seen before"

Me: "yea but I'm grown now"

Sizwe: "you certainly are" he walked out, I walked back to the bathroom rinsed my mouth n washed my face, wore my sweatpants n hoody fixed my hair and walked out my room. Sizwe was already waiting in the lounge for me, we took the car that aunt dolly uses at home and sizwe drove to the mall. We were singing along to music, talking n laughing al the way to the mall. When we got there the place was filled with couples and decorations it was sickening.

Sizwe: "I hate this day"

Me: "yea me too"

Sizwe: "don't lie"

Me: "circumstances make me hate it"

Sizwe: "where's your bf"

Me: "Mpumalanga, where's your gf"

Sizwe: "don't have one"

Me: "what why you hot" he chuckled

Sizwe: "you think I'm hot"

Me: "well aah" I shrugged my shoulders and he chuckled, we walked to pick n pay bought lot of chips, chocolate, sour worms, cookies and ofcos ice cream we went to the cashiers and I paid we left. As we walked out to the parking lot I saw someone who looked like Nelo but i thought my eyes were playing tricks on me but the closer we got to him I realized that it was actually him he had his back on us and was busy with his phone. We walked past him i felt like I was suffocating, a part of me wanted to go to him but another part thought that if he wanted to see me he would have told me that he was back but he didn't. As we were approaching our car someone screamed 'nana' and that came to me as a confirmation that it really was him I stood there in shock for some reason I was even scared of moving forward or turning behind.

Sizwe: "Lelothando what's wrong"

Me: "I... It's..." I felt nelo's hands around my waist I still didn't turn but his hold n scent was just enough.

Sizwe: "ei bra what are you doing" sizwe asked with his voiced filled with range he turned me and there he was right in front of me looking nice as always he even grew his beard a little it was cute.

Nelo: "ssh nana it ok don't cry I'm so sorry" He brought me to his chest and I held on to his tshirt with tears were flowing freely, he cupped my face and kissed my wet lips slowly while mumbling sorry in my mouth.

Me: "I've missed you so much" I let out a loud breath

Nelo: "I've missed you more" sizwe cleared his throat and I pulled out from Nelo's hold. I think that's when Nelo actually noticed that I was with someone he looked at sizwe from head to toes than back up again before offering him his hand.

Nelo: "I'm Nelo" they shook hands and sizwe introduced himself Nelo had his hand around my waist holding me close to him.

Sizwe: "let's go Lelothando it getting late"

Nelo: "ill take her home you can go"

Sizwe: "I'm sorry but I'll take her back home than if you want her you can get her there"

Nelo chuckled and kept his eyes half closed

Me: "no go sizwe I'll see you at home" sizwe looked at me than back at Nelo and left

Me: "what was all of that about"

Nelo: "mxm"

Me: "what are you doing here sbonelo"

Nelo: "came to see you, it was meant to be a surprise but my flight got delayed I ended up leaving jhb 3 hours later" I just looked at him and shook my head

Me: "I see"

Nelo: "I promise you nana I swear"

Me: "I didn't say anything sbonelo, please take me home"

Nelo: "nana please"

Me: "why didn't you tell me you were coming back"

Nelo: "told you nana I just wanted to surprise you"

Me: "I stay here now I stay at the mall, why has your phone been off" my voice was getting louder, he looked around and held my hand.

Nelo: "let's go" he pulled me to this white Yaris opened my door n I got in he closed it and went to his side got in and drove off.

Me: "hope you taking me home"

Nelo: "do you think I'd hide things from you lelo you actually think I'm stupid enough that I'd come back not tell you but still parade around a mall that's closest to your house"

Me: "I don't know so are you stupid enough to do that" he didn't say anything after that just drove until he passed the turn off to my place but I kept my cool. He drove all the way to his house, we got there he parked the car gave me the house keys came to my side and opened my door but I didn't get out, I kept my head straight but could see him from the corner of my eyes he closed his eyes and shook his head.

Nelo: "nana please come out"

Me: "I told you to take me home"

Nelo: "I'll take you home soon please just come in the house for a second" I got out went to open the door in the house it was dark so I switched the lights on. Looked around the lounge there was a picnic set out on the floor with candles all over the lounge but they weren't lit yet, there were red rose petals all over the floor it was so beautiful.

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana and happy valentines" he was standing behind me I turned and he had bunch of flowers and a gift bag.

#### **part 46 I am scared of lonely**

Me: "baby ... I'm so.." He didn't even let me finish we smashed his lips on mine and we shared a long slow kiss my hands were around his neck and his were around my waist he was holding me tight our bodies pressed against each other. I pulled out and caught my breath he pressed his forehead on mine looking down at me.

Nelo: "I love you nana and I'd never hurt intentionally" I smiled and nodded he chuckled, went around the lounge lighting the candles then offered me his hand I took it he sat me down. Switched the radio on played music softly it was nice slow music. We sat down and ate while having light conversation about anything n everything it was absolutely beautiful. I watched him fascinated by everything he did, the way his lips moved when he was talking how he would but his lower lip n blink just a second longer when talking about us, how his eyes twinkled when he was laughing really hard, how his tone softened up when talking about how much he love me, every moment that passed when we were seated down felt like my love for his was growing more than ever. We spent hours on the throw that was laid on the floor even after we'd finished eating we just laid there listening to music n talking with my head on his chest and his arm around me he would kiss my head there and there. We made love on the floor when we were done he blew the candles than we went to sleep naked, my heart filled with love n joy I slept peaceful.

.

Woke in the morning alone in the bed, wore his tshirt did the bed and walked to the

bathroom so I could wash my face and rinse my mouth but found him in there taking a shower. He looked like he was deeply in thought and whatever he was thinking about was worrying him. I leaned on the wall next to the shower and watched him, his forehead was pressed on the shower glass water was just falling on him his eyes closed. I stood there for over 5 minutes he didn't even notice me until I called out his name, he turned and looked at me.

Nelo: "hey you up, come join me" he smiled but his smile didn't even reach his eyes. I took the tshirt off and walked in the shower the water was nice and hot, I held him circling my hands around his waist and pressed my body to his.

Me: "what's wrong baby" he kissed my head

Nelo: "nothing nana, let's bath so we can have breakfast" I moved from his body and looked at him as much as he tried hiding it concern was all over his face.

Me: "please talk to me" he held my chin and gave me a long wet kiss

Nelo: "there's nothing wrong I promise you" I nodded and we kissed again but now his hands were all over my body like he was looking for something, he pushed me to the glass wall and lifted my leg up wrapping it around his waist. His lips didn't leave mine he shoved his dick in me, we had SEX won't even call it making love. All along Nelo had been gentle with his thrusts n movements, but that morning he was pounding me hard he even made me turn and hit it from behind. it was nice he had me feeling things I've never felt before I came more than twice when we were down we sat down while in the shower. As nice as it was after we both came I just started feeling some tpya way and it wasn't a nice feeling. I stood up finished bathing dried myself got out wrapped a towel around my body.

Nelo: "nana" he called out but I didn't respond I walked out the bathroom "Lelo!" He shouted as I was closing the door. I didn't even lotion just put roll on, wore my pjs got under the cover and slept.

When I woke up I was sleeping on top of Nelo his arms wrapped around me, tried getting up but he woke up and we looked at each other to a point where I became uncomfortable tried to move again but he held me tightly.

Nelo: "I'm sorry if I hurt you nana I'm really sorry"

Me: "ok" he sighed and let me go, I got off the bed and went downstairs to the kitchen drank water and thought about everything trying to figure out what's wrong with Nelo than I remembered that I didn't tell aunt dolly about not coming back. I ran back to the room looked for my sweatpants and took out my phone it had dozens of missed calls from both aunt dolly and sizwe, I decided to call sizwe.

Sizwe: "hello"

Me: "hey"

Sizwe: "mom has been going out of her mind with worry"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Sizwe: "is this how you always behave Lelothando, sleeping out without notifying anyone, having my mom worry like this"

Me: "I'm really sorry sizwe, please tell aunt dolly that I'll be back soon I'm at Nelo's"

Sizwe: "mxm" he dropped the call after that I was left puzzled, I went back to the kitchen sat on the high chair I don't know where Nelo was at that moment.

Nelo: "your food is in the microwave" didn't even hear him coming in I turned to him and nodded, walked to the microwave took out my food it was just basic scrambled eggs with beacon and cocktail sausages I walked to the fridge took out two slices of cheese put them on top of the eggs put in back in the microwave so it will melt.

Me: "when did you do your grocery"

Nelo: "yesterday" I raised my eyebrows and nodded

Me: "when are you leaving"

Nelo: "after a week"

Me: "mmh" we kept quiet until the microwave stopped I took out my food and ate. He stood up poured some juice and gave it to me.

Me: "thank you" he smiled

Nelo: "you didn't like what I did in the shower" I didn't say anything "Lelo"

Me: "I don't know Sbonelo but it was nice" he chuckled

Nelo: "I know it was nice I got proof all over my back" I burst out in a laughter

Me: "hey" he gave me a wicked grin and walked to me gave me a soft peck.

Nelo: "I love nana"

Me: "I love you more"

Nelo: "that's debatable" he micimic my voice and we laughed.

Me: "stop"

Nelo: "you spending the weekend ryt"

Me: "no"

Nelo: "please"

Me: "I'll have to go home first, yesterday I didn't even tell aunt dolly I was leaving and that's not right"

Nelo: "mmh" he clenched his jaws "you not cheating on me right"

Me: "what!!"

Nelo: "I leave for a month when I came back I find you in malls with boys" he raised his voice

Me: "you could have and should have asked instead of assuming"

Nelo: "well who was that kid"

Me: "his not a kid" he laughed sarcastically

Nelo: "well"

Me: "his aunt Dolly's son"

Nelo: "is that why he was acting like your bf"

Me: "well I don't know about that" I stood up washed my plate and glass. Walked past him in an attempt to go to the bedroom but he grabbed my hand pulling me to him in a speed and smashed his lips on mine, we kissed roughly he picked me up sat me on the counter we continued kissing until I pulled back.

Me: "sizwe is more like a brother to me, aunt dolly raised me"

Nelo: "I saw the way he looked at you and how he got when you said he must leave"

Me: "you being forward for no reason" he smirked

Nelo: "I'm being forward nana" I smiled and nodded he laughed and shook his head

Nelo: "let's hope so because if he dares tries something I won't be held responsible for

my action coz I will react nana” he kissed my forehead and lifted me off the counter.

Me: “take me home so I can come back soon” he nodded I went to change into jeans n vest than he drove me home, he dropped me off home and left. I got in through the lounge sizwe and aunt dolly were watching tv.

Me: “hello” sizwe got up and left without greeting back

Me: “what’s wrong with him”

Dolly: “I don’t know his been moody since last night” I looked down

Me: “I’m sorry mama about sleeping out worse without even letting you know” she sighed

Dolly: “I know I’m not your mother Lelo but the least you could do is respect me” those words hurt like a needle “I’m responsible for you but it seems like I can’t keep you grounded, maybe you should just go to durban so you could stay with your mother. If something happened to you or if you get pregnant under my watch I’d blame myself”

Me: “I’m really sorry mama just that Nelo came back and I ...” She cut me off by putting her hand up

Dolly: “I don’t want to hear it”

Me: “I’m still sorry” I went to my room and left her there

## **part 47 I am scared of lonely**

I stayed in my room for over an hour thinking about what aunt dolly said maybe I have been disrespectful the previous year but now it was a plain mistake that could have been done by anyone in my position. While still thinking about my life I decided to call Ndumo and she answered after I had called her twice.

Ndumo: “hello” her voice was rough and weak like she had been crying

Me: “hey, how are you?”

Ndumo: “I’m fine Lelo what do you want?”

Me: “just wanted to check on you, I miss our friendship” she sighed

Ndumo: “don’t call me again” after that she hung up, don’t wana lie it made me sad. I loved Ndumo she was my first friend we were practically sisters, our friendship made



sense to see us drifting apart because of a boy sucked big time. Nelo was going to be picking me up later on and I couldn't cancel on him I wanted to be with him aunt dolly will just have to understand. I called mom.

Mom: "Lelo what's wrong" I laughed nervously

Me: "nothing mom just miss you" she laughed

Mom: "mmh well that nice"

Me: "yea when are you coming home"

Mom: "I don't know baby, why don't you come visit me next weekend"

Me: "yea that's cool"

Mom: "ok will see you than I have to go now it busy here"

Me: "mom wait! Actually I called coz wanted to ask if I can spend sometime at Asa's house"

Mom: "why"

Me: "we hardly spend time together now that we not in the same class and I miss her"

Mom: "this has nothing to do with sbonelo" I muttered a curse

Me: "ofcos not mom his not even in kzn"

Mom: "oryt you can go but I want you home on Monday"

Me: "sho mamzo, I love you" she giggled

Mom: "I love you too Lelo wam" she dropped the call, took my school bag changed my books from Friday's to Monday's, took my weekend bag packed everything I needed including my uniform. When I was done I went to the room sizwe was using and knocked.

Sizwe: "who is it"

Me: "it me" he didn't say anything I knocked again after a minute or so the door opened and he was leaning on it

Me: "let me in" I pushed him so I could get in

Sizwe: "I understand that I'm a visitor here and that this is your mom's house but you don't have to throw it on my face" I looked at him and his face was blank, those words hurt like hell.

Me: "I'm sorry you feel that way just wanted to check on you" I walked out but he held my hand as I was about to reach the door.

Sizwe: "I'm sorry" I nodded but he pulled me to him and smashed his lips on mine it came as a shock to me I opened my mouth and he saw that as an opportunity to shove his tongue in my mouth. I pulled back and slapped him, he held his cheek and mumbled a curse.

Me: "don't you ever ever do that" he shook his head and looked down "what the fuck is wrong with you sizwe" I walked out of his room slamming the door. Don't wana lie I was beyond being pissed sizwe is like a big brother to me like the fuck just happened. How does he think things are going to be now, I hate awkward situations. I went to the lounge to look for aunt dolly couldn't find her even in the kitchen and her room so I started to shout for her.

Sizwe: "what are you trying to do" he wisphered and I looked at him puzzled "please don't tell mom"

Me: "mxm" I went outside and found her there, sizwe was following me.

Sizwe: "mom what are you doing out here" I looked at him and rolled my eyes

Dolly: "nothing why"

Sizwe: "just asking, I'm about to make lunch anyone want some"

Dolly: "yes please"

Sizwe: "come help Lelothando"

Me: "aunt dolly I was looking for you wanted to tell you tha..."

Sizwe: "she wanted to tell you that we were about to make lunch" I looked at him with a raised eyebrow

Dolly: "why you being weird sizwe"

Me: "yeah why"

Sizwe: "me? ... Weird ?... Nah I'm cool"

Me: "anyway wanted to ask you if you ok with me spending the rest of the weekend at Asa's I already asked mom she said ok"

Dolly: "yea it ok when are you coming back"

Me: "Monday after school" sizwe left us while mumbling something.

Dolly: "ok don't forget your uniform"

Me: "I wont" I went to my room, played some music while chatting to Nelo, sizwe barged in my room.

Me: "what the fuck is wrong with you sizwe get out now"

Sizwe: "you going to him ryt"

Me: "so"

Sizwe: "fuck lelothando you gona spend so much time there"

Me: "that's not your problem"

Sizwe: "you having sex with him"

Me: "his my bf what do you think" he sat on my bed and looked down

Sizwe: "Lelothando"

Me: "please leave" he stood up walked to the door then turned to looked at me

Sizwe: "come get lunch I made sandwiches and juice" I nodded and he walked out, I took my phone and followed him there were sitting on the high chairs eating and talking so I joined them after eating went to take a bath. While lotioning my phone rang I ran to it and it was Ndumo as I answered.

me: "hey" she sniffed

Ndumo: "I'm so sorry Lelo"

Me: "it ok, it all in the past what's done is done"

Ndumo: "I miss you so much"

Me: "I miss you Ndumo"

Ndumo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "hey it ok you hear me" she let out a loud sob

Ndumo: "Lelo"

Me: "don't cry, I'll see you Monday at school, I love you ok"

Ndumo: "ok I love you too see you mind" I dropped the call and carried on with lotiobing, when I was done got dressed in a peach body hugging maxi dress n gold sandlas. Went to watch tv with aunt dolly and sizwe while waiting for Nelo sizwe kept

looking at me when he thought I wasn't noticing. Finally around 7 Nelo called I told aunt dolly Asa's brother was here to pick me up so I left. Nelo and I left we drove pass fish away and bought dinner, we got to his place ate than cuddled on the couch watching a movie.

Nelo: "if I asked you to move in with me in Mpumalanga would you consider it"

Me: "you know I have school"

Nelo: "there are schools that side to"

Me: "my parents could never allow that"

Nelo: "mmh"

Me: "why you asking"

Nelo: "I love you nana and when you next to me i don't do stupid thing"

Me: "are you trying to say that in a month that you've been there you've done something" he didn't say anything but his eyes wondered all around the lounge  
"Sbonelo!!"

Nelo: "don't raise your voice at me, ofcos not what do you take me for"

Me: "I hope so" I got up went to the kitchen to drink water while there I had my phone beeping went to check it found Nelo looking at it.

Nelo: "here nana it your phone" he handed it to me his eyes were red and half closed I looked at the phone and there was an open sms on the screen from sizwe

\*im sorry about the kiss but given a chance I would do it again I know you enjoyed it to\*  
I looked at Nelo after reading it his jaw was clenched and his hands forming fists.

Me: "baby I ... I can explain really daddy it wasn't my fault"

Nelo: "the fuck Lelo!!!" He roared "I asked you Lelo I simply asked you and you gave me bullshit"

## **part 48 I am scared of lonely**

He started pacing up n down the lounge cursing endlessly I was standing on the corner sucking my thumb.

Nelo: "Lelo" I kept quiet he came closer to them I started shaking Nelo slapped me once

who knows if he might do it again or not. I moved from the corner and started walking backwards with the aim of going out through the kitchen door. He noticed that I was moving backwards and stopped walking towards me.

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "I'm sorry I really am"

Nelo: "you kissed him"

Me: "well" he chuckled sarcastically and shook his head

Nelo: "ei fok off Lelo mani talk!!" He came to me in a speed stood in front me pressing on the wall.

Me: "he kissed me not the other way around" he closed his eyes and pressed his forehead on mine hard

Nelo: "and you let him"

Me: "ofcos not!! What do you take me for!!" He pressed his forehead harder

Nelo: "don't shout at me I've been telling you not to raise your voice at me" tears started prickling out of my eyes

Me: "you hurting me" he stepped back a bit removing his forehead

Nelo: "I'm sorry I didn't mean to" I nodded he took his car keys both our phones and left bagging the door, after a minute I heard his car speeding off. I was not going to run after him Nelo can be dramatic at times for no reason it wasn't my fault that sizwe decided to kiss me and it not like I didn't push him off. I went to the bedroom took his laptop got on the bed started a movie then decided to take a shower put the movie on pause took a shower got out wore my pjs. Went downstairs to the kitchen warmed milk went back to the bedroom watched the movie under the covers while drinking milk, halfway through the movie I felt sleepy and Nelo was still not back so I figured might as well sleep.

.

Woke up Sunday morning sleeping on top of Nelo, he was still asleep with his lips slightly open his breathing was on a slow pace. I gave him a soft peck on his lips and stared at him.

Nelo: "stop staring nana" his eyes were still closed

Me: "I'm allowed you mine" he laughed and opened his eyes

Nelo: "I'm yours?" He raised his eyebrow I kissed him hard his hands went to my ass grabbing it and I let out a small moan than pulled back.

Me: "mine" he smirked at me, flipped me over getting on top of me I opened my leg he got between them.

Nelo: "sorry I overreacted last night" he kissed my forehead then kissed my lips we kissed for a long time, he went on my neck while rubbing my clit I held his head. We made beautiful slow love and slept after that.

Woke up because I could feel something moving on top of me when I opened my eyes and Nelo was staring at me busy rubbing his dick on my punani.

Me: "n ... O" I moaned "stop"

Nelo: "nana please" I pushed him back

Me: "no" he didn't move

Nelo: "I'll just park inside" his eyes were begging I laughed

Me: "no" he sulked and I laughed harder "you look like a puppy"

Nelo: "hawu nana please I swear I won't even move" I nodded he didn't even waste time he shoved his dick in me and I flinched he started moving. I gave him a dead stare he stopped and chuckled.

Nelo: "let's go out" I beamed at him

Me: "out where" he started moving slowly in circles I closed my eyes and let a moan out.

Me: "b...aby..." His pace picked up I wrapped my legs around his waist and he groaned. He flipped me over I laid on my stomach he spread my legs using his knees and shoved his dick in me going deep I cried out loud "oh my God" he started pounding in and out of me aggressively he would grab both my butt cheeks lifting them up and opening them it gave him access to go deeper I was moaning and groaning like a crazy person while he was pounding hard until we both came. I turned around and laid on my back next to him, he put his hand on my punani grabbing it.

Nelo: “fuck nana” I breathed out loudly

Me: “what baby”

Nelo: “I love you”

Me: “and I you” he got up went to the bathroom and came back after some time walked around the bedroom like he was looking for something.

Me: “why you walking around naked” he laughed and started griding rubbing his hands all over his body I watched it in amusement.

Nelo: “getting horny” I laughed out loud

Me: “you look so fuckn weird it disturbing” he pulled me to him and put me on his shoulder carried me to the bathroom while busy spanking my ass. We got to the bathroom and took a long hot bath we stayed in the water while talking about silly things and laughing at stupid jokes n moments we shared together. Got out of the bath dried ourselves, walked back to the bedroom lotioned got dressed in skinny jeans tshirts and sneakers. Went to the mall had late lunch and watched a movie after the movie we grabbed pizza and went home. I prepared for school in the morning did my homeworks while he touched up on some project he was working on for work. I finished up first so he stopped working we ate and watched tv, after TV we took a shower and slept.

.

He woke me up at 05:30 I prepared for school, finished up took my school bag downstairs he was in the kitchen making me breakfast I sat down waiting for him to finish up when he was done I ate while in watched me. After breakfast he took me to school, when we got there it was still a bit early so we stayed in the car making out until I saw Sthe getting off our transport. I got off the car and called out for her she came to us greeted us and Nelo drove off we went inside the school met up with Asa but the bell rang before we could talk. We went to our classes soon it was the first break which was spent talking about our weekend soon it was second break soo after it was after school was kinda disappointed that Ndumo didn't come to school. We went home I went to my room soon as we got home I took a shower wore my bum shorts and oversized tshirt that actually belonged to Nelo. Went to the kitchen to have lunch could hear laughter

before I even entered the kitchen, Sthe and sizwe were there eating but sizwe's back was facing me.

Me: "hey sizwe" I wasn't angry at him his old he knows what his doing

Sizwe: "Lelothando" I didn't even turn to look at him I made my lunch as I was about to sit down he raised his head up and I gasped in shock.

Me: "what the fuck happened to you" he had a blue eye his lower lip was cut, he chuckled.

Sizwe: "like you don't know" he was sarcastic

Me: "what do you mean"

Sizwe: "I got mugged Saturday night"

Me: "oh"

#### **part 49 I am scared of lonely**

Sthe: "you got mugged in this neighborhood!" She popped her eyes out

Me: "it unbelievable" Sthe n I looked at each other and nodded sizwe huffed

Sizwe: "yes now can we drop it" he looked pissed off Sthe n I broke out in a laughter

Sthe: "just imagine getting mugged by a white" we laughed

Me: "worse a cheese boy, nah sizwe bru you need to do something"

Sizwe: "mxm" with that he walked out the kitchen leaving us laughing. We finished eating I washed the dishes than went to my room to get started with my homework while I was busy sizwe barged in without knocking

Me: "you really should stop doing that sizwe" I said in a soft tone

Sizwe: "so you really going to pretend like you don't know what's happening"

Me: "what's happening" he laughed sarcastically

Sizwe: "really Lelothando"

Me: "just say what you want to say and leave my room I'm busy" he walked to my study desk and pulled the chair with me on it than knelt in front of me, he kept his eyes on mine without saying anything until I looked down but he lifted my chin



Sizwe: “look at what that idiot you call boyfriend did to me”

Me: “what are you talking about” I was truly puzzled

Sizwe: “I get a text Saturday night from your phone saying I must come to the gate so we can talk about the kiss when I asked why you not coming in you said you don’t want mom seeing you. But when I got outside I found your boyfriend standing next to his car” I searched his eyes hoping he was lying “than he started beating me up without even giving me a chance to talk”

Me: “oh”

Sizwe: “is that all you going to say”

Me: “what do you expect me to say” he stood up

Sizwe: “fuck!! Wow Lelothando Just wow” he was shouting

Me: “you will not shout at me sizwe or I will tell aunty what you’ve been up to and what were you trying to achieve with that sms” my voice was still soft, he looked down and when he looked up I raised my eyebrows

Sizwe: “his an aggressive hooligan Lelothando you deserve better”

Me: “and you are what’s better ryt” he didn’t say anything “you are what I deserve ryt”

Sizwe: “I may not come from a rich family or even work but I can love you like you’ve never been loved before I promise you Lisa I can give you better material things are not everything” I clicked my tongue and stood up walked to the door opened it

Me: “leave my room” he got closer to me

Sizwe: “Lisa” he called in a pleading voice by now he was standing in front of me to close for comfort so I shifted back

Me: “please leave before I scream”

Sizwe: “I love you I’ve always have” he walked out and I banged the door leaned on it tears started falling as I slowly dropped to the floor with my back pressed on the door. I pulled my knees to my chest and cried silently just didn’t understand Nelo I had lot of questions running through my mind. Like is this how things are going to be with Nelo first it was leon than Lindo now sizwe, maybe sizwe is right I shouldn’t be with Nelo because it seems like it only a matter of time before he beats me up to a point where I’ll

wake up in a hospital and after leon there is no way I'm going to stay in an abusive relationship again. And why the heck would sizwe bring up his family's financial issue is that the impression he gets from me that I'm with Nelo because his working, yes even before Nelo I've always been with guys who come from a privileged background but that's because im surrounded by them not because I'm choose those guys knowingly. My phone ringing brought me out of my thoughts I got off the floor took my phone from the bed it was Nelo.

Me: "why did you do it"

Nelo: "do what?" I sniffed "nana are you ok"

Me: "I'm fine, why did you hit sizwe why must you always go around beating people up?"

Nelo: "eh nana don't tell me you crying because of that kid"

Me: "are you going to answer me"

Nelo: "mxm this is bullshit" he hung up on me I sighed and got under the covers and slept.

I woke up a while later walked in the bathroom washed my face and rinsed my mouth, took my phone and went to lounge sthe n sizwe were watching tv I sat down and watched as well while chatting. After awhile we aunt called us for dinner we ate around the dinning table sizwe kept on stealing glances at me when he thought I wasn't looking. We had light conversation but when sizwe started talking I wouldn't say anything until Sthe decided to open her big mouth.

Sthe: "what's with the awkwardness between you two" I gave her an evil look and she chuckled

Sizwe: "what are you talking about" aunt dolly kept on looking from sizwe to me, I didn't finish my dinner just took my plate put it in the fridge and went to my room. I watched series on my laptop until I feel asleep.

.

Woke up to my alarm in the morning, my punani was painful and wet that was weird but didnt pay any attention to it. I got off the bed made it there was no need to wake

Sthe up coz her bf had bought her a phone, I prepared for school finished went to have breakfast Sthe was already eating we got done grabbed fruits and left. We got to school the first slot went by smoothly first break we were chilling just Asa Sthe n I talking about random things when we saw Ndumo coming towards us.

Ndumo: "hi" she looked down playing with her nails

Asa: "the fuck do you want" I nudged Asa

Me: "hey Ndumo, come sit down" she came next to me

Asa: "mxm so we chill with backstabbing bitchz now"

Me: "shut up Asanda"

Asa: "mxm" we spent the rest of the break with Ndumo but Asa wasn't talking to her.

The rest of the day at school went off fast, after school I was walking alone when I stepped out of the school gate I saw Nelo standing next to the car he was using with his hands in his pocket wearing simple shorts tshirt vans n a straight cap the girls in front of me were talking about him and giggling like high school kids that they are. I looked at him our eyes met and he smiled but I didn't return the smile instead I went to the spot where I wait for our transport Asa and Sthe we already standing there when I got to them Sthe roughly turned to Nelo who was still standing next to his car busy on his phone like he was making a phone call.

Sthe: "why you ignoring hotness" I sighed and rolled my eyes

Me: "stop calling him that"

Asa: "but his nice Lelo I mean look at his legs" she licked her lower lip

Me: "fuck you guys" Nelo was already walking towards us with a smirk. He got to us grabbed my neck bringing me closer to him than kissed me long n deeply shoving his tongue in my mouth I let out a small moan in his mouth our tongues danced together and I lost myself in his lips, he pulled back and pressed our foreheads together with his eyes closed.

Nelo: "I've missed you so much nana" I didn't say anything we remained like that until Asa cleared her throat then Nelo stood behind me so close that I could feel his hard on pressed on my ass.

Nelo: "Sthe Asa"

Them: "hey" I chuckled sthe's eyes were red and small while Asa looked like she had just seen a ghost,

Nelo: "Sthe do me a favor I'll bring her a little bit later just cover for her"

Sthe: "aah yeah sure" they looked at me I shrugged my shoulders and we left but as soon as we turned I bumped on someone my bag fell I picked it up when I raised my head I saw leon looking at Nelo who was just smiling.

Leon: "sorry" he left Nelo n I walked to car, he opened my door I got in he went to his side got in and we left.

Nelo: "I really did miss you nana"

Me: "I also missed you" he smiled

Nelo: "what do you want to do"

Me: "please take me home I don't feel well" I saw a range of emotion pass his face first it was anger followed by concern than uncertainty

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "I got cramps think I'm going to get my periods soon" he drove off towards the mall instead of home

Nelo: "you still angry at me for hitting that kid"

Me: "i was never angry just disappointed" he looked at me quickly than back to the road

Nelo: "I'm sorry didn't mean to disappoint you"

Me: "why did you hit him"

Nelo: "coz you mine n no one is going to play with you or take you away from me" he reached the mall he got off I remained in the car, I took out my phone and it had lot of missed calls from him. He came back and gave me a plastic it had medication as well as snack after that he took me home. I got home and went straight to my room n locked myself in and sent Nelo an sms

\*im sorry but this is not working out for me, we done\*

I switched my phone off and slept.

**part 50 I am scared of lonely**

Was woken up by someone shaking me when I opened my eyes I saw aunty dolly on the side of my bed.

Me: “mama” I called out while rubbing my painful eyes

Dolly: “what’s wrong why were you crying” I shook my head

Me: “I wasn’t crying” she looked at me with pity

Dolly: “your eyes are red and puffy” I shrugged my shoulders she sat on the bed and opened her arms, I got in them and she held me brushing my back tears started flowing out

Dolly: “what’s wrong Lelo”

Me: “I ... I don’t know” seriously I just felt overwhelmed and really emotional I don’t know why at the back of my mind I knew it had something to do with Nelo yeah sure I loved him but I didn’t wana be with me I don’t know why but I just didn’t want him.

Dolly: “everything is going to be fine” I nodded she kissed my head

Me: “I really miss Siyabulela”

Dolly: “he probably miss you too”

Me: “I guess, I’m hungry” she chuckled

Dolly: “I’m done cooking and I cooked your favorite” I smiled and I felt better a little

Me: “dumplings and mutton” she nodded I jumped out of bed and she laughed “come on mama lets go” I was already standing by the door we walked to the kitchen with aunt dolly laughing behind me

Sizwe: “what go her so excited” I ignored him

Dolly: “food”

Sthe: “dumplings and mutton” I nodded like a five year old child everyone laughed. Aunt dolly dished up we took our food to the lounge since generations was playing everyone wanted to watch tv. I took one spoon and felt my insides turn I ran to the bathroom didn’t even reach the first bathroom let alone my bathroom I threw up on the passage, I threw up until i felt empty and nothing was coming out. I remained in the kneeling position I was on feeling weak until I felt someone brushing my back when I turned to see who it is I saw sizwe.

Sizwe: “are you ok” his facial expression and tone screamed concern, I nodded

Me: “I’m fine, the food tastes funny maybe the meat was rotten” he just shook his head and pulled me up

Sizwe: “come I’ll make you a sandwich” I gave him a weak smile

Me: “ok let me clean up first”

Dolly: “I’ll do it, go eat”

Me: “no I can’t let you do that” I went to the storeroom where aunt dolly keeps the cleaning things, took a mop n bucket filled the bucket with water n soap. When I was about to starting cleaning I felt like throwing up again but the only thing that came out was water. I felt dizzy and hot I started sweating, I almost fell but sizwe caught me and took me to my room. I went to my bathroom and took a luke warm bath, I got out wrapped myself in a towel go out of the bathroom and found sizwe sitting on my bed with a sandwich and glass of milk.

Me: “thank you” I sat next to him and ate the peanut butter n jam sandwich

Sizwe: “you were really hungry” I smiled

Me: “you have no idea” he chuckled, I finshed eating he took the dishes and left. I switched my phone on and it flooded with missed calls and texts from Nelo I didn’t reply to any just went back to sleep.

.

Woke up the following morning to my alarm ringing at 06:30 I switched it off and slept again. Woke up again a bit later coz my phone was ringing and it was Nelo I answered.

me: “hello”

Nelo: “nana” he sounded relieved

Me: “hi”

Nelo: “I’m at your school and your transport just arrived but you didn’t get off where are you”

Me: “I’m at home”

Nelo: “what’s wrong”

Me: “I miss you” I sniffed and he sighed

Nelo: "do you want me to come there" he asked in a wispher I nodded and he laughed

Nelo: "you nodding"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I can't see you nana" we both laughed

Nelo: "I'll be there now now ok"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "I love you nana" he dropped the call, I got out of bed went to take a quick shower got out lotioned wore my shorts n vest with flops. Went to the kitchen and made a peanut butter sandwich, Nelo called while I was eating saying his outside so I went out and found him two houses away. I got to him and we hugged he held me tightly.

Nelo: "please don't ever do that again" he pulled back and looked at me all over my body like he was searching for something then pulled me in for a hug again.

Me: "I'm sorry" I started crying again he held my cheeks and kissed me after that he pulled back and wiped my tears I looked at him and noticed how he looked

Me: "you look horrible baby" he chuckled lightly

Nelo: "well thank you nana" his eyes were red as well as his nose

Me: "I love you" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "you said you would never leave me nana, why did you do that yesterday"

Me: "I'm sorry" he sighed

Nelo: "I'm tired nana, I hardly slept last night can we go sleep"

Me: "but"

Nelo: "please, I just need to know that we ok n I wana sleep"

Me: "ok let's go" we got in the car and drove to mkomaas went pass spar and kfc for food.

We got to his place ate then slept with me on top of him ofcos. When we woke up we made slow passionate love, we were cuddling naked after our session when I remembered that we didn't use a condom.

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "how come we didn't use a condom" he didn't say anything for a moment until I cleared my throat

Nelo: "it not something we use nana why should we start now"

Me: "excuse me do you hear yourself"

Nelo: "actually I do"

Me: "what if I fall pregnant or worse get a disease" he shook his head and laughed sarcastically

Nelo: "I don't have diseases nana"

Me: "I didn't say you do"

Nelo: "you implied it and that's enough" he stood up and wore his boxers, I huffed and got under the blanket.

Nelo: "look Lelo I don't have any kind of sexual diseases I go for tests occasionally"

Me: "that still won't stop me from getting pregnant sbonelo"

Nelo: "so what if you get pregnant, I earn enough to take care of you and our baby"

Me: "do you realise how selfish you sound right now"

Nelo: "I'm not being selfish I'm just saying that if you got pregnant you wouldn't have to worry"

Me: "mxm" I stood up got dressed and went to the kitchen made myself a light snack while eating he got in the kitchen

Nelo: "where's my snack"

Me: "you got hands" I left him there went to take a nap in the guest room.

Woke up awhile later feeling hot only to find Nelo wrapped around with my head pressed against his chest and his leg on top of mine, I got out of the bed carefully so I wouldn't wake him up. Went to the bathroom peed rinsed my mouth and washed my face. Walked out with an intention of going to cook dinner coz it was already late, while walking past his room I heard his phone ringing so I went to answer it but when I got to it there was already a missed call from an unsaved number. when I was about to walk out the room it rang again and I answered but didn't say anything.

Caller: "hello baby" it was a woman's voice



Me: “uhm hi sorry Sbonelo is asleep I’ll let him know you called” she giggled

Caller: “you must be his sister, I’m Kokesto his gf” I started crying silently

Me: “oryt I’ll let him know you called bye” I dropped the call and sank down on the floor crying with the phone pressed on my chest.

## **part 51 I am scared of lonely**

I stayed on the floor and cried for what seemed like the longest time until I heard Nelo calling me I got off the floor went to the bathroom washed my face then walked out to the bathroom found Nelo seated on the bed busy with his phone but he stopped whatever he was doing when he realized I was in the room.

Nelo: “hey nana” I was leaning on the wall looking at him, he stood up and came to me held my chin with his one hand while his other held my waist

Me: “hi”

Nelo: “you’ve been crying again” I didn’t say anything and he sighed looking up “look nana im sorry about how I handled the whole condom situation”

Me: “mmh wow ok”

Nelo: “I’m trying here nana and I’m truly sorry”

Me: “I understand” I tried moving away but he held me and I let him but when he was about to lean in for a kiss I pushed him away

Nelo: “now what?” Irritation was written all over his face

Me: “nothing please take me home”

Nelo: “so every time I do something to upset you is this how you going to handle things, you just going to go back to your bubble that you call home” I raised an eyebrow

Me: “excuse me”

Nelo: “all the time Lelo like all the time things go a little south instead of north the first thing you do is run home and I’m sick n tired of this Lelo you need to grow up” I pushed my head back n tilted it a little

Me: “maybe Kokesto is just the right age for you than” at least he had the decency to look shocked

Nelo: "what ... What are you talking about"

Me: "your gf called and she was so happy to talk to your sister" I hissed

Nelo: "what were you doing answering my phone lelo"

Me: "fuck you sbonelo fuck you"

Nelo: "no answer me"

Me: "you've never had a problem with that before" he looked down

Nelo: "I'm sorry" I removed his hand from my waist and he let me. I walked out the room went to the kitchen and poured myself a glass of ice water. Nelo walked in and stood across me with the counter between us

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "so basically who is the fool here me or her coz judging from where I'm stand in the stupid little sister"

Nelo: "it was a mistake nana I swear"

Me: "a mistake that left her with an impression that you guys are together" he looked everywhere around the kitchen but me "I'm asking Sbonelo"

Nelo: "some guys from work and I went out this one Friday night there was lot of alcohol lot of girls everything was flowing I woke up the next morning with her in my bed" I closed my eyes as I felt a sharp peircing through my heart "she asked for my number nana I didn't want her to feel low and disrespected or even used so I gave it to her" I chuckled in disbelief

Me: "so it better if I feel disrespected"

Nelo: "that's not what I mean"

Me: "what do you mean"

Nelo: "just that.."

Me: "did you fuck her" a lot of emotions passed his face he looked at me and I put my hands over my chest and raised my eyebrows

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "answer the bloody question and stop calling me nana it irritating" he looked down in shame

Nelo: "I'm sorry it was a mistake and it will ne..." I threw the glass I was using at him it hit his forehead and broke

Nelo: "the fuck nana"

Me: "one fuckn month sbonelo you couldn't keep your pants zipped for one fuckn month you idiot" I took a frying pan from the stove and threw it at him but he ducked and it hit the wall

Nelo: "God lelo stop"

Me: "fuck you" I hissed "did you even use a condom or you so stupid that you would sleep with two people around the same time without protection"

Nelo: "ofcos what do you take me for"

Me: "you son of a bitch!! When you were putting the condom on it didn't occur to you that you about to shove your dick in someones pussy" he shut his eyes like he was feeling pain

Nelo: "that's not what I mean"

Me: "take.me.home"

Nelo: "no"

Me: "why not coz I'm sure as hell not spending the night here"

Nelo: "you will leave when I know that things are good between us"

Me: "you must be out of your mind" he shrugged his shoulders and I clicked my tongue

Me: "I hate you"

Nelo: "no you upset" I shook my head

Me: "oh no I do hate you and I'm done with you"

Nelo: "you not going to leave me"

Me: "watch me" I walked to his room took my phone and his sweater which covered my short went to sit on the staircase outside and called Sthe

Sthe: "you bitch where are you" I chuckled

Me: "how's aunt dolly"

Sthe: "she hasn't noticed that you not around but sizwe has been asking" it was around 18:00

Me: "please cover for me just make up something I'm sleeping over here"

Sthe: "about to pop the cherry" I laughed Sthe and Asa didn't know that Nelo and I did that already

Me: "don't be forward"

Sthe: "give him some already" I sighed

Me: "it not like it going to make him faithful" I said in a soft tone

Sthe: "all the guys cheat Lelo it in their dna"

Me: "doesn't make it right"

Sthe: "are you ok"

Me: "yeah I'm fine look please iron my uniform for me I'll see you in the morning"

Sthe: "just skip school" I giggled

Me: "I already did that today so I cant"

Sthe: "oryt cuz bye" she dropped the call as soon as I put my phone in the pocket Nelo sat behind me with his legs around me.

Me: "please don't touch me"

Nelo: "I'm really sorry nana"

Me: "why did you do it"

Nelo: "it was a mistake" we were both calmer now

Me: "is because im inexperience when it comes to sex"

Nelo: "ofcos not"

Me: "are you sexually frustrated"

Nelo: "no what you give me is more than enough"

Me: "am I not attractive to you anymore"

Nelo: "nana please you the most beautiful girl I've ever met in and out"

Me: "so I'm just not worth your loyalty and honesty"

Nelo: "you worth that and more I love you Lelothando like I've never loved anyone before"

Me: "you have a funny way of showing it"

Nelo: "it was a mistake that will never happen again I promise trust me nana"

Me: "that the thing Sbonelo I don't trust you anymore, you leaving Saturday going back to her how do you think I'll feel knowing you there with her while I'm here" he moved from behind me and kneeled in front me

Nelo: "I'm going back to work not her"

Me: "it the same thing"

Nelo: "it not nana I'm really sorry, what can I do to make things right"

Me: "give me space to breath"

Nelo: "I can do anything for you nana but that's one thing I won't be able to do"

Me: "I can't be with you right now sbonelo please understand"

Nelo: "you said you wouldn't leave me"

Me: "I'm not leaving you im just asking for space"

Nelo: "that's as good as leaving me" a single tear fell from his eye and I wipped it

Me: "please just understand from my point of things Nelo, how do you think I'm going to be feeling knowing you there with her it didn't even take you that long to cheat on me, your life is basically that side now how do you think I'm going to be feeling this side. Every time you don't answer my call, when you can't come home because work it too busy im sorry but I won't cope with that" I was talking between sniffs and tears

Nelo: "it won't happen again please believe me I can't lose you nana please don't walk away from us from what we have"

Me: "I'm not walking away just asking for a little space to reflect on things" he didn't say anything for awhile the only sounds one could hear were sniffs and hiccups

Nelo: "ok just space that's all" I nodded "I'm really sorry nana I hate seeing you hurt especially because of me worse there's nothing I can do about it"

Me: "what's done is done please take me home"

Nelo: "thought you spending the night"

Me: "not anymore"

Nelo: "please sleep over nana I just wana hold you"

Me: "I can't share a bed with you at this moment"

Nelo: "oh... I'll sleep in another room"

Me: "I'd rather sleep in my room"

Nelo: "oh ok let's go" he sounded disappointed, we left the ride back home was long and silent Nelo was driving too slow. We got home he went out opened my door and hugged me tightly I buried my face on his chest before pulling back.

Nelo: "I love you" I nodded he kissed my forehead I walked in the gate went in the house straight to my room without anybody seeing me. Went to the bathroom stripped got on the shower and sat down while crying with the water pouring all over me. One thing that kept on ringing in my mind was that he actually let go.

## **part 52 I am scared of lonely**

The rest of the week was slow all I did was go to school and sleep Nelo called and texted a lot but I didn't answer his calls or reply to his text even when he called the landline I would drop the call as soon as I realized it was him. He was supposed to leave Saturday morning he called Friday night on the landline and Sthe answered, Sthe sizwe n I were watching tv I told Sthe to hang up but she refused so I had to talk to him.

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "yes"

Nelo: "I'm leaving in the morning"

Me: "have a safe journey" he sighed

Nelo: "nana please I've given you enough space I can't leave things like this between us"

Me: "what do you want from me"

Nelo: "please come outside I need to see you"

Me: "sorry but I can't" I knew going out to him seeing him will just make me realize how badly I missed him the last couple of days and how much I just wanted to be held by him have him tell me that everything will be fine

Nelo: "Lelo please"

Me: "I'm sorry but I cant" I dropped the call

Sthe: "why are you making yourself suffer Lelo"

Me: "excuse me"

Sthe: "look at you cuz you basically a walking dead body all you do is cry and zone out during conversations"

Sizwe: "just let her be Sthe"

Sthe: "no sizwe she needs to forgive him, whatever it is that he did you two can work it out"

Sizwe: "she knows what she wants and it not him"

Me: "shut up both of you" just than the intercom rang I went to the kitchen to respond

Me: "yes"

Nelo: "nana please come out"

Me: "just go home sbonelo"

Sizwe: "yeah just go!" I realised the button on the intercom

Me: "what the fuck is wrong with sizwe nxa!!" I pushed past him ran out the house by the time I got to the car his car was already speeding off. I went back in the house as soon as I entered the lounge I walked towards sizwe and gave him a sharp slap.

Me: "don't you ever and I mean ever get on my business like that" I pointed at him with my finger clicked my tongue and went to my room, debated with myself if I should call him to come back or not. I missed him I wanted to forgive him but I also wanted him to suffer a little I figured fuck it and slept.

.

Woke up Saturday morning woke up in my moms arms guess she got home late last night I shook her lightly and she woke up.

Me: "morning" she kissed my forehead

Mom: "morning baby" she sat up leaned on the headboard and I laid my head on her thighs

Me: "when did you get home"

Mom: "late last night, was concerned about you dolly says you haven't been feeling well"

Me: "I'm fine you know how aunt can get"

Mom: "wana see a doctor"

Me: "but I'm seeing you now" we laughed

Mom: "you know what I mean"

Me: "I'm fine mom really"

Mom: "get up so we'll go out it been awhile since we did something together" I beamed at her

Me: "really"

Mom: "yep"

Me: "cool" we got up she went to her room I did my bed took a shower got out lotioned put a light make up got dressed in bum shorts vest and an oversized unbuttoned shirt.

Went to the kitchen to make food but found everyone there eating around the counter.

Me: "morning fam"

Them: "morning" they chanted back but sizwe didn't I rolled my eyes took a plate and sat down after dishing up for myself.

Sthe: "tjo that's a lot of food"

Me: "can't you keep your mouth shut nje for a minute" sizwe chuckled

Mom: "you've gained weight Lelo look at your tummy" tears fell from my eyes but I quickly wiped them off

Me: "I didn't know there was something wrong with me eating"

Sizwe: "so why you crying"

Dolly: "just let her be, eat Lelo it's ok" I nodded and ate I zoned out from the conversations until I heard someone calling out for me

Me: "yeah"

Mom: "you have a call"

Me: "who is it"

Mom: "Sbonelo" I shook my head

Me: "I'm eating" she talked on the phone thn dropped it

Mom: "finish up so we'll leave" I stood up

Me: "I'm done lets go" we got in the car and drove off.



Me: "where we going?"

Mom: "pava"

Me: "cool" I played music

Mom: "what's going on between you and sbonelo"

Me: "nothing"

Mom: "he said he was about to leave and wanted to say bye but your phone is off"

Me: "oh ok" a single tear fell from my eye he actually left without seeing me, mom shook her head.

Mom: "I told you that boy would hurt you lelo"

Me: "mom please"

Mom: "you should be with someone your own age"

Me: "can we not talk about this please"

Mom: "just don't like this" I nodded "where's Tyson"

Me: "I don't know" I couldn't hide the irritation from my voice

Mom: "oh"

Me: "how's dad"

Mom: "mxm" I laughed "his your father not mine call him and ask him how his doing" ever since dad's woman moved in with dad mom is forever angry at dad it actually really funny especially they both in the same room.

Me: "yes ma'am" the rest of the ride was filled with light conversations and lot of singing along, we got to pava and got off the car.

Me: "I'm hungry"

Mom: "we ate just before leaving home"

Me: "yea so"

Mom: "ayi Lelo"

Me: "you my mom you supposed to feed me it my right" she chuckled

Mom: "oryt than" we had late breakfast and mugg n bean, did lot of shopping, watched a movie, ate again and got take aways for dinner. When we were about to leave mom wanted to go to the pharmacy so I went to pick n pay for some snacks than we met back

at the car. We drove back home after going past mom's flat, we arrived at home I went to put my phone in the closet. Took a long bath got dressed in my pjs switched my phone on and ofcos missed calls and texts from Nelo. Went to watch tv with the fam but she wasn't there.

Me: "where's she"

Sizwe: "she left with Asa during the day"

Me: "oh" I took my phone and texted Nelo \*hope you arrived safely\* he called immediately so I went to my room to answer the call

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "nana hey"

Me: "you ok?"

Nelo: "I've been better how are you"

Me: "I'm ok"

Nelo: "I miss you"

Me: "you left without seeing me"

Nelo: "I tried Lelo but you didn't want to see me you even sent that Sizwe of yours to say it"

Me: "his not my Sizwe"

Nelo: "I see"

Me: "when I got to the gate you were gone"

Nelo: "you could have called and told me to come back"

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "what's done is done"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I really miss you nana and I'm so sorry for messing us up but I've learnt my lesson"

Me: "I'm sorry to"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "goodnight" she sighed and dropped the call. I went back to watching tv, we had

dinner awhile later even sthe was back. After dinner I washed the dishes and went back to watching tv n chatting, mom called me to her room a bit later.

Me: “mom”

Mom: “sit down” I sat on the bed she stood up went to her bag and came back with a rectangular box n gave it to me I read it and it was a home pregnancy test.

Me: “what am I supposed to do with this”

Mom: “go to the bathroom and pee on it”

Me: “no”

Mom: “do you want me to call your dad for you” I rolled my eyes

Me: “there we go with the dad threats again”

Mom: “just go do it”

Me: “I’m not pregnant mom”

Mom: “prove me wrong than go take it”

Me: “fine” I took it and walked to the bathroom with so much confidence, I read the instructions than did the test waited for a couple of minutes the first line appeared I breathe out if relief and went back to mom to show her but she said lets wait a bit more we talked about random things I could tell she was nervous more than I was. She took the stick and her eyes started watering she showed it to me and boom two lines.

Mom: “you stupid stupid child!!” She started pacing around her room

Me: “I’m sorry mom”

Mom: “I’m sorry mom im sorry mom my foot!!!” She gave me two hot slaps on both cheeks “we give you everything rhaa everything Lelo all you have to do is keep your legs closed and focus on school but no you thought it best if you fall pregnant twice I even offered you contraceptives but you thought you smarter than me” we were both crying ke at this time

Me: “it was a mistake” she turned red same time

Mom: “what?!!” I looked down “his dick accidentally fell into your virgina” aunt dolly came in

Dolly: “why you screaming Sihle what’s going on”

Mom: "there your daughter she's pregnant" she pointed at me looking at me with disgust  
I sat on the floor and covered my face with my hands cried harder while saying sorry  
between sobs

Mom: "your father is going to kill you and I won't even stop him" yoh I cried louder n  
harder coz my father really was going to kill me "you will tell him Lelo don't involve me"

Me: "but mom"

Mom: "but mom what I wasn't there when you opened your legs"

Dolly: "come Lelo" she gave me her hand and I took it "you two are going to talk when  
you both calmer"

Mom: "I don't want her in my house Lelo pack your bags and go"

Me: "go where"

Mom: "I don't care call that stupid boy of yours or call you dad but I don't want you  
here"

Dolly: "it late"

Mom: "I don't care I want her out of my house" she turned and gave us her back aunt  
dolly held my waist and led me to my room she opened the covers and we both got  
under them she cuddled me until I fell asleep.

.

Woke up in a middle of the night sweaty my punani was painful and wet I actually got  
up because of a nightmare, someone was rapping me as much as I tried fighting I  
couldn't win. I went to warm a glass of milk drank it and went back to sleeping.

Woke up Sunday morning with a banging headache, went to the bathroom took a  
shower brushed my teeth that when I noticed how puffy and red my eyes were. After  
lotioning I went to the kitchen made my self sandwhich and coffee got done went to eat  
in my room when I was leaving the kitchen mom got in looked at me up n down.

Me: "morning mom" she took my cup of coffee and poured it in the sink yoh I felt like  
crying right there but I didnt.

Mom: "sit down" I sat and looked at her being busy around the kitchen I couldn't even  
eat my sandwich. She boiled water and made roibos tea with honey gave it to me when

she was done.

Me: "thank you"

Mom: "mxm" she left the kitchen and I took my food to my room and ate. After eating I stayed in my room watching movies Nelo called and we spoke during the day but I didn't tell him that I was pregnant. I only got out of my room to get something to eat I couldn't be in the same room as mom her look scared the living shit out of me and aunt dolly looked at me with pity so I couldn't stand all of that.

.

Monday morning I woke up prepared for school got done had breakfast sthe n I left.

Sthe: "whats going on between you and aunt" she asked while we were waiting for our transport

Me: "nothing"

Sthe: "don't shut me out"

Me: "just don't push it unnecessary"

Sthe: "oryt" our transport came we got to school the day was just a drag soon it was over, we went back home I didn't even go to leave my bag in my room I just went to the kitchen and ate luckily aunt dolly had already prepared lunch while eating mom came in guess she didn't go back to work.

Mom: "finish up and change we need to go somewhere"

Me: "ok" I didn't even finish eating I just went to my room took a quick shower changed into sweatpants Nelo's tshirt wore my all stars fixed my braids into a bun put on a little extra make up I was still a little red from the slaps I got yesterday I went to the lounge where mom was already waiting for me.

Mom: "you gona go looking like that?"

Me: "oh I'll go change"

Mom: "no it's fine lets go" we left the ride was quiet nobody said anything until we reached the medical center mom parked and we got off. Went in mom spoke to the receptionist we were directed to the doctors room we got in and the doctor stood up it was a male.

Dr: "doctor Tolo how lovely to see you again" mom giggled

Mom: "you don't have to be so formal Mike" he chuckled

Mike: "looking beautiful as always" hhe mom blushed and giggled

Mom: "I've never been ugly even at med school" I cleared my throat

Mike: "this must be your daughter" I offered him a weak smile

Mom: "yeah and she just made me a granny at my age" they both laughed but I didn't get the joke

Mike: "now days you never too young or old to be a granny" they laughed and I rolled my eyes

Mom: "Lelo this is dr Mike his going to be your dr" I smiled but my smile didn't reach my ears he shook my head, the doctor did his thing while him n mom flirted like I wasn't there turns out I was five weeks pregnant and what I thought were my periods last month were just spotting my womp was expanding. He gave me prescription for some medication we left started at the pharmacy then went to to shoprite to do a little grocery wanted to buy lot of snack but was scared of mom I think she saw that I was a little scared and uncomfortable coz she said I should get what I want and I went wild. We left got home I took my snacks with me besides the ice cream coz it was going to melt I put some in my closet ate some while watching a movie in my room.

Must have fallen asleep coz I woke up when sizwe was waking me up for dinner I was my face and rinsed my mouth first. I got the shock of my life when I found dad sitting in the dinning tablet.

Me: "dad" he smiled

Dad: "my child" I walked to him and gave him a hug after that we sat down and enjoyed dinner over light conversation after dinner sthe and I washed the dishes. Mom asked aunt dolly, sthe and sizwe to excuse us so they left us in the lounge.

Mom: "Lelo has something to say to you" I shook my head and looked at mom with tears in my eyes

Me: "no tata I don't have anything to say"

Mom: "eyi fok of mani Lelo" I looked down and played with my nails

Dad: "Lelo talk"

Me: "I'm pregnant"

Dad: "you what lelothando"

Mom: "she's pregnant" dad flew across the room got to me and held me by my tshirt lifting me up like my feet left the floor yoh I started crying and apologizing he threw me back on the couch but I landed on the floor with my butt.

Dad: "is it that Ngcobo boy" I nodded "I'm going to kill him"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Mom: "just stop apologizing Lelo!!"

Dad: "your brother is in varsity doing his 3rd with no child but you out here in grade 10 getting pregnant"

Me: "it was a mistake"

Mom: "enough with that mistake shit"

Me: "sorry"

Dad: "what's done is done" we both looked at him like he was crazy

Me: "oh"

Dad: "have you told him coz they are things that needs to be discussed between the two families and he needs to take responsibility"

Me: "I told him last night dad but he dropped the call on me he said he doesn't want a child and he wants nothing to do with me Ive been trying to call him the whole day but his phone is on voicemail" my mom put her hands on her head

Dad: "that son of a bitch" I have no idea why I said that

Mom: "it's fine then let him be like that we don't need him or his family"

Dad: "Lelo lelo Lelo!! What have you put yourself in"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Dad: "look this is all too much for me I'll see you guys tomorrow"

Mom: "you just gona leave your daughter like this and run to thar woman"

Dad: "Nosihle don't start with me please"

Mom: "mxm" she left us there

Dad: "it going to be ok" he kissed my forehead and left. I went to my room took my phone and put Nelo's number on reject list and slept. you what lelothando

### **part 53 I am scared of lonely**

Time went by Nelo didn't come home or maybe he did at times but I wasn't aware. After he realized that his calls went going through he started calling with different numbers almost everyday, he called the landline one day sthe answered but when she told me it was Nelo mom took the phone from her and swore at telling him never to call again he has put me through enough already luckily she didn't mention that I was pregnant. Ndumo had an obortion Leon forced her to do it after telling her that the only reason he was with her was to make me jealous hha she was devastated didn't come to school the whole week. This one day after school we saw bheki's car parked outside the school gate so obviously sthe went to it but got a surprise of her life when a woman came out the car with the hugest stick ever and beat the living shit out of her. She kept screaming "you will learn to stay away from people's husband, you think you little slut can take my husband away from my kids and I" it was the scariest thing ever. Learners took videos with they phones the lady didn't stop hitting her until the securities came. You would think that stopped her but nah in fact Bheki took her to sandton for shopping and to "heal" that weekend. Sizwe finally left he went back home and it was a huge relief. By now everyone in my family knew I was pregnant, when I told Siyabulela he dropped the call on me and didn't answer my calls for over a week but after that he was totally supportive so was dad it was actually surprising how dad was handling the whole situation.

.  
It was March schools were closed for the first term so I went to visit mom for the holidays. She called everyday while I was at home and came home often, was officially dating Dr Mike Williams yes his white and has one son Kyle his mom passed years back. Kyle was doing his 1st year in LLB at Howard. Trust me when I say Kyle was hotness on sticks tall with hairy long legs, pink thick lips, full on 8 packs he liked wearing those



muscle showing vests and I didn't complain. I was almost 3 months pregnant and Kyle was obsessed with my little bump I was showing just a little ever since we met we talked everyday he would come see every weekend and took me out. Nelo eventually stopped calling but I missed him everyday I think what drew me to Kyle more was that he resembled Nelo a little and he filled the void that Nelo left even though it wasn't totally filled. The nightmares got worse every night I hardly slept unless I was sleeping with mom, at times I'd be laying in a pool of my own blood and a baby would be crying, sometimes it would be of someone rapping me.

This one day Kyle and I were going out just for lunch and games at gateway so I woke up around 11 mom had left for work already I took a bath, while lotioning Kyle called.

Me: "hey"

Kyle: "hope you ready Lelo coz I'm downstairs come on buzz me in"

Me: "shit uhm ok" I buzzed him in ran to my room wrapped myself in a towel, went to unlock the front door and he got in immediately"

Kyle: "my baby mama" I giggled and we hugged

Me: "you wish you were this is all me" I brushed my tummy and he chuckled

Kyle: "I just knew you were not done" I rolled my eyes

Me: "you look nice" he was wearing skinny jeans and those lose muscle showing vests with sneakers

Kyle: "baby girl I always look good" we laughed

Me: "you so gay"

Kyle: "I wish I was so things wouldn't be complicated" I looked at him puzzled

Me: "what's up"

Kyle: "oh nothing go on child go get ready" I chuckled

Me: "yes sir" I walked off

Kyle: "be comfortable no heels or dress" he shouted after him. I got dressed in shorts lose top and sandlas. Went back to the lounge Kyle was drinking juice while singing along to some HipHop song I joined him we sang and danced until the song was over he pulled me to him and kissed my head.

Kyle: "you look beautiful lets go" we left for mhlanga we went for car racing had lot of fun I won ofcos even though he let me I don't care. We went to gateway for lunch and during lunch Kyle kept on looking at me in a funny way.

Me: "what's up why you looking at me like that" it was starting to make me feel uncomfortable

Kyle: "I just love you" I smiled

Me: "well I love you too"

Kyle: "I don't mean it like that Lelo I mean I love you like i want to be in a relationship with you"

Me: "yoh!"

Kyle: "come on Lelo don't act like you haven't noticed" honestly I did notice how things were slowly changing between us

Me: "mom n your dad are together"

Kyle: "that has nothing to do with us"

Me: "maybe in your culture but in my culture that's pure disgrace" he chuckled

Kyle: "Lelo the life you n your family live is not like that"

Me: "but still Kyle I cant"

Kyle: "so it not because you don't love me" I looked at him and we both laughed

Me: "I do love you" I didn't love him in that way I loved him yeah sure but it wasn't how I loved Nelo. I knew that if I didn't agree to be with him he was going to stop with all the affection and attention coz things were going to be awkward between us he got off his chair came to me and kissed me the kiss was absolutely amazing we pulled off after awhile.

Kyle: "wow I've been wanting to do that for awhile now" I giggled shyly he paid and we left.

We played arcade games afterwards we went to the cinema just so I could get my popcorn not to watch a movie. We walked around the mall widow shopping I was eating my popcorn Kyle had his hand around my waist he would kiss there n there. I dropped my popcorn when my eyes met Nelo's.

Kyle: "baby you ok" his eyes filled with concern the same time tears filled my eyes

Me: "I ... I'm sorry" my voice was braking

Kyle: "it's ok hun will go buy you another one come lets go" he kissed my forehead and wiped my tears the whole time Nelo was staring at us. We turned and started walking back towards the cinema and than I heard it

Nelo: "nana wait" I didn't stop walking until I felt his hand grab my arm Kyle and I both turned to look at Nelo.

Kyle: "can we help you"

Nelo: "sorry man I thought she was someone, someone who once said she wouldn't leave me, someone who understood that she is my weakness" I swallowed hard he looked at me with hurt in his eyes

Kyle: "sorry bro" Nelo nodded "let's go get my baby some popcorn" he touched my tummy yoh I felt like running away

Nelo: "wow congrats on your baby" Kyle beamed at Nelo

Kyle: "thank you bro you too kind"

Nelo: "how far is the ma'am"

Me: "Kyle lets go home im tired"

Kyle: "what about the popcorn" I shook my head I just wanted to leave the mall immediately

Me: "I don't want it anymore" Kyle held my chin and gave me a soft peck on my lips I wished the ground could open up and swallow me I looked at Nelo his face was red and veins were popping out, we started walking away from him.

Nelo: "how far is she Kyle" kyle chuckled

Kyle: "just almost three months" we walked away left him standing there

Me: "the fuck Kyle why would you tell someone you don't know that" yoh I was beyond angry

Kyle: "it not big deal baby"

Me: "mxm just take me home"

Kyle: "come down you getting angry is not good for our baby" I chuckled and hit his

shoulder lightly, he drove home while on our way home my phone rang it was an unsaved number.

Me: "hello"

Voice: "you replaced me already" my heart started beating fast

Me: "what do you want"

Nelo: "is that my child"

Me: "no it Kyle's"

Nelo: "don't fuckn lie to me Lelo mani!!!"

Me: "I'm not"

Nelo: "admit that's my child or I swear to God Lelothando I will crush this car right into that car you in" I started sweating

Me: "where are you"

Nelo: "behind you" I looked behind and the car right behind us flicked it's light

#### **part 54 I am scared of lonely**

Me: "you wouldn't dare" he laughed sarcastically

Nelo: "but oh honey I would and you know I would" I was just being stubborn for no reason coz knowing Nelo he really would drive straight into us.

Me: "ok fine will meet and talk about it" I dropped the call he called again but I didn't answer he drove past us and hooted after that an sms came through my phone from the same

\*there is no way you playing happy family with my child Lelothando and funny thing is you know id kill that white boy without thinking twice or even blinking\*

That sms made my body shiver kyle kept looking back n forth between me n the road until we got to mom's flat.

Me: "you coming in"

Kyle: "what was that phone call about"

Me: "nothing to worry yourself about"

Kyle: "don't do that Lelo don't shut me out now"

Me: "it nothing and please don't push"

Kyle: "mxm" really didn't have the time for his shit I just got off the car opened the entrance door and waited for the lift.

Kyle: "thought I was coming in why did you just walk off like that" I sulked

Me: "I'm tired my feet hurt and you irritating" he let out a loud laugh his eyes even started watering

Me: "stop" I hit his shoulder playfully the elevator opened he pushed me in and pressed against the wall kissed me so hard I found myself moaning I got wet immediately.

Kyle: "sorry for irritating you" he mumbled while kissing me I pushed him and breathed out loudly

Me: "God" he smirked

Kyle: "it nice to know I have that kind of effect on you" I rolled my eyes the lift opened at our floor we got out. We got in I went to my room to change into sweatpants and Nelo's tshirt went back to the lounge Kyle had started a movie with snacks n ice cream I kissed his cheek and sat next to him resting my head on his lap.

Kyle: "you look cute baby but that's a boy's tshirt"

Me: "yeah it belonged to Siya" he nodded we continued with watching a movie would kiss every now and than.

Me: "you know our parents can't find out about us right"

Kyle: "why not"

Me: "mom would flip out"

Kyle: "so what she will get over it"

Me: "ayi no Kyle please don't mess up my relationship with my mom"

Kyle: "so now I'm your secret" I sighed

Me: "don't look at it like that" I sat on him with my legs around his waist we kissed deeply our tongues dancing together his hands was on my butt while mine were playing with his hair, he stood up with me still on top of him I wrapped my legs around his waist tightly he walked us to my room and laid me on the bed we kissed again he went down kissing my neck I let out a groan and he smirked at me by this time my punani was an

amazon river I needed hot steamy wild sex but I wanted Nelo's dick not Kyle's I pushed him off me and he looked puzzled.

Kyle: "relax ok" I nodded he took my tshirt off kissed me from my neck down to my stomach when he reached my stomach he looked at me and smiled I smiled back at him shyly.

Kyle: "how's my prince doing"

Me: "you mean my princess" he chuckled and kissed my stomach

Me: "come up" there was no way I was about to sleep with someone else, he came up and held me from behind.

Kyle: "you know I love you right"

Me: "I know Kyle" he pecked my neck softly

Kyle: "sleep I know you tired"

Me: "mom can't find you in my bed Kyle" he sighed

Kyle: "I know" he held me until I slept.

Woke up awhile later Kyle wasn't in my bed I went to the bathroom washed my face and rinsed my mouth got back to my room wore my tshirt. Went to the lounge found mom Kyle and Mike there

Me: "oh hello Mike"

Mike: "hey baby girl how are my two favorite girls" I giggled

Me: "we good, when is my next appointment" he laughed

Kyle: "I think it's gona be a boy" he winked at me and I smiled

Mom: "as long as it healthy a baby"

Me: "I don't wana know the gender"

Them: "why not" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "I don't know I just don't"

Mike: "you my patient so I'll respect that" mom smiled at him mischievously

Me: "you not allowed to tell my mom doc" they all laughed

Mom: "freshen up we going out for dinner and we need to head home tonight"

Me: "home?"

Mom: "your father wants a meeting"

Me: "oryt" I went to take a quick shower got out wore a skinny jean vest and hoody with all starts tied my natural hair into a bun put on my make up took my phone and went out to the lounge we left for dinner at musgrave after dinner we all left I drove with Kyle because mom and Mike wanted to go pass somewhere.

Me: "you going back to your flat or home"

Kyle: "home"

Me: "cool"

Kyle: "do you need something at your moms flat or should I drive straight home"

Me: "flat first" he drove there I got in packed a few things and we left. The ride felt along I even slept and woke up twice before we got home. He dropped me off and left I went to sleep as soon as I got home ofcos after greeting aunt dolly and having something to eat.

.

Woke up in the morning in bed with mom guess I was crying in my sleep again it been happening for awhile now and when mom hears me she joins me In bed. I got up went to eat in front of the TV while chatting to Kyle. Got done went back to bed mom was up by now, sthe was still at her moms. I woke awhile later took a long bath the weather was bad so I wore my long sleeve tight fitting maxi dress it showed my little bump put on a beanie and wore the earrings Nelo bought for me. I went to the kitchen made tea warned some flap jacks spread butter on them went to eat in my room, watched a movie while eating. Must have felt asleep coz I woke up when aunt dolly was waking me up.

Me: "mama" I sat up and brushed my eyes

Dolly: "come to the lounge" she left I got up made the bed went to rinse my mouth went to the lounge, I got the shock of my life like my heart stopped beating for a couple of seconds and I started sweating. Right there seated in the lounge was my mom, dad, Nelo, nelo's mom n dad and Nelo's uncle, I felt hot and dizzy I wanted to faint right there.

The tension was just too much for me I greeted and walked through the lounge to the kitchen poured myself glass of water

Mom: "Lelothando come" I breathed in and out a couple of times than went to the lounge and sat on a couch next to Nelo since the others had no space.

N'Dad: "as I was saying before we are here to apologize for our son once again" he looked at his brother who nodded "Sbonelo has wrong this family once again and we sorry we didn't come earlier on" dad stood up but mom gave him a dead stare he sat down again he was beyond furious.

Dad: "you son did not just wrong my family he basically insulted us" nelo kept his cool

N's dad: "we are honestly sorry but all we ask is that we fix things our family is here humbling itself for the sake of our grandchild" he smiled but dad was giving Nelo the coldest look ever im sure in his mind he had already shoot Nelo a million times

Dad; "he ran away" he pointed at Nelo "when my daughter told him she was pregnant he said he wasn't ready for a child" everyone looked at our direction I looked down

N's dad: "sbonelo is that true" tjo the old man sounded so hurt Nelo looked at me I couldn't bare the hurt in his eyes I looked down again

Nelo: "it true dad and I'm sorry for lying to you and mom" my eyes shoot up to meet his "I was scared so I freaked out a little and abandoned her when she needed me the most I became selfish and forgot how much I love her" the entire time he said that we were looking at each other my tears were falling freely and Nelo didn't blink just to avoid his tears from falling as well

Dad: "you used her and threw her like dirt when she fell pregnant" Nelo quickly wiped a stray of tears

Me: "dad" my voice was barely a wispher

N's dad: "we were not aware that our son knew about this the whole time"

N's uncle: "can you two kids excuse us for a moment we have things to talk about and you two need to sort out your issues" I looked at mom and she nodded I stood up made my way to my room

N's mom: "what you waiting for Sbonelo an invitation" she sounded so irritated Nelo



followed me we got in my room he locked the door and stood behind it I sat on the bed. No one said anything for a minute or so he just stood there looking at me I broke out in sobs I just couldn't believe that I could hurt Nelo like that after everything that had happened between us I looked down and cried. He came and kneeled in front of me laid his head on my thighs he let it out he cried to a point where he started having hiccups he kept a on asking why and all I could do was say sorry after awhile we stopped cryin. He stood up took my hand I got up and we hugged for a very long time we only pulled out when my phone rang it was on top of the bed we both looked at it and kyle's name was flashing on the screen it rang until it stopped I sighed but it rang again and Nelo switched it off could see him trying to contain his anger he looked at me and shook his head

Nelo: "come" he led us to the bed we got on top of it and spooned

Me: "I'm so sorry Nelo"

Nelo: "why nana" I shrugged "I didn't know you hate me that much"

Me: "I don't hate you"

Nelo: "to tell your parents all those lies Lelo why"

Me: "I don't know"

Nelo: "is this about Kokesto"

Me: "mxm"

Nelo: "I said I was sorry"

Me: "why did you cover for me"

Nelo: "I love you lelothando and I know how your father would have reacted if he knew the truth"

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "we already lost one child"

Me: "please don't" I really hated talking about the miscarriage to me there was never a baby to begin with. He let go of me kneeled on the bed turned me around so I can lay with my back than lifted my dress exposing my tummy. He looked at me and kissed it another set of tears fell from his eyes.

Nelo: "thank you ma'Tolo thank you so much nana" we were both crying ke now it was a bittersweet moment

Nelo: "I'm going to love you and your mom with my all" he kissed my stomach and put his head on it the guilt I was feeling at the moment was beyond measure. he came back up and put me on top of him then held me tightly.

Must have fallen asleep coz when I woke up was alone in bed and it was dark in the room. I got up switched the light on went to take a shower got out wore my pjs and ugg's went to get something to eat luckily the Ngcobos and dad had left. Aunt dolly and mom walked in the kitchen talking and laughing.

Mom: "oh you up" I nodded "what are you eating"

Me: "flap jacks with peanut butter and syrup"

Them: "sies mani" I laughed

Me: "it actually delicious"

Dolly: "I doubt"

Me: "what did the Ngcobos say"

Mom: "they apologized for their sons fault ofcos and payed damages vowed that Sbonelo will be responsible and take care of his baby"

Me: "oh"

Mom: "they proposed marriage"

Me: "yoh!!! No"

Mom: "it not appropriate to have a second child out of wedlock"

Me: "it's not a second child"

Mom: "you know what I mean but your father told them that you too young for marriage and we can't expect you two to get married just because of a baby"

Me: "I see" I continued eating aunt dolly dished up for herself and mom we all ate in the kitchen than went to watch tv. Later on I went to my room took my phone and got under the covers I had lot of missed calls from Nelo and kyle so I called Nelo first.

Nelo: "nana hey are you ok is the baby ok" I laughed out loud

Me: "aibo Nelo" he chuckled

Nelo: "ok I'm sorry mamakhe"

Me: "I saw your missed calls"

Nelo: "yeah just wanted to check on you"

Me: "that's nice well I'm fine"

Nelo: "and SJ how is he" I giggled

Me: "I think you mean LJ"

Nelo: "nah nana that's Fuze right there you see I keep my eyes open when I come nana"

Me: "no way mother always knows"

Nelo: "why would you deny me of this though nana I still don't understand" his voice suddenly became very soft

Me: "I'm sorry" he sighed

Nelo: "it's ok nana"

Me: "goodnight"

Nelo: "goodnight nana I love you both" I dropped the call and called kyle

Kyle: "hey baby"

Me: "hey I saw your missed calls"

Kyle: "oh ja"

Me: "look Kyle we need to talk"

Kyle: "your mom called dad and told him about your baby daddy being back in the picture"

Me: "oh"

Kyle: "I love Lelo and I'm willing to fight for you I love you both with my champ"

Me: "Kyle"

Kyle: "no please don't brake up with me over this dude"

Me: "it more than just that"

Kyle: "no it not"

Me: "but Kyle"

Kyle: "no lelo you not leaving me I love"

Me: "I love you"

Kyle: “just think about who had been there for you while this guy was on the runs, I love you and goodnight” he dropped the call I let out a loud sigh prayed and sleptm sorry for lying to you and mom

## **part 55 I am scared of lonely**

The rest of the week went by fast Kyle went back to his flat during the week because of varsity Nelo called literally every hour. It was Saturday Nelo and I were meeting up so I woke up had breakfast went back to sleep like food made me sleep so it basically became a norm that after a meal I sleep mom complained until she gave up saying I’m making the child lazy and I’ll gain lot of weight but I didn’t care. Anyway Nelo woke me up I’m sure it wasn’t even an hour after I had fallen asleep.

Me: “hayi hayi” I mumbled and he laughed

Nelo: “sorry nana but please get ready I’ll be there soon”

Me: “but Nelo”

Nelo: “nana don’t start”

Me: “mxm” I dropped the call but he called immediately

Nelo: “don’t do that” I didn’t say anything and he sighed “nana”

Me: “yeah”

Nelo: “please get ready mamakhe I miss you don’t you miss me” I giggled stupidly “get ready for daddy ke”

Me: “ok I’ll get up don’t make me wait” he chuckled

Nelo: “as if” he cut the call I got up made the bed went to take a bath got out lotioned did my face fixed my ultra but left it lose. Here came the hard part getting dressed and it was a bit chilly outside so I settled for black high waisted skinny pants with a white shirt tucked in and a black biker jacket and an ankle black heel boot. Took my bag left it in the lounge went to the kitchen fixed myself a snack with a warm glass of milk Nelo called saying his outside as I was mid way with my snack. I finshed eating first went to rinse than left as soon as I got out the car I saw him standing outside his car I stood next to the gate and stared at him for a minute or so he had his hands in his pockets looking

down. His hair was freshly cut he was wearing black skinny jeans with a black overlapping tshirt navy airmax and a black biker black always looks good on Nelo and he knows it hence more than half of his clothes are black n navy. He lifted his head and saw me standing there looking at him he came towards me smiling like there's no tomorrow I met him halfway.

Nelo: "nana" we hugged and he kissed my head

Me: "hey" he dropped to his knees and kissed my stomach than came up took my hand and led me to his car,

Nelo: "you guys are good" we got in

Me: "yeah we cool"

Nelo: "was thinking we could see a doctor" I shook my head

Me; "my next appointment is in 3 weeks" he drove off

Nelo: "you suffocating my child with those pants"

Me: "aibo Nelo there's no such"

Nelo: "I think you should stick to dresses and skirts now" I clapped my hands once

Me: "ayike Mr I'm nobody's wife"

Nelo: "it was a thought"

Me: "a meaningless thought ke" he shook his head and looked at me before looking back at the road

Nelo: "you getting more stubborn and disrespectful nana" I pouted and looked outside the widow

Me: "sorry" I mumbled and he laughed

Nelo: "mom wants your number"

Me: "hha for what" he chuckled

Nelo: "you carrying her first grandchild even my older sister and brother don't have children she's excited"

Me: "ayi Sbonelo im scared of your mother"

Nelo: "well I gave it to her" I rolled my eyes before I knew it we were at margate mall

Nelo: "let's feed you" I smiled at me he got out came to my side opened my door and

took my hand I got out.

Me: "thank you" he kissed my cheek

Nelo: "where you wana eat"

Me: "id rather we get pop corn first" he raised his eye brows and looked at me I smiled shyly

Me: "from the cinema"

Nelo: "mmh oryt lets go" he looked at my hand and smiled I was wearing that bracelet he bought for me

Me: "let's go already" he was still staring at my hand

Nelo: "I love you nana" he kissed my hand and we walked in the mall hand in hand. We went to buy my pop corn than walked around the mall we went to Woolworth because I saw this nice top when we were passing by I went to take it but in a bigger size than usual it was a really nice long sleeve top. Nelo suggested we look around for more lose clothes I saw no point since my tummy wasn't big yet but I let him. We looked around the shop until we ended up at the baby's side.

Me: "Nelo lets go"

Nelo: "let's buy something first"

Me: "no it's too early"

Nelo: "it never too early nana"

Me: "not now please"

Nelo: "don't you want this child lelo" I looked at him and shook my head

Me: "mxm" I left him standing and went to the cashiers stood at the line so I can pay when it was my turn to pay I took out my card Nelo was already standing next to me he snatched the card from my hand and gave the cashier his along with a small pair of cream shoes. The cashier looked at us I just shrugged my shoulders and gave her a weak smile she took the card Nelo did his thing and we left the shop.

Nelo: "sorry about that"

Me: "just shut up please" I walked straight to spur and he was walking next to me but nobody said anything until we reached spur.

Waitress: "table for two"

Nelo: "yes please" she led us in we sat down and ordered

Me: "do you think if I didn't want want this child I wouldn't have aborted it" he cringed

Nelo: "sorry nana just that when we lost the baby you said you would be stupid to let me father your baby"

Me: "that was then this is now Sbonelo give me some credit" just than Kyle called and I answered

Me: "hello"

Kyle: "hey baby"

Me: "can I call you later"

Kyle: "just wanted to let you know that I'm coming home tonight and we having a small braai at home tomorrow so I'll come get you around midday" Nelo was looking at me with annoyance all over his face

Me: "oryt I'll be ready"

Kyle: "pheeew ok cool I'll see you tomorrow I love you" I dropped the call switched my phone to silence and put it in my bag.

Nelo: "who was that"

Me: "excuse me" he shifted from his side and came to sit next to me we were seated on those round couchy kinda chairs

Nelo: "I asked you a question nana" he clenched his jaws and held my thighs sinking his nails in I winced in pain

Me: "really Sbonelo you gona do that" our waitress came with our order we smiled at her

Waitress: "anything else"

Nelo: "we ok for now" she nodded and left

Me: "you hurting me stop" he stopped and we ate in silence, we finished eating he paid and we left.

Nelo: "do you wana watch a movie"

Me: "no I wana sleep" he chuckled

Nelo: "ok then" he held my hand we went to order pizza went to pick n pay bought a couple is things mainly snacks n flap jacks ofcos. After pick n pay we collected the pizza and drove off to his house but I fell asleep as soon as the car started moving.

Nelo: "we here" I sat up properly and rubbed my eyes "you such a bad company could never drive long distances with you" I laughed we got off I waited for him while he took the things off the car. He opened the door and as soon as I got in I went to his bedroom took off my clothes wore his tshirt and slept.

Woke up when I felt the bed move and it was Nelo hovering on top of me.

Nelo: "hey"

Me: "hi" I closed my eyes

Nelo: "I missed seeing you wake up" I opened my eyes to meet his and his eyes were twinkling "I love you nana" he kissed my neck sucking on it and I felt my clit vibrating

Me: "baby" his eyes shoot up to meet mine

Nelo: "you haven't called me that since you said you wanted space" I covered my eyes with my hands and he chuckled

Me: "yeah well" he removed my hands and kissed my eyes, kissed my lips we kissed for a long time our tongues gently massaging each other he moved from mouth and kissed my neck while taking the tshirt I was wearing off exposing my breast which were getting bigger by the way

Nelo: "mmh I love this" he kissed my breast and sucked on my one breast while playing with the other I let out a moan he spent his time on my breast before going down on me he started teasing my clit and I groaned in frustration which made him chuckle he sucked on my clit before running his tongue up n down my punani after opening my lips exposing the sensitive part his tongue went in and out me while his hand was busy with my boobs and I let out my waterfall he cleaned me up using his tongue by this time my punani was throbbing I wanted him in me immediately

Me: "baby please"

Nelo: "ok nana" his voice was barely a wispher he entered me swiftly I grabbed the sheets and moaned out loudly



Nelo: “wow” he didn’t move but smashed his lips on mine and kissed roughly than started moving slowly in circular motions I moved my waist according to his rhythm he upped his pace going in and out I sank my nails in his back as I felt a wave of pleasure exploding within me he came shortly after that laid on me for like five seconds before jumping up

Nelo: “shit nana sorry” I laughed as I tried to catch my breath

Me: “you not hurting the child baby can you relax” he pulled me to him I put my leg over his and we held each other.

Nelo: “I love you”

Me: “I love you too” we kissed and I slowly dozed off to lalaland

## **part 56 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up on top on Nelo he was already up just staring at me I closed my eyes and he chuckled

Nelo: “come on nana” I shook my head he quickly flipped us over got on top of me and started tickling me I laughed so much that I started coughing which was followed by vomit I threw up all over his bed and him, he kept on brushing my back until I finished.

Me: “sorry”

Nelo: “it’s ok nana” I gave him a weak smile and he kissed my forehead stood up went to the bathroom I got up took the bedding off went to soak it in the bathroom and found Nelo preparing a bath.

Nelo: “was going to fix that”

Me: “it’s fine”

Nelo; “sorry nana” I raised my eyebrows “come” he took my hand I was still naked he dropped to his knees and kissed my stomach

Nelo: “I see you making mommy sick in there” he brought me closer to him and held my butt

Me: “what is it with you and my stomach” he laughed

Nelo: “it’s not about your stomach nana but my lil Ngcobo in there” I rolled my eyes

“come lets bath” we took a long hot bath got out lotioned I wore his pj top and he wore the bottom. It was around midnight and my stomach was growling.

Me: “daddy” I was sitting on a chair while he was busy fixing the bed, he looked at me and smile at me while biting his bottom lip.

Me: “no no no”

Nelo: “you know how mapholoba reacts when you call me daddy” he came towards me his eyes filled with lust

Me: “I’m tired”

Nelo: “I’ll make you fell better” he picked me and threw me on the bed quickly got between my legs

Me: “I’m hungry” he kisses my neck and pressed on me harder I felt his dick on my entrance

Nelo: “I got food for you right here” just than my tummy growled and he chuckled

Me: “you see” I pushed him off me and he rolled to his side

Nelo: “nana it after midnight you can’t be serious about wanting food” I looked at him with tears in my eyes

Me: “mxm” I blinked and the tears came out

Nelo: “wow ok ... Shit nana lets feed you” I nodded he picked me up put me on his back and we went downstairs in the kitchen I sat on the high chair.

Nelo: “what are we eating”

Me: “flap jacks with peanut butter and syrup” he scowled

Nelo: “how about pizza or a proper cheese n ham sandwich” I shook my head

Me: “no thank you”

Nelo: “ayi nana you can’t feed my child that” hha it was like he put vicks in my eyes tears flew out uncontrollably he took the pizza out of the fridge and warmed it

Me: “I wana go home” he stopped pouring the juice

Nelo: “hawu nana”

Me: “my mother is a doctor Nelo but she let me eat what I want and who do you think you are”

Nelo: "stop shouting" didn't even realize I was shouting he took the pizza out of the microwave put two slices in each of the plates and gave me one plate and a glass of juice I gulped half of it same time and he smiled sat down and started eating.

Nelo: "eat" I shook my head I was not going to eat that stupid pizza just to prove a point but my stomach had other plans

Me: "why do you hate me so much" he chuckled

Nelo: "stop starving my child and eat" had no choice but to eat so I started eating I finished both slices before him and took an extra slice he was just looking at me and smiling.

Me: "mxm" I left him there and went to sleep after brushing my teeth. He joined a bit later in bed I gave him my back but he just pulled me closer to him and held me.

Nelo: "nana" he started kissing my neck and his hand went down to my punani

Me: "no"

Nelo: "please" he bite my ear softly started massaging my clit I let out a small moan but removed his hand and slept on my stomach.

Nelo: "nana I'll go make you your flap jacks please mamakhe"

Me: "no I'm full" I mumbled

Nelo: "fuck!!" He hit the pillow he kept on moving around the bed and as irritating as it was I slept.

.

Woke the following morning ofcos on top of Nelo but he was still asleep I carefully got up wore his sleepers went to the kitchen made my flap jacks and a glass of milk sat on the counter and ate.

Nelo: "you really love this thing of yours" I was almost finished

Me: "yep"

Nelo: "don't talk with food in your mouth" I shrugged my shoulders he made cereal and joined me.

Nelo: "I'm leaving today" my eyes shoot up

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "got work in th morning"

Me: "is this how it going to work"

Nelo: "what you mean"

Me: "nothing" I stood up took my dishes to the sink and washed them

Nelo; "talk to me"

Me: "there's nothing to say" he came to me and turned me so I could face him

Nelo: "I'll come home often I promise you two are the most important things in my life you can even come visit me that side" I nodded but it still didn't do anything to make me feel better about him leaving coz it wasn't about that it was about what he does when his that side how do I know there won't be another kokest or even if his not seeing someone at the moment

Nelo: "I love you Lelo and trust me nana I won't jeopardize us" I looked down but he lifted my chin and kissed me "trust me nana"

Me: " I want to"

Nelo: "than do it don't think about it just do it" I nodded funny thing was I didn't trust Nelo one bit, I've always had this mentality when starting a new relationship that I'll give my partner my full love, trust, support and respect but once you ruin one of those you have to work hard to gain it back. I finshed doing the dishes we took a shower and bapsed while showering. He took me home and as we got there kyle's car was driving in the gate.

Nelo: "what is this boys car doing here lelo and why is he driving in when even I can't do that" I laughed at him and he got angrier

Me: "you mad that he can get in but you can't" I was still laughing

Nelo; "there's nothing funny about it"

Me: "his here to pick me up for the braai" his nose turned red

Nelo: "you really testing my patience lelo" I kissed his cheek

Me: "baby relax ok kyle and I are practically brother and sister"

Nelo: "you said the same about sizwe"

Me: "that's unnecessary"

Nelo: "how are you brother n sister anyway"

Me: "mom is dating his dad who just happens to be my doctor baby we just really good friends he was there when you weren't"

Nelo: "is it my fault that I wasnt" I looked down

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "I saw him kiss you nana I saw the way he looks at you that boy is in love with you"

Me: "maybe but the feeling is not mutual daddy"

Nelo: "I hope my everything is enough to make you happy nana I really hope I'm good enough for you" I kissed him pulled out and pressed our foreheads together

Me: "I love you just you nobody else you more than good enough daddy" he nodded

Nelo: "he kissed you"

Me: "his just like that but he will stop now I'll draw boundaries with him and he will understand"

Nelo: "ok nana I love you" we kissed once again and I got out opened the gate went in, walked up to the house entered and found Kyle in the lounge drinking juice

Kyle: "baby" he stood up we hugged he tried to kiss me but I pushed him

Me: "not in my mothers house kyle" he chuckled

Kyle: "you ready"

Me: "give me 5 just to change" he was wearing shorts with those muscle showing vests of his and all stars so I figured it a chilled vibe kinda thing I went to my room freshened up wore a short lose dress and sandlas tied up my ultra in a ponytail put on make up took my bag and we left. As soon as we got in the car he smashed his lips on mine and we kissed passionately.

Kyle: "I missed you so much" he mumbled in my mouth I pulled back

Me: "I also missed you" he gave me a soft peck and drove off

**part 57 I am scared of lonely**

Kyle and I got to his home it was filled with cars.

Me: "I thought you said it was a small thing"

Kyle: "it is" he gave me a baby kiss then walked out the car to my side opened my door and took my hand I got out. He held my hand and we walked in the house through the kitchen it was filled with women mostly white we greeted and this one old woman came and kissed my forehead.

Woman: "it good to finally meet you Lelo kyle has been talking about you im his aunt Jessica" I smiled and nodded

Me: "didn't know Kyle has been talking about me"

Jessica: "oh he has" she winked at him and he chuckled he was still holding my hand when his dad walked in the kitchen I removed my hand from Kyle as soon as I saw him.

Mike: "lelo how nice of you to come" he gave me a hug and kissed my cheek

Me: "hi mike"

Kyle: "let's go" he took my hand again but I yanked it from him and gave him a dead stare which he ignored and took my hand again holding it firmly we started walking towards the backyard.

Me: "what did you tell Jessica"

Kyle: "everything"

Me: "what you mean everything" he shrugged his shoulders

Kyle: "just what you are to me"

Me: "mxm you know for a smart person ..." the backyard wasnt that packed it was mostly people around our age group some swimming while others were having conversations and drinking the older man were braaing the meat. Kyle led us to this group we got to them he pulled two chairs together we greeted he made introductions there were three guys and two girls we sat down.

Kyle: "I'll be ryt back" he kissed my cheek and left

Amy; "so how long have you and Kyle been dating"

Me: "we not dating but our parents are" they all laughed and I looked at them confused

Trevor: "really coz that's not what he told us before he went to pick you up"

Me: "he must have been joking" just than Kyle came back with a can of miller and juice he gave the juice and sat down.

The rest of the day went by mostly with Kyle fussing over me treating me like I was going to brake it was kinda irritating me. Later on he took me home as soon as I got home I warmed myself a glass of milk drank it while talking to Sthe she was back because school was opening on Tuesday, I took a shower and slept. woke up around midnight Nelo was calling just to tell me he arrived safely and that he missed us already.

Woke up Monday morning went to eat before doing anything Sthe and aunt dolly were already in the kitchen eating as soon as I sat down with them to eat I felt nauseous I ran outside coz the bathroom was too far and threw up Sthe gave me a glass of water when I was done I rinsed my mouth and drank some walked back in the kitchen after covering my vomit with sand.

Dolly: "you ok"

Me: "yeah just that this beacon smells horrible" they laughed while I covered my nose, I removed my plate from the counter made myself a sandwich sat down and ate.

Sthe: "let's go out you know relax before school start and you hardly spend time with us now outside school"

Dolly: "you two live together how much more time are you expecting Sthe" we laughed

Me: "yeah we should I'll call Asa" I wanted to call Ndumo but didn't want to ruin our day coz things between Asa and Ndumo were weird

Sthe: "great I need to do a little shopping"

Dolly: "you should get clothes to accommodate you baby bump Lelo" I stopped chewing

Me: "I'm not big yet and it still too early"

Them: "yeah you big" I touched my stomach and started crying

Me: "I don't want to have a big stomach" they laughed which made me cry harder

Sthe: "should have thought about that before you opened your legs" just than my phone rang and it was Nelo

Me: "hello" I sniffed

Nelo: "what's wrong nana why you crying" could hear the panic on his voice

Me: "nothing"

Nelo: "talk to nana is it junior" I shook my head "nana I can't see you so please talk to me"

Me: "I'm getting big" I said in a wispher and he breathed out loudly

Nelo: "but nana that's bound to happen" I let out a loud sob

Me: "I don't wana be fat and ugly sbonelo"

Nelo: "there are lot of beautiful chubby women in the world nana and you won't be fat just pregant you will still be beautiful"

Me: "come home please" he chuckled

Nelo: "soon ok" I nodded "I love you both"

Me: "we love you too" I dropped the call aunt dolly shook her head

Sthe: "poor Sbonelo" I showed her my middle finger stood up washed my plate and glass went to bath. I got out lotioned it was cold that day so I wore my black leggings black knee boots with an oversized black shirt tucked in front fixed my ultra into a bun put on make up took my bag. Went to wait for Sthe in the kitchen while having provita and jam with milk. She came down we took a taxi to Shelly center met up with Asa there.

Asa: "Lelo you gained weight over the holidays" I smiled and we hugged

Sthe: "don't mention that we don't want her crying again" I rolled my eyes

Me: "fuck you Sthe" they laughed we walked in the center

Me: what are we doing first"

Asa: "movie" we went to the cinema bought tickets luckily the movie was starting in the next 15 minutes I bought myself larger pop corn with lots of butter and sour cream and a bottle of water. We got in the movie started but I wasn't concentrating on it I was just chatting to Nelo the entire time until the movie finished. We got out went to have lunch at wimpy.

Asa: "I broke up with Qiniso"

Sthe: "oh why"



Me: “yeah I thought he made you happy”

Asa: “he got another girl pregnant”

Us: “tjo!!”

Sthe: “how you found out”

Asa: “she called me swearing at me so when I asked him he confessed everything” I brushed her back and we ate in silence a little

Me: “I’m pregnant and I’m seeing both Kyle and Nelo” I blurted out and they stop eating

Asa: “well we know that you pregnant but damn!” They laughed

Sthe: “didn’t know you had it in you to cheat cousin” I looked down and played with my food

Me: “I don’t love him”

Asa: “who”

Me: “Kyle”

Sthe: “than why you with him” I started crying silently

Me: “coz I’d rather be with him than be lonely when Nelo is not here” my voice was filled with sadness I wiped my tears away

Sthe: “but cuz...”

Me: “no don’t, don’t tell me how wrong it is coz I know” she sighed

Asa: “you need to sort it out Lelo you pregnant for god sakes”

Me: “just let me be” sthe looked at me with pity as I wiped my tears

Sthe: “I’m leaving bheki” I stopped crying Asa and I looked at each other than back at her

Us: “why” she shrugged her shoulder

Sthe: “sex is not good anymore”

Asa: “thought it was about the money” sthe chuckled

Sthe: “child I got my own money it was about the sex money was just a bonus” we finished eating split the bill and left. As we were walking around from shop to shop looking for clothes we ran into Tyson.

Tyson: “muhles wam” he gave me a tight hug and he smelt so nice

Me: "Ty hey"

Sthe: "Lelo you will catch up with us at Mr Price" I nodded and they left

Tyson: "how are you? You still look beautiful" I giggled

Me: "I'm good, what you thought a couple of months would make me ugly" he laughed

Tyson: "ofcos not, wow it good to see you again" the way he was looking at me made me blush

Me: "when are you leaving"

Tyson: "tonight actually just here for lunch with the family than im leaving"

Me: "oh oryt"

Tyson: "I'll call you we should talk there's a lot we need to talk about" I raised my eye brow

Me: "what's there to talk about Ty" he looked down

Tyson: "it still you Lelo" his tone was filled with hurt n regret

Me: "I'm pregnant Ty" he looked at me for a while as if he was studying me

Tyson: "oh wow" I looked down feeling guilty "is it still him" I nodded and he scowled "congrats I guess"

Me: "thank you" he kissed my cheek

Tyson: "I always thought it was going to be me you know"

Me: "know what"

Tyson: "the first guy you slept with, the father to your first born you know your happily ever after"

Me: "Ty"

Tyson: "it cool look I should go" I nodded he hugged me and left I went to find sthe and Asa we shopped later on went home after I had bought another large pop corn.

.

School was good my life was on track, Nelo came home twice a month made it to the doctors appointments when he could. I spent most of my weekends at durban when Nelo wasn't home my time in durban was slipt between Kyle and mom. It was towards the end of May and I was four months pregnant and showing but I was still not huge

only my stomach was getting a little big and my boobs but the other parts of my body were still the same. My face was absolutely clean I must say I looked beautiful. We had like two weeks before exams Nelo was busy at work he was supposed to come home that weekend but couldn't so after a lot of crying and begging and manipulating mom finally let me go visit me in Mpumalanga. It was Thursday morning when I woke up at moms flat my plane to jhb was leaving at 14:00 and arriving there around 14:45.

### **part 58 I am scared of lonely**

I went to the kitchen and had breakfast while chatting to Nelo he was going to pick me up at the airport and we'll drive to Mp. I got done took a long bath after shaving ofcos hha was gona get some on the reals though like my sexual drive was on another level like simple things made me so horny a simple kissing scene made my clit do moves Sthe even suggested I get a dildo since she had bought one after braking up with Bheki but Nelo shut that idea down "the only thing that is allowed to enter you nana is mapholoba (his dick) rather wait for me nana I'll give it to you in all directions" that's what he said when I brought up the dildo discussion personally I saw nothing major about getting a dildo even now I don't think there's anything wrong with owning one. I got out of the bathtub lotioned put on my matching red lace underwear, got dressed in black loose short sleeves maxi dress my gold sandlas and gold accessories. Did my make up topped it of with a dark maroon lipstick left my long braids loosely my bag was already packed. After finishing I kneeled down next to my bed and prayed for a safe journey and guidance Kyle kinda turned me into a religious person as much as he didn't go to church he made sure he pray before doing anything and I got used to it.

Mom: "you done" she asked standing by the door of my room

Me: "yeah"

Mom; "let's go than" I smiled stood up she took my bag and we left.

Me: "how's the doc" she giggled mom was really in love with Mike it was fascinating to watch them together

Mom: "his good, still won't tell me anything about the baby" yeah Mike didn't tell

anyone anything about the baby I asked him not to and he had to honor my wishes of someone wanted to know something they had to ask me.

Me: "that's good" she shrugged her shoulders

Mom: "your flight back is on Sunday afternoon ryt"

Me: "yes mom" Nelo bought both my tickets

Mom: "please be careful I know you love him and that his SJ's dad but I don't trust him Lelothando and I don't want you stressing coz it gona be harmful to sj" everyone believed my child was a boy so he was called Sj (sbonelo jr) and I let them.

Me: "you have to have a little faith towards Nelo mom please for both my sake and Sj's" she sighed

Mom: "I'm trying lelo I just don't like him for you" I looked down and wiped my tears

Me: "I understand"

Mom: "let's go to the mall before you leave" I nodded she made a u-turn and drive towards musgrave. We got there went to spur for lunch we ordered our food came and we started eating.

Mom: "you got your medication" I scratched my head

Me: "I forgot" she shook her head

Mom: "you can be careless at times Lisakhanya"

Me: "really mom"

Mom: "yeah really" we finished eating in silence she payed and we left.

Me: "are you going to go back to the flat for my medicine"

Mom: "no" I nodded and looked out the window, she stopped outside a pharmacy got out went in and came out again gave me a plastic with my medication.

Me: "thank you"

Mom: "you need to grow up lelo you going to be someone's mother soon"

Me: "it was just medicine mom"

Mom: "it not just that Lelo you can be very irresponsible"

Me: "mom stop"

Mom: "fine" the rest of the ride was filled with silence until we got to the airport it was

already 13:20 I went through the whole check in process.

Mom: "I love you and take care of SJ" she kissed my head

Me: "yes mom"

Mom: "he comes first Lisa" I rolled my eyes

Me: "yes mom I know, I love you too now bye" she nodded and left. The ride was short soon we landed in jhb I called Nelo he was already there I saw him first and walked towards him.

Me: "daddy" I was standing behind him he turned

Nelo: "nana" he picked me and spun around

Me: "baby put me down or I'm going to throw up" I said between giggles and he putted me down and we kissed long before pulling back

Nelo: "can't believe you actually here nana" he touch my tummy and smiled

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I love you nana and I missed you so bad" he pulled me to him and grabbed my butt pressing me against his hard D just the feel of it made me moan and he chuckled

Nelo: "let's get out of here" I nodded he took my bag and we left, he opened the door for me I got in and he put the bag in the boot before getting in we kissed before driving off.

Me: "how far before we get there I'm tired" he laughed

Nelo: "not that far, are you hungry"

Me: "no not really" I fell asleep as soon as we got out of the airport. I woke up because he was shaking me I sat up and rubbed my eyes.

Me: "are we there already"

Nelo: "not yet come on get up so we can get you guys something to eat" I nodded and looked out we were at a garage with steers, we got off

Me: "you go but I'll go to the toilet" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "oryt you gona meet at steers than" I went to the toilet did my business and left found Nelo sitting down at steers I went to him.

Nelo: "you done" I nodded and he smiled "you look beautiful nana" I blushed

Me: "thank you daddy"

Nelo: "I really do love you guys" he held my hand

Me: "and we love you" our number got called Nelo collected it and we left after getting wine gums at the store. We ate in the car after eating I dozed off again and woke up when the car was stopping.

Nelo: "we here nana" we got off he took my bag and we walked in the house Nelo was renting a house in a complex "welcome to my home away from home" he kissed my cheek and I giggled

Me: "I need to bath"

Nelo: "oryt come" he took my hand and led us to a bedroom left my bag there and we went to the bathroom I stood there and watched him preparing the water.

Nelo: "want me to join you" I nodded shyly and he smirked came to me, we kissed he pulled me to him as his hands went down slowly and grabbed my butt

Me: "da...dd..y" I moaned in his mouth, his lips moved from my lips to my neck he sucked on my neck while biting it lightly I lost balance but he held me and pushed my to the wall lifted my dress pulling it off my body.

Nelo: "nice" he winked at me and smashed his lips to mine again my hand went down his pants and held mapholoba he groaned tore my panties

Me: "Nelo!" He chuckled and looked at me with red eyes

Nelo: "we'll get you new ones" he picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist he unzipped his pants and slammed into me I cried out loudly while he groaned

Nelo: "shit nana" he started moving in circles I grabbed him tighter sinking my nails in his back

Me: "harder baby" he went in and out a couple of times pounding hard while I moaned and called out his name he put me down made me hold my toes and he slammed into me hard going deep from the back I screamed his name as I came instantly

Me: "bloody hell" he flexed his hips hitting all the corners hard and aggressively he grabbed my braids and my head automatically tilted back he pulled out and slammed in again but didn't move instead he breathed in and out loudly I pushed back and he

groaned I started shaking my ass bouncing it up and down he pulled my braids harder and went in n out furiously I tightened my walls he groaned and called out my name as I felt his liquids filling me up I exploded. After that we sat down on the floor trying to catch out breaths

Nelo: "I love you nana" I smiled weakly and he laughed, stood up felt the water came back picked me up walked to the bathtub we both got in and took a nice n relaxing bath. We got out wrapped ourselves in towels lotioned I sat on the bed trying to dry my braids but he jumped on the bed pulled me up and laid me down on back.

Nelo: "did I tell you how badly I missed you" he started kissing my neck

Me: "I wouldn't mind hearing it again"

Nelo: "well I missed you" he removed my towel and we kissed slowly I could feel his dick getting harder against my thighs.... We made slow passionate love after we were done every inch of my body had felt his touch and lips ..... We dozed off with him still in me

## **part 59 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up in the middle of the night on top of Nelo, I carefully got out of bed didn't wana wake him up wore his tshirt and went to the kitchen. Warmed some kfc I found in the fridge fried frozen fries finished up sat down in front of the tv watched girls of the playboy mansion while eating. Finished eating had a warm glass of milk while watching tv.

.

Woke Friday morning in bed alone I got up went to wash my face and rinse my mouth walk out of the bathroom found Nelo sitting on the bed.

Me: "morning baby"

Nelo: "morning nana how are you"

Me: "I'm ok just that my neck hurts" he laughed

Nelo: "that's what you get for sleeping on the couch for no reason"

Me: "must have fallen asleep"

Nelo: "you left me in a cold bed to sleep on a couch" he said sarcastically he was already

standing in front me could feel the heat of his breath

Nelo: "slept well" I nodded as his hand went up my thigh I was still in his tshirt with no panty my breathing hitched and he chuckled

Nelo: "I'm loving this think I should make you pregant every year"

Me: "you must be out of your mind sbonelo" he chuckled and entered his middle finger in me I opened my mouth

Nelo: "see what I mean" the cockiness in his voice could not be missed

Me: "stop" he put the second and started moving them in circles I grabbed him pressing our bodies together he ran his tongue slowly up n down my neck and that was the end of me I came instantly he took his finger out and licked them.

Nelo: "you were saying" he was smirking at me

Me: "was saying fucke you baby" he laughed and picked me up we took a shower got out I wore a short loose dress with no panty ofcos aibo panty for who for the what and the whys when I'm with my man easy access kaloku is necessary sometimes. He wore short and vest, I left him in the bedroom and went to prepare breakfast. I was almost done when he walked in the kitchen and stood behind me.

Nelo: "I need you here the house is warm and it smells homely with you" he kissed my cheek I giggled

Me: "marry me than"

Nelo: "as if you would agree"

Me: "you never know" he turned me around and looked at me to a point where I blushed and looked down

Nelo: "dad said you father didn't agree when they brought that up"

Me: "I was joking Nelo im too young for that" he lifted my chin and kissed my lips softly

Nelo: "I know that's why I didn't push" I smiled "but one day Lelothando" I stood in my toes and pecked his lips

Me: "one day" I got out of his hold and dished up for us we sat down and ate.

Nelo: "wana go out and get to see Mpumalanga a little" I finshed chewing swallowed

Me: "maybe later when the weather is a little cooler" it was hot outside at least inside it



wasn't.

Nelo: "have you spoke to your mom"

Me: "shit I forgot I'll call her as soon as I'm done"

Nelo: "the way you forget things worries me nana how are you going to write your exams" yeah well my memory was playing tricks on me but Mike said it was normal

Me: "I'll be fine I'll manage"

Nelo: "I hope so" I finished eating went to the bedroom while he washed the dishes I took my phone from my bag I had missed calls from both mom and aunt dolly, some from kyle and texts so I called mom first and she answered on the first ring

Mom: "what's wrong with you Lelothando do you have any idea how worried I've been"  
I sighed

Me: "I'm sorry mom I forgot to call"

Mom: "I told you that it must be the first thing you do as soon as your plane lands"

Me: "mom"

Mom: "just stop being irresponsible Lelo" I sniffed and wiped a tear that had fallen

Me: "mom stop shouting at me" she breathed out

Mom: "I'm sorry lelo I just worry it's not just you anymore ofcos my concern has doubled"

Me: "I understand and I'm sorry it was wrong of me to not call"

Mom: "it's ok, how are you guys"

Me: "we ok mom"

Mom: "have you eaten please eat and don't forget to take your medicine"

Me: "yes mom"

Mom: "ok I'll call you later I love you both"

Me: "we love you too" I dropped the call and sat on the bed decided to text Kyle back  
\*hey I miss you too will call you soon and im sorry I missed your call, yeah champ is still good\* I switched my phone off went to join Nelo in the lounge he was watching soccer I took the remote from him.

Nelo: "don't you dare"

Me: "but baby Sj doesn't like soccer" I was pouting he laughed so hard he started tearing up

Nelo: "is it" I nodded "ok cool change than" I smiled and changed to E!

Nelo: "so he likes these stupid reality shows"

Me: "you bet your hot ass he does"

Nelo: "know when I came in here you were asleep but nude girls were playing on the TV is there something you would like to tell me" I laughed at his facial expression it was priceless

Me: "something like" he shrugged his shoulders "there's nothing to say baby"

Nelo: "you sure" I nodded

Me: "I love you" he chuckled and pulled me to him. We spent morning cuddling in front of the tv around 15:00 he got called in at work there was an emergency at one of the power station so I was left alone. I watched tv took a nap chatted to my people later on around 20:00 he was still not back so I figured we won't be going out anymore I started on preparing dinner. He got in just as I was washing the dishes and the pots were cooking on the stove he stood behind me and held my waist

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hi daddy"

Nelo: "it smells so nice" he kissed my head

Me: "you smell like sweat and steel go shower food will be ready when you come out" he chuckled and turned me around

Nelo; "so I smell now" I nodded and he laughed "I see" he smashed his lips on mine we kissed for a while he picked me up I wrapped my legs he laid me on the counter and went down on me, he went on for awhile when I was about to come he pulled out

Me: "the fuck baby" he chuckled

Nelo: "the pots are burning"

Me: "shit put me down" he did I continued with cooking while he showered. We ate, watched tv later on I took a shower and we went to bed bapsed before sleeping ofcos.

.

Woke up Saturday morning took a shower together got out decided to spend the whole day at the mall we went to highveld mall was wearing black ripped short and a white tank top my braids tied in a bun Nelo was wearing a chino short and muscle vest we both had flops on. We first had breakfast than did shopping mainly things for his house it was too plain for my liking. We took the things in the car watched a movie had lunch after lunch we played games when we were tired we went to spur for takeaways while waiting for our order I wanted pop corn so we went to the cinema to buy it. When walking back to spur this girl in a short body hugging dress threw her arms around Nelo Girl: "my God Sbonelo baby I've missed you" she kissed him but he pushed her back and looked at her with irritation

Nelo: "Kokesto what do you want" she looked at him puzzled and looked at me up n down

Kokesto: "and than who is this" she pointed at me I just smiled at her turned to look at Nelo

Me: "I'll wait for you in the car and don't forget the order your child needs to eat"

Kokesto; "your child .... she's pregnant" I left them standing there I didn't want drama in my life SJ comes first I took my mothers words I didn't wana stress myself and put my child's life in danger. As I was walking out the parking lot consumed by my own thought I heard hoots n the next thing I was spinning in the air I landed on my head and it was lights out after that.

## **part 60 I am scared of lonely**

When I opened my eyes everything was blurry so I closed them again but I could feel that I was moving I tried to make sense of my surroundings could hear voices was able to make out Nelo's voice it was filled with panic there were also two other people

Nelo: "please nana be ok just hold on"

Voice1: "how do you know her again"

Nelo: "she's my wife" he sniffed

Voice1: "she's losing lot of blood hurry Steve"

Nelo: "she can't be losing so much blood she's pregnant" he let out a loud sob "nana please" someone opened my eyes and flashed some kind of light on me I groaned at the discomfort

Nelo: "nana"

Voice1: "she's conscious" I felt a pinching pain like a needle I opened my eyes and saw a man in a paramedic uniform and Nelo. I looked at Nelo and he looked at me his eyes filled with pain n regret

Me: "I want mom" my speech wasn't straight Nelo pressed his forehead to mine

Nelo: "it going to be fine nana please just hold on I got you ok" could tell he was just trying to be strong for me

Me: "I don't wana lose my baby sbonelo" I tried moving my hand to touch my stomach but I couldn't it was too painful

Nelo: "you won't I promise" I felt a sharp abdominal pain and it was lights out again

.

When I woke up again I tried opening my eyes but the light was too bright I closed them and opened them again it took awhile to adjust but I finally did, I looked around noticed that I was in the hospital and it was dark outside the blinds weren't closed I looked on my left side Nelo was sleeping on the chair with his head on the bed

Me: "Nelo" he didn't wake up so I shook him a bit and he did his eyes were puffy and bloody red his vest was filled with blood

Nelo: "nana" his tone was questioning I gave him a weak smile he stood up and hugged me tightly I cried out in pain and he let go.

Nelo: "sorry didn't mean to hurt you" I nodded

Me: "it's fine" he looked at me like he was searching for something

Nelo: "I'm so sorry nana really I'm so sorry I failed you again I should have been there with you"

Me: "it ok" I wanted to ask about my baby but was too scared of what he might say

Nelo: "no it's not nana I'm so sorry" he started crying hysterically he buried his face on my thighs I kept brushing his back while my tears were also falling the way he was crying

scared the living shit out of me.

Me: "Nelo" he looked up and wiped his tears

Me: "SJ" he swallowed

Nelo: "his ... His ok nana"

Me: "don't lie to me" he stood up and kissed my bandaged head

Nelo: "his going to be fine nana they just have to monitor you two for a while but everything will be fine" I nodded and touch my tummy I cried softly my baby was going to be just fine

Me: "I'm hungry" he chuckled uncomfortably than I remembered that when I walked out the mall he was talking to that girl

Nelo: "I'll get you food and call your doctor he has been calling constantly and talking to the doctor here" I nodded

Me: "what about my parents" I looked down and up again fear was written all over his face

Nelo: "they all going to be here by morning" I nodded "I'll be ryt back" with that he left I sat there staring at the ceiling I almost lost my child I could have been seriously injured I already have headache problems this is just going to make it worse. From my point of view Nelo and Kokesto but it would be hypocritical of me to go crazy over Nelo cheating on me as much as it angered me I felt like I had no right. But one thing I knew for sure was that I don't need the drama of a cheating baby daddy in my life and that my main focus should be on Sj and school. Nelo came in just as I was busy thinking about everything with a paper bag from spur he gave it to me and sat down

Me: "I'm surprised you waited for the food" that means he actually stayed there and talked to her

Nelo: "you wanted it nana what was I supposed to do"

Me: "don't ask me stupid questions" he sighed "so what did your Kokesto want"

Nelo: "can we not do this here at the hospital especially not after when I might have lost one of you guys"

Me: "whatever" I looked at him and he looked down "actually please leave I'd like to

sleep”

Nelo: “don’t be impossible nana”

Me: “don’t be irritating baby” I said sarcastically and he shook his head stood up walked to the widow

Nelo: “I’m not cheating on you I wouldn’t do that to you to us” he was already standing by the widow looking outside I had a private room, I ignored him and ate

Me: “when are you leaving”

Nelo: “In the morning”

Me: “where are you going to sleep”

Nelo: “on the couch” I nodded

Me: “where’s your car”

Nelo: “here in the parking lot” I looked at him confused

Me: “how come” he turned around and faced the widow again “sbonelo!!” I shouted out only to regret it later when my head was hurting like hell I cried out because of the pain and he jumped to my side

Nelo: “can you just relax stop with all this unnecessary tantrums” I looked at him with tears in my eyes “please for Sj’s sake” I nodded and laid on the bed he squeezed in behind me and kissed my head

Nelo: “I love you Lelo I swear I meant it when I said you and SJ are my life” I cried silently while wishing that the physical pain I was in was more intense than the emotional pain I was feeling, I prefer physical pain over emotional pain that why I prefer you him me rather than you shout at me cause words hurt more. I cried until I fell asleep even Nelo was silent but I could feel his heart beating hard n fast on my back.

.

Woke up in the morning because of shuffling and it was the nurse bring in breakfast

Nurse: “morning miss Tolo” it was an elderly lady

Me: “morning mah and please I’m Lelothando” she smiled and I returned the smile

Nurse: “I have your food here and the doctor should be in soon so I’d suggest you eat and take a bath”

Me: "oh but I don't have my toiletries with me" she nodded

Nurse: "your uhm husband said he will be back with it he left like an hour ago" just than my mom and dad barged in

Mom: "oh Lelo wam" she threw her arms around and I winced in pain

Dad: "slow down Nosihle you hurting her" she looked at me and wiped her tears than touched my face, the nurse greeted my parents and walked out

Mom: "oh was so worried"

Me: "I'm ok mom"

Mom: "how's Sj I need to see the doctor that was helping you"

Me: "I thought you were coming in with dr William" Mike was dr William around dad, mom looked at dad who just looked at her with that "don't fuck with me look" she looked down

Mom: "his caught up at work"

Dad: "what happened Lelothando and wheres that boy and who the hell allowed you to come me without my knowledge" he roared and looked back n forth between mom and I

Me: "dad please"

Dad: "you not married to him what business do you have coming all the way from durban to here"

Mom: "not now please! She doesn't need the stress you giving her"

Dad: "don't tell me Nosihle" Nelo came in just as dad was shouting and froze at the door for a minute after noticing my parents were in the room.

Nelo: "uhm morning" he stood near the door with my bag and dad flew to him punched him twice Nelo landed on the floor

Me: "dad!! Stop ... Please" he picked him up and grabbed him by his tshirt like he was nothing

Me: "mom stop him" she just stood and looked at Nelo with disgust, Nelo could have fought back and actually beat my father coz he was way stronger than dad but he didn't even try the whole time dad was hitting him he just kept on apologizing

Mom: "just stop it you two you stressing my child" dad stopped Nelo was on his knees with blood gushing out of his lips and nose I tried getting off the bed so I could go to him but mom pressed me down and gave me a very very scary look like my mom's look could make you stop eating no matter how hungry you are

Nelo: "I'm sorry mr Tolo"

Dad: "shut up just shut up!!"

Mom: "get up sbonelo" he stood up "come here" he came to the bed and stood across mom with the bed in the middle of them "look at her" he didn't "look at my daughter sbonelo she's in a hospital bed she almost lost my grandchild because I was stupid enough to trust you with both their lives"

Nelo: "I'm really sorry" tears fell from his eyes

Mom: "this will be the last day you ever lay your eyes on her until she gives birth even after that the only thing that you two will share is Sj nothing more nothing less"

Me: "but mom"

Nelo: "I'm sorry but I can't do that I love your daughter and she's the mother of my child"

Dad: "you will shut up" he point at Nelo with his middle finger

Mom: "you will see her once the child is born before that you have no relation to her"

Me: "you can't expect us to break up mom"

Mom: "you better shut up Lelothando if you know what's good for you my patience with you is running out"

Me: "mom" Nelo and I looked at each other crying

Mom: "sbonelo leave and don't look back"

Nelo: "no no I can't" dad came towards Nelo and I noticed that Nelo's hands were forming fist and his jaws clenched

Me: "Nelo leave" he looked at me torn

Nelo: "but nana" I looked away

Me: "please leave" there was no way I was going to let him hit my dad

Nelo: "I love you nana I love you both I meant what I said" he left



## **part 61 I am scared of lonely**

I sat there with tears falling freely while my parents were talking like nothing happened

Me: "I hate you" my voice was barely a whisper they stop talking and looked at me

Mom: "we doing this for you Lelo" I sniffed

Me: "I want to rest please excuse me"

Dad: "stop acting out Lelothando"

Me: "I'm actually not acting out dad I just want to be alone" I turned and slept on my broken arm giving them my back

Mom: "lelo we doing this for SJ" I didn't say anything and there was silence for awhile until the door opened I turned with the hope it was Nelo but to my disappointment it was the doctor

Doc: "oh morning"

Dad: "morning doc we her parents" he nodded and they all shook hands

Mom: "how is my daughter and my grandchild"

Doc: "besides her broken arm and head injury she's going to be fine there's no swelling on her brain but your granddaughter will .."

Me: "granddaughter?" The doc nodded

Mom: "it's a girl"

Doc: "sorry but I thought you knew"

Mom: "it was supposed to be a surprise" the doc gave an apologetic smile

Dad: "a granddaughter" he smiled and looked at mom they looked at each other for awhile until the doctor cleared his throat

Doc: "as I was saying I even told her doctor back at home she will need close monitoring coz her placentae got distributed" I zoned out after hearing some medical terminology I eventually drifted of to sleep.

.

Woke after an hour or so with mom sleeping on the couch, I got up took my bag limped to the bathroom took a shower and got dressed in sweatpants and vest, looked my phone but couldn't find it so I took mom's from her bag but some papers fall out and

curiosity got the best I read them and it was tests results mom was two weeks pregnant my jaws dropped to the floor mom was pregnant I put the papers back in her bag took her phone and called Nelo

Nelo: "hello"

Me: "baby" he kept quiet for a couple of seconds than sniffed

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "how you feeling I'm so sorry nana" I sighed

Me: "I'm ok daddy I just miss you"

Nana: "when are you leaving"

Me: "I don't know"

Nelo: "let me know when your parents leave so I can come check on you guys"

Me: "I can't find my phone"

Nelo: "it broke I'll get you a new one before coming there"

Me: "how will I tell you than"

Nelo: "ask anyone to lend you they phone"

Me: "oryt I love you baby"

Nelo: "I love you more nana"

Me: "sorry about what my dad did"

Nelo: "it ok I'd the same for my daughter" I smiled and touched my stomach

Me: "I have something to tell you" I said excitedly and he chuckled

Nelo: "what's that" just than mom woke up

Me: "later I got to go"

Mom: "was that sbonelo" I nodded "Lelo you need to listen"

Me: "just stop mom ok please" she huffed

Mom: "guess we have to change Sj to LJ" I smiled she stood up and we shared a warm hug

Me: "I love you mom but please don't come between Nelo and I"

Mom: "I'm done talking about this lelothando you will stop seeing that about after my

granddaughter is born you can do as you please”

Me: “maybe you should focus on your pregnancy” I mumbled while walking towards the bed

Mom: “what was that Lelothando”

Me: “nothing mother”

Mom: “I thought so” I took my food and ate drank my medicine by time I finished dad was back

Me: “when are we leaving”

Dad: “tomorrow morning” I nodded “let’s go Nosihle”

Me: “where are you guys going”

Mom: “hotel we need to rest a bit we going to come back at night and you getting discharged in the morning”

Me: “lend me your phone for a minute mom”

Mom: “not if you calling Sbonelo”

Me: “mom”

Mom: “what”

Me: “just want to talk to Siyabulela”

Dad: “we didn’t tell him you here Lelo he has exams”

Me: “I hate it when you guys do this”

Mom: “do what”

Me: “think for us and take decisions for us mom please give me your phone”

Mom: “we just want what’s best for you two” she gave me her phone

Me: “I understand” I sent Nelo an sms saying my parents were leaving and deleted it than called siya

Siya: “mom” I giggled

Me: “I’m not your mother” he laughed

Siya: “little sis how are you”

Me: “I’m at the hospital” mom and dad gave me dead stares “I’m ok though just got in an accident”

Siya: "what happened n how's SJ"

Me: "car hit me and LJ is ok"

Siya: "LJ its a girl"

Me: "yep"

Siya: "oh wow lil sis, so you almost met God" we laughed

Me: "almost hey"

Siya: "how are you Lelo like really" his tone was softer and filled with concern

Me: "I'll be ok bro I just miss you" I started crying

Siya: "I'll be home soon I'm almost done with exams I also miss you"

Me: "I love you"

Siya: "love you too Lelo ka mama"

Me: "bye" I dropped the call and gave mom her phone she was already wiping her own tears

Dad: "can you two stop crying" we looked at him "you just overly sensitive for no reason"

Me: "dad"

Dad: "let's go Nosihle im tired Lelo we going to see you later at night" he kissed my forehead and they left. I switched the tv on and played a music channel while stuffing my face with junk

Nelo: "hey nana" he was standing by the door watching me I smiled and he walked toward the bed kisses my cheek and I grabbed his face and kissed him we kissed for a very long time until someone cleared they throat we looked back it was the nurse

Us: "oh sorry" I looked down and Nelo chuckled

Nurse: "just came to check on you and tell you that lunch is about to be served"

Me: "oh but I'm not hungry so I'll skip it"

Nurse: "sorry ma'am but your mother gave strict instructions that you should be given lunch and she placed her order after breakfast" I rolled my eyes in irritation but smiled at her

Me: "oh ok" she did her thing and left

Nelo: "I missed you" I pulled him by his tshirt until our faces were about an inch away from each other

Me: "kiss me please" we kissed to a point where his hand found it way into my sweatpants he shoved his two fingers in while his thumb was massaging my clit I moaned in his mouth as I came all over his fingers he took them out and licked them while smirking

Nelo: "I love making you come nana" I smiled shyly

Me: "I love it when you make me come" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "when are you getting discharged"

Me: "tomorrow morning and we going back home"

Nelo; "I'm sure you will never come back here again I'm sorry nana everything was ok and I just had to mess it up again"

Me: "it ok and it not your fault I'll come back your life is this side Nelo and I love you so I will come back I have to but only after I've given birth" he nodded

Nelo: "I understand"

Me: "I love you" he lifted my vest and kissed my stomach

Nelo: "I love you and SJ" I giggled

Me: "think you mean LJ baby" he beamed at me

Nelo: "it's a girl" I nodded "really nana"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "seriously nana we having a baby girl" I nodded and he kissed me "wow my little princess"

Me: "our little princess"

Nelo: "symbol of our love nana" he looked up to avoid tears from falling and kissed me "my girls I love you guys"

## **part 62 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo stayed with me at the hospital until late he left before my parents came coz he didn't want to disrespect them he bought the same phone as the one I was using so my

parents wouldn't take notice luckily my SIM card was good. We left the following morning dad dropped me off at home after dropping mom off at her flat. My exams came I wrote well even though studying was a challenge coz as soon as I'd open my books I'd fall asleep even when studying while seated on the desk I couldn't even take anything with caffeine. My results were surprisingly well considering my situation I was back to my average of 75 %. Nelo and I kept in touch he called almost every hour if I was not writing although we hadn't seen each other since the whole accident I missed him terribly it got so bad that I'd literally cry every time he called. I had all these emotions going on that I didn't even understand or let alone knew how to handle. I ended things with Kyle since mom was pregnant even though she hadn't told us, I didn't love Kyle I was just with him because I wasn't with Nelo at first he was just so loving and caring that even when Nelo and I got back together I couldn't break up with him so with mom being pregnant we were practically family. After the accident my pregnancy was such a nightmare I suffered from so much pain at times I'd even spit it got so bad that Mike even suggested termination but Nelo and I didn't even entertain his suggestion I was in and out of the hospital. By the time I finished my exams I was staying with mom I traveled from Durban to Port Shepstone everyday when I was writing with some papers I'd go home the night before an exam if mom could get away from work. I finally finished my exams and officially moved in with mom for the holidays she was also looking for a house it was draining going from this showing to that showing but she still couldn't make up her mind and it was frustrating. Nelo's mom called often to check on us she was a very sweet and soft woman talking to her was humbling. Siyabulela came home after his exams we spent our school holidays in Durban with mom I had fun being spoiled by my brother every time we went out to the mall we'd come back with some clothes for LJ even though I didn't want anyone buying her clothes I had no choice I guess I just believed in the whole superstition that if you buy a child's clothes before she/he is born you might miscarry. With all the difficulties that I was going through I was very scared that I might lose her I was always anxious and I hated it with Nelo it was worse for him we even wanted to resign at work and move back but ofcos that wasn't

smart thinking. Him being in Mpumalanga was the worst thing for our relationship but I understood. My insecurities shot up to the highest level but he always managed to reassure me telling me how LJ and I were his life at times it worked but sometimes it didn't. My nightmares got so bad that I'd wake up wet from sweating mom didn't know what was causing the nightmares so she kept on saying I should see a psychologist but I'd shut her down every time. Nelo and I survived on cellphone sex and masturbation hard times calls for desperate measures.

It was now July and I was six months pregnant every week that had passed gave Nelo and I a reason to be thankful for. My stomach was huge one would swear I was pregnant with twins but luckily I wasn't that big it was just my stomach and my ass. It was a Saturday night one of those rare times that mom gets to work a night shift I was chilling in front of the tv eating ofcos with everything that I had eaten I still wanted pop corn not even microwaved pop corn we had some pockets in the kitchen mom made sure she stocked up on pop corn and flap jacks I just wanted one from the cinema. I ended up crying like sobbing loudly like someone was dying until I heard a knock on the main door I ignored it for awhile but the person wasn't going away I went to open and it was a beautiful short girl in boxers and vest I was still crying but silently.

Me: "can I help you" I sniffed but she just kept on staring at me weirdly I became uncomfortable when I was about to close the door she spoke

Her: "sorry uhm" she pushed her long dreadlocks back "I heard you crying so I just came to see if everything is ok" I wiped my tears

Me: "I'm fine"

Her; "no you not" I sighed and started sobbing again "do you mind letting me in" I shook my head

Me: "I don't know you"

Her: "I'm Londy from next door I just wana make sure you ok" she smiled revealing her W gold tooth I opened and let her in she chuckled when she saw all the junk food on the sofa

Londy: "bf dumped you" she asked jokingly and I shook my head "than what's wrong"

Me: "I want pop corn" I mumbled and looked down while she tried so hard to hold her laughter

Londy: "I got seeds in my room"

Me: "I don't want those I want some from the cinema"

Londy: "it's the same thing"

Me: "no it's not"

Londy: "pregnancy" she mumbled while shaking her head

Me: "what you know about that" she laughed

Londy: "oh nothing sweetie and I don't plan to"

Me: "oh"

Londy; "change I'll also go change than we can go to musgrave and get you the pop corn" I looked at myself and I was wearing Nelo's tshirt and panty

Me: "really"

Londy: "yeah I'll be back in five" she left I went to change into my loose maxi dress and flops tied my ultra into a pony tail rinsed my mouth and went to wait for her, she came in wearing skinny jean all stars and hoody.

Londy: "let's go" I got up locked we left for musgrave

Londy: "so you stay with your mom there I've seen you a couple of times and with that white bf of yours"

Me: "oh yeah" she laughed

Londy: "just that" I shrugged my shoulders "what grade are you in"

Me: "10" she looked at me and back at the road

Londy: "but you already pregnant"

Me: "that has nothing to do with you"

Londy: "oh sorry didn't mean it like that"

Me: "I see"

Londy: "you not gona ask about me"

Me: "tell me what you want me to know" she laughed

Londy: "well i stay at the flat been staying there since my first year this is my third year



in architecture at DUT” I nodded

Me: “that’s nice”

Londy: “you not interested neh” I looked at her shyly

Me: “sorry I just need my pop corn do you mind spending up” she laughed

Londy: “I see bhabha is controlling you hard” I just smiled at her and didn’t say anything until we got to the cinema bought my pop corn and she got herself sour worms and bottled water

Me: “thank you” I took a handful of pop corn and ate it she was looking at me in fascination

Londy: “what are you going to do now at your place”

Me: “probably sleep”

Londy: “let’s take a walk”

Me: “to where” she shrugged her shoulder

Londy: “I don’t know maybe we could go to the beach”

Me: “yeah sure cool” she nodded we left for north beach left out shoes in the car and took a walk while talking and laughing about random things it was all fun until I tripped and fall on my ass

Londy: “sorry” she gave me her hand I took it and she pulled me up

Me: “thank you” I landed on her very flat chest it was like she had no boobs at all she grabbed my neck our faces only an inch apart every fiber in me said pull back but I felt paralyzed

Londy: “you so beautiful”

Me: “thank you” she closed her eyes and came even closer to me but I moved away from her face removed her hand from my neck and she opened her eyes

Londy: “uhm sorry Lelo”

Me: “it’s ok but can we please go back” she nodded and we left the whole ride back to the flat was filled with awkward silence we got to the flat got off went up

Londy: “I’m sorry I don’t know what happened”

Me: “it’s cool” I closed the door and locked went straight to my room got naked took

my phone and got under the covers sent Nelo a text

\*i love you baby and I really miss you please come home\*

I put my phone under the pillow and slept

### **part 63 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up the following morning with a banging headache and covered in sweat. I got up made my bed and went to bath had to run out of the bathtub coz my phone was ringing nonstop it was Nelo calling

Me: "daddy" he laughed

Nelo: "morning nana"

Me: "how are you I miss you so bad"

Nelo: "I'm ok nana I just really miss you I can't take it anymore" I sighed

Me: "I know the feeling"

Nelo: "is it possible for me to see you today" for some reason my heart kinda skipped a beat

Me: "how .. Are you in dbn" he chuckled

Nelo: "not exactly

but I'm in Richards Bay"

Me: "doing what there and why am I hearing about this now"

Nelo: "I thought I was going to be busy for the whole weekend"

Me: "oh so you were not planning on seeing us"

Nelo: "but nana I..."

Me: "no don't I understand sbonelo"

Nelo: "I'll call you when I get there please try to find a way to get out of the house"

Me: "I'll see" my tone was surprisingly low

Nelo: "I love you nana and I was just here for business nothing more I'd never do anything to ruin us again" I sighed feeling stupid

Me: "I know"

Nelo: "I'll be there soon"

Me: "ok we love you" I dropped the call went to drain the water and took a shower got out lotioned wore knee length medium sleeve dress showing my bump a little with 3 inch heel pumps tied my ultra into a bun put on makeup took a small bag packed my pjs a maxi dress and sandals along with my toiletry bag whether he had work tomorrow or not I didn't care all I knew and cared about was that I need him I need to fall asleep and wake up next to him. I went to the kitchen mom was still asleep I made myself flap jacks with peanut butter and milk went to eat in front of the tv just as I was enjoying my breakfast there was a knock I went to open and there stood Londy in chino shorts n short sleeve shirt with vans

Me: "uhm hi" she just smiled

Londy: "Lelo morning" I nodded "you look beautiful"

Me: "thank you so do you" she smirked

Londy: "thought we could get breakfast so I can apologize properly for last night"

Me: "uhm" I looked away "no I'm good im already eating" she looked disappointed than I remembered that I needed a way out of the flat "actually I could do with breakfast" she smiled

Londy: "neh" I nodded

Me: "let me get my bag"

Londy: "I'll wait here" I quickly went to rinse my mouth and knocked on moms door

Mom: "lelo" she got up rubbed her eyes

Me: "I'm going out with Londy from next door mom" she sat up

Mom: "since when do you have friends here"

Me: "mom" she stood up wore here gown and sleepers

Mom: "come I wana see this friend of yours" I rolled my eyes and followed her when we got to the door Londy was still standing there leaning on the wall mom looked at me questioningly

Londy: "hi mrs Tolo" I raised my eye brow at her

Mom: "you a lesbian"

Me: "mom" I looked at her in disbelief while Londy laughed

Londy: “uhm yes ma’am” mom nodded

Mom: “oryt have fun bring her home early”

Londy: “I will” she left I went to get my bag and we left “that’s a big bag” I smiled at her

Me: “it just an overnight bag”

Londy: “over night?”

Me: “yep”

Londy: “am I missing something here”

Me: “nope not at all” she nodded and drove to sun coast

Londy: “wimpy” I nodded we went there and sat outside and ordered

Londy: “you really are beautiful Lelothando”

Me: “even though I’m pregnant”

Londy: “it makes you glow” I smiled just than my phone rang and it was Nelo

Me: “hello”

Nelo: “I’m in DBN nana”

Me: “I’m at sun coast wimpy”

Nelo; “with who nana”

Me: “a friend”

Nelo: “I hope so I’ll be there soon I love you nana ok” I giggled and dropped the call

Londy: “so when you going back to the home”

Me: “when school opens” we continued having random chats while laughing she was really funny our order came as we were about to start eating I saw Nelo walking towards us I stopped eating and stared at him my man is hot though and as always he was in black the girls seated next to us pointed at him while whispering and giggling he finally got to us he took my hand making me stand up and kissed the living shit out of me holding my waist our bodies pressing together I let out a small moan before he pulled back leaving me weak

Nelo: “nana”

Me: “baby” we smiled at each other

Nelo: “I missed you” Londy cleared her throat Nelo moved a bit from my body

Nelo: "hi" Londy stood up and offered Nelo her hand and he shook it

Londy: "Londy"

Nelo: "Sbonelo her baby daddy" he said in such a cold tone and I pinched him but he just kissed my forehead

Londy: "didn't know you were joining us" they both looked at me and I just shrugged my shoulders

Nelo: "are you done eat nana"

Me: "no we just got our orders" he nodded and signaled the waiter who came instantly

Nelo: "can we get an extra chair and ice tea lemon"

Waite: "yes sir" he quickly brought the chair we all sat down Londy and I continued eating while Nelo had his ice tea we finished eating in awkward silence Nelo insisted in paying so he paid and walked out the restaurant to the parking lot Nelo had his arm around my waist the whole time

Me: "I'll see you later Londy"

Londy: "but your mom said ..." I cut her off

Me: "yeah I know but I'll call her so it cool" she looked at Nelo who just looked annoyed

Londy: "oryt than" she kissed my cheek Nelo grabbed my waist tighter

Londy: "let me know when you back"

Nelo: "for what good reason bra" could just tell that he was frustrated could even see his veins starting to show

Me: "Sbonelo!"

Nelo: "mxm" Londy left us standing there

Me: "what was that all about"

Nelo: "I don't like her"

Me; "you don't have to she's not your friend"

Nelo: "Lelo"

Me: "no sbonelo you can't just do that"

Nelo: "she wants you"

Me: "just because she attracted to girls doesn't mean she finds me attractive"

Nelo: "you really don't see it nana"

Me: "see what"

Nelo: "that girl, sizwe, Lindo even that crazy ex of your leon and tyson"

Me: "stop being dramatic and take me home my feet are killing me" he chuckled

Nelo: "what were you thinking wearing those shoes" I punched him lightly

Me: "just wanted to look nice for you daddy" he brought me closer to him

Nelo: "even in all stars and sweatpants you still look beautiful nana" he kissed my forehead "come" we went to his car he opened my door and went to his side and drove off

Me: "you drove all that way to here"

Nelo: "had lot of running around so I needed a car" I scowled

Me: "what were you doing in Bay"

Nelo: "just some business nana"

Me: "why won't you tell me baby"

Nelo: "I will when it all goes right" I nodded as a single tear fall but I quickly wiped it off

Me: "you not cheating on me right" he looked at me before looking back on the road

Nelo: "I would never do that to you nana I promise"

Me: "I hope so"

Nelo: "stopping doing this to yourself nana it not good for you or for lj" I nodded

Me: "when are you going back"

Nelo: "tonight"

Me: "how coz I'm sleeping over" he chuckled

Nelo: "oh I didn't know"

Me: "well now you know"

Nelo: "guess I'm leaving tomorrow than"

Me: "good" I kissed his cheek and he laughed

Nelo: "I'm sure there's no food at the house"

Me: "neh" he nodded

Nelo: "mom wants to see you"

Me: "she told me" he chuckled

Nelo: "she likes you" I smirked at him

Me: "what's not to like"

Nelo: "getting cocky nana"

Me: "with you it comes naturally" we stopped at pick n pay bought some things and went straight to his house as soon as we entered I went to his room changed into his tshirt and sweatpants got on the bed and tried falling asleep but he woke me up and got on top of me

Nelo: "you tired" I nodded he took my pants along with my panty off "how tired"

Me: "really tired" his tongue found it way to my punani and the rest is history after bapsing I slept while he got some work done.

Woke up awhile later with him staring at me

Me: "baby" I sat up and rubbed my eyes

Nelo: "hi"

Me: "why you staring at me like that"

Nelo: "I just love you"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "come down I made lunch"

Me: "pass me that tshirt"

Nelo: "no go get it" I shook my head was a little self conscious about how my body was looking at that moment even though I didn't have stretch marks my stomach was still big as well as my boobs and my nipples looked funny

Me: "please get it for me"

Nelo: "why you hiding your body nana" I slid on the bed pulled the cover up and turned giving him my back

Me: "please give me just a minute Nelo"

Nelo: "what you mean"

Me: "leave the room" he didn't instead he got under the cover and held me brushing my stomach

Nelo: "I love you ok" I nodded "I love your body I always want it nana"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "you have a beautiful body nana you always have and it looks even better now"

Me: "no it doesn't" he made me turn and got on top of me he kissed me from my lips to my neck and when he got on my stomach he laid his head on it

Nelo: "my princess" he kissed my stomach sucking it and leaving love bites all over it "I love you nana all of you"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "good not get up so we can eat I'd like to fuck you senselessly" I swallowed hard

Me: "I'd love that very much"

Nelo: "let's eat first"

Me: "but I'll get bloated daddy"

Nelo: "you know what it does to me when you call me that" I pulled him up smashed my lips to his my tongue invaded his mouth while my hand went in his boxers grabbing his d and he groaned

Nelo: "fuck it" he flipped me over putting a pillow under me and got in from behind and fucked me senselessly when we were done he dressed me in his tshirt we had sandwiches and juice in front of the Tv. We were still watching tv while cuddling when his phone rang and he answered

Nelo: "mom" ... "I'm fine" ... "At my house" ... "Yes I'm here" ... He sighed "it wasn't planned" ... "Ofcos not" ... "I'm with her" ... He laughed .. "Yes mom" ... "Ok mom bye" he dropped the call and shook his head

Nelo: "mom says we should come over for dinner the whole family will be there"

Me: "I'd rather not"

Nelo: "why not nana please"

Me: "I wouldn't even know what to wear"

Nelo: "you have clothes here"

Me: "that don't fit anymore"

Nelo: "nana please"



Me: "fine" he kissed

Nelo: "thank you" we continued watching tv and snacking later around five we took a shower got out I wore my navy maxi dress with my sandals tied my hair into a messy bun put on light make up and wore nelo's black biker while he wore a black skinny with a black long sleeve tshirt and navy air max we left for margate on our way there mom called

Me: "mom"

Mom: "Lelo where are you"

Me: "I'm fine mom"

Mom: "I didn't ask you that child"

Me: "I'm with sbonelo mom"

Mom: "if anything happens to my grandchild lelothando mmh"

Me: "mom we fine really nothing is going to happen"

Mom: "tell that boy to bring you home now"

Me: "mom please"

Mom: "I'm going to work Lelo and I better find you home when I return"

Me: "yes mom"

Mom: "I love you guys"

Me: "I know we love you to" she dropped the phone and I sighed

Nelo: "you mom really doesn't like me"

Me: "she will eventually she's bound to"

Nelo: "I doubt but ok"

Me: "at least LJ and I love you"

Nelo: "that's more than enough" he put his hand on my stomach only moved it when he needed to change the gear until we got there. He got off opened my door and took my hand we knocked and someone screamed come in we got in and everyone was in the lounge talking while having juice there was his mom, dad, Sfundu and a lady which I hadn't met before so I assumed it was his sister and his other brother Kwandile

Nelo: "family" his mother got off the couch and hugged us

N's mom: "wow you getting big and you glowing" I smiled at her and Nelo kissed my cheek

N's dad: "son n lj's mom" everyone laughed but me

Sfundo: "nana ka Nelo" I rolled my eyes

Me: "Sfundo" kwandile stood up and shoulder hugged Nelo when he was about to hug me Nelo cleared his throat and kwandile put his hands up while laughing

Nelo: "nana that's my sister Sethu" she was still sitting down so she stood up and looked at me up n down I shifted uncomfortably

Sethu: "she's just a child sbonelo im sure she's about Sfundo's age"

Nelo: "and that has nothing to do with you Sethu" she twisted her lips while playing with her nails

Sethu: "just saying you could do better than this" she pointed at me "spoilt brat"

N's dad: "Siphosethu you better shut up before I smack some sense into that brain of yours" she clicked her tongue and walked out

Nelo: "see why I don't come home when she's around mom"

N's mom: "sbonelo please Lelo my child im sorry she's just like that" I smiled at her

Me: "it ok"

Kwandile: "Sethu is just bitter"

N's mom: "come food is ready we were just waiting for you two" we all followed her to the dinning and sat around the table Sfundo went to call Sethu from her room I assumed we ate dinner over light conversations while Sethu was busy on her phone and kwandile kept on looking at to a point where it made me uncomfortable after dinner

Nelo and I did the dishes while we were busy with them his dad called for him so kwandile came to help me at first there was just awkward silence until he broke

Kwandile: "so how's school"

Me: "it's ok"

Kwandile: "you love my brother" I smiled at the thought of Nelo and blushed

Me: "a lot" our eyes met and he kinda looked disappointed

Kwandile: "I see you know Lelothando there's nothing more attractive than a pregnant

woman” I didn’t know what to make of that

Me: “oh ok” Nelo came back and held me from behind giving me a soft peck on my neck

Nelo: “hope kwandile is not giving you trouble”

Me: “not at all” I lied

Kwandile: “come on little brother what would I do to your nana”

Nelo: “I hope so big brother coz you know I’d kill you and I wouldn’t eve hesitate”

Kwandile: “not if I get you first remember everything you know you learnt from me” I

looked at them talking about killing each other like they were discussing the weather it was disturbing Nelo laughed sarcastically

Nelo: “keep telling yourself that big bro” Kwandile kissed my head while his eyes were kept on Nelo I looked at Nelo and he was turning red

Kwandile: “see you some other time little bro gotta go to my house my bitch is waiting for me” he patted Nelo on the shoulders and left. Nelo and I finished the dishes in silence after that we joined his parents and Sfundu in the lounge his mom made tea and muffins after that we left I slept and woke up when we were at his place we got off went in side I changed into his tshirt washed my face and brushed my teeth. Went back to his room found him on the bed looking down still dressed I got on the bed as well

Me: “baby”

Nelo: “yeah nana”

Me: “what’s wrong”

Nelo: “what did Kwandile say to you” he turned to look at me his eyes were red

Me: “nothing”

Nelo: “don’t lie to me Lelo”

Me: “I swear” he stood up went to the bathroom I just got under the cover and slept

## **part 64 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up but kept my eyes closed when I felt the bed move Nelo got in on his side I had my back on him. He brought me close to him burying his face on my neck the heat of his breath was making my clit do some weird dance move

Nelo: "nana" I didn't say anything he put his thigh between mine and rubbed my clit trust my body to respond to his touch "nana I know you up" I still didn't say anything and he sighed "I'm sorry nana" I muffled a moan as he kept on rubbing my clit and sucking on my neck "I love you maka Lj" he shoved two fingers in me and that was the death of me I cried out loud and he chuckled he pulled out his fingers

Me: "nelo!!!" He laughed so hard and moved from me while laughing

Nelo: "so you not sleeping" I turned and faced him he was in stitches

Me: "mxm" I pouted and he just kissed grabbing my hair hard deepening the kiss while his tongue was exploring my mouth I moaned in his mouth we made love and fell asleep in each other's arms.

.  
Woke up Monday morning still in my man's warm arms he was still asleep breathing softly with his lips slightly open I kissed his lips before getting off the bed went to take a shower got out wore Nelo's tshirt and sweatpants tied my ultra into a ponytail went to the kitchen made breakfast for the both of us he came in just as I was sitting down in front of the TV with my food it was a cold rainy day

Nelo: "hey nana" he kissed my forehead

Me: "your food is in the oven"

Nelo: "thank you" he went to take it came back and we ate

Me: "when are you leaving" he finished chewing

Nelo: "already called in sick so I got 3 days off which means I'll have to go back Wednesday nana" I beamed at him I still had a week before school opened

Me: "really daddy" he smiled and nodded "thats great"

Nelo: "your mom is going to kill me" I sighed

Me: "I'll call her" he nodded and kissed my forehead "why do you always kiss my forehead" he laughed

Nelo: "coz I love you" he kissed it again "I love doing it" kiss "you my beautiful nana" kiss I looked down he lifted my chin and pecked my lips softly

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "love you more" I rolled my eyes and he chuckled "that's debatable" he tried making his voice sound like mine and we laughed, continued eating when we were done he went to wash the dishes while I went to the bedroom so I could call mom she answered quickly

Mom: "Lelothando"

Me: "mom how are you"

Mom: "I'm fine how's lj"

Me: "she's ok I think"

Mom: "you still not home .... Why"

Me: "I need Nelo mom LJ and I need him I love him"

Mom: "you don't need him Lelo you never have you got us your family"

Me: "his my family as well" she sighed

Mom: "just come home"

Me: "mom"

Mom: "if you stay there even one more hour I swear lelo"

Me: "I'm coming back Wednesday"

Mom: "don't even bother coming back" she dropped the call but I called her back immediately and she answered

Mom: "what lelo eh what!!!"

Me: "please calm down"

Mom: "Lelo"

Me: "I love him mom you out all people should know what I mean" she sighed

Mom: "I hate him" my heart broke and I started crying

Me: "he has never done anything to you" I said between sobs

Mom: "what he has done to you is enough to make me hate him"

Me: "I love him I've forgiven his for everything like you did dad"

Mom: "that's different"

Me: "I see"

Mom: "there's nothing to see here Lelothando I hate that boy and I don't want him

anywhere near you or LJ”

Me: “that’s not your choice to make”

Mom: “you will see”

Me: “I love him mom shouldn’t that count for something”

Mom: “it doesn’t” she dropped the call and I let out a loud sob sat on the floor cried hysterically Nelo came in the room and rushed to me kneeled in front of me

Nelo: “what’s wrong nana what’s going on” his voice screamed panic “is it LJ is” I just cried harder in him arms “talk to me nana please” the idiot laid me down and took off my pants along with my panty opened my legs and looked at my punani like he was examining me then came back up after dressing me I was still crying but not as hard

Nelo: “nana talk to me”

Me: “I don’t understand daddy” I said between hiccups

Nelo: “what’s going on nana”

Me: “why does mom have to be like this when it comes to you” he huffed

Nelo: “what did she do” I shook my head

Me: “not now maybe later”

Nelo: “I respect your parents nana but my patience is running thin” there was so much coldness in his voice

Me: “don’t talk like that”

Nelo: “I love you nana when you hurt I see red”

Me: “I get that”

Nelo: “they really pushing it nana”

Me: “please take me to bed I got a headache” he pulled me up we got under the covers and cuddled eventually I fell asleep.

When I woke up I was alone in bed I got off the bed went to wash my face and rinse my mouth went out the bedroom found Nelo in the kitchen sitting on the high chair with his head on the counter and his hands on his head I walked around the counter stood in front of him

Me: “baby” he raised his head and looked at me with red eyes

Nelo: "nana .... You up" I nodded "how was the nap"

Me: "good I guess, what's wrong baby"

Nelo: "maybe we should take a break"

Me: "wh ... What"

Nelo: "it's for the best"

Me: "did I do something wrong" he looked down before standing up and coming to stand in front of me Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "but I'm just not good enough" tears started falling from my eyes

Nelo: "you more than good enough"

Me: "you leaving me" I started hyperventilating "I'm pregnant and you leaving me"

Nelo: "nana come down" I pushed him but he didn't move

Me: "I'm pregnant with your child!! You leaving me now that I'm ruined" I sat on the floor as I felt a sharp pain on my chest

Nelo: "nana come down" now I was crying and seriously hyperventilating felt like my chest was closing in everything became blurry

Nelo: "nana please" he smashed his lips on mine I held on to his tshirt while trying to bring my breathing to normal as he kissed me deeper busy mumbling sorry I pushed him off me tried getting up but was failing until he got up and took my hand so I could stand up

Me: "thank you" I went upstairs locked my self in his room went to the bathroom filled the bathtub with water poured wild rose bubble bath got in the water tried calm down but couldn't the amount of emotional pain I was feeling was to great I got out without even draining the water as I was taking out my toothbrush I saw his shaving kit I took out the blade went out the bathroom to the bedroom sat on the bed while naked with the blade for a minute before getting under the cover I started cutting my thigh on the upper side at first it was really painful but not as bad as the emotional pain I was feeling I went on to cutting myself but deeper the emotional pain was slowly getting over powered by the physical pain that I continued cutting myself until I couldn't feel the emotional pain by the time I stopped the sheet was red I drifted to sleep woke up when

I felt someone shaking me and screaming my name I opened my eyes slowly only to see nelo's panic face

Nelo: "what the fuck nana" my eyes shut down again but he slapped me so hard that they popped open immediately I sat up fast held my throbbing cheek

Me: "why the fuck would you do that"

Nelo: "are you stupid Lelothando ei"

Me: "you hit me"

Nelo: "so you cut yourself now is that a new trend that I missed out on"

Me: "you have no right to slap me"

Nelo: "if you wana die better give birth to my child first"

Me: "I wasn't trying to kill myself even if I was it has nothing to do with you remember you dumped me"

Nelo: "coz I hate seeing you fight with your mother because of me I hate tears on your face" we were both screaming at each other

Me: "you didn't have to leave me"

Nelo: "I'm sorry I just don't know what to do anymore"

Me: "fuck you Sbonelo fuck you I threw a pillow at him he ducked pulled me to him and fucked me into obedience by the time we finished we were both huffing and puffing

Nelo: "this starts and stops now nana please"

Me: "yes" he kissed my forehead and pulled me up he changed the sheet. Took me to the bathroom we took a shower got out I wore sweatpants and hoody he wore the same we rushed to the shops went to woolworths I got some clothes we bought food as well went back to his house spent the rest of the day n night in front of the TV under the blanket cuddling late at night we went to sleep.

.

Woke up the following morning we took a shower got up dressed in a short loose dress while Nelo wore shorts n tshirt. We went out for breakfast after breakfast we went to med center I had an appointment with Mike we got there waited for like 10 minutes before getting called in. As soon as we walked in Mike stood up and hugged me after



kissing my cheek

Mike: "hun how are my two girls doing"

Me: "we ok just tired" Nelo cleared his throat "oh Mike this is my bf sbonelo Ngcobo, nelo well you've heard about my doc" they shook hands

Mike: "so you little lj's dad" Mike and Nelo hadn't met before

Nelo: "yeah that's me" after the small convo I went to change and got on top of the bed as Mike pulled up the gown he gasp

Mike: "what happened to your thighs Lelo"

Me: "nothing"

Mike: "that's a lie and you know it" he looked at Nelo "did you do this to her"

Me: "ofcos not why would you think that"

Mike: "than explain this to me"

Me: "I was hurting I cut myself" he cursed

Mike: "is this something you do often"

Me: "no it was the first and last time"

Mike: "that's a lie it not the last"

Me: "it is"

Mike: "I'm telling your mother"

Me: "no no no please don't"

Mike: "I have to and you might need to go for counseling"

Me: "it was the last time I swear please don't make it w big deal" he sighed

Mike: "don't do this to yourself" I nodded he went about his business our little angel was doing just ok Nelo broke down when he heard the heartbeat and saw our LJ moving around. After our session we went back to his place as we pulled up to his gate there was a car parked there.

Nelo: "the fuck does he want here" he opened the gate the car drove in we followed it Nelo got out opened my door I also got out I went in the house while he went to check on whoever it was in the other car. I went to the kitchen get a glass of water just than I felt someone breathing on my neck

Person: "nice legs" i stood frozen at the same spot until the person moved a from me I turned only to say Kwandile standing there smirking at me Nelo came in and came to me

Nelo: "kwandile why didn't you tell me you were coming"

Kwandile: "wanted to surprise my little bro and his baby mama there's nothing wrong with that" just than a talk dark skinny girl walked in wearing the shortest skirt ever with a very tight top her breast all out she looked at me up n down like she was sizing me up

Nelo: "should have told me"

Kwandile: "doesn't matter now that I'm here how about some lunch there nana ka Nelo" the girl was still standing there

Nelo: "she's not your maid"

Me: "it's fine I'll prepare something" Kwandile laughed

Kwandile: "see it fine but was joking I brought pizza n wine"

Girl: "I need the bathroom"

Kwandile: "oh this is my current Promise, promise that's my brother sbonelo and his gf lelo" I smiled at her

Nelo: "I'll show you the bathroom" he started moving towards her but I held him

Me: "Kwandile can show her im sure he knows where it is" Kwandile laughed and took her to the bathroom

Nelo: "what was that about now" his voice filled with amusement

Me: "don't start" I left him standing and went to our bedroom for a nap

## **part 65 I am scared of lonely**

I couldn't fall asleep I could feel someone's eyes on me but I kept on thinking it was Nelo until I heard him speaking

Nelo: "what are you doing in my bedroom"

Kwandile: "just came to check on her"

Nelo: "why?.. You can't be staring at her like that Kwandile"

Kwandile: "she looks so peaceful" Nelo sighed

Nelo: "I love her Kwandile please stay away don't mess up my relationship with her"

Kwandile: "what you mean bro you know I would never" he actually sounded shocked

Nelo: "I know you slept with Nobuhle that time you hosted a party at your house I didn't say anything because I didn't care" Kwandile laughed

Kwandile: "she was a loose bitch and you knew it" they both laughed

Nelo: "Lelo is my life bro I don't want you messing with her head and feelings she's very fragile at the moment"

Kwandile: "why do I always end up with sluts that are not even worth my sperms anywhere else but their mouths" they both laughed

Nelo: "because that's how you like them"

Kwandile: "I want lelo"

Nelo: "the fuck Kwandile" Kwandile chuckled

Kwandile: "I meant someone like her now"

Nelo: "don't do that bro stay away from her"

Kwandile: "you need to relax bro"

Nelo: "no man fuck you" he sounded irritated Kwandile just laughed

Kwandile: "look at you little bro your veins are ready to pop out, I respect your relationship I won't cross any boundaries"

Nelo: "hope so coz I'd hate to have to kill you" they both laughed

Kwandile: "still can't believe you almost killed her father" my heart stopped beating for a second I wanted to get and smack him so hard but I still wanted to hear them talking

Nelo: "it took every strength in me to not pull the trigger on that idiot, how to do you beat your own child to that point I even lost my first born because of him" they kept quiet for a moment

Kwandile: "you know I can still do it for you or get one of the boys to do it" I coughed and they stopped talking for a while

Nelo: "she would never forgive me Kwandile"

Kwandile: "did you manage to set up at Bay"

Nelo: "yeah hope everything goes well I'd hate to lose that much cash" just than I heard

someone coming in

Promise: "it boring down there you guys just left by myself" someone snorted

Kwandile: "shut up I'm coming" Nelo chuckled and she left

Nelo: "you need to treat these girls better"

Kwandile: "can't I just take her into one of the bedrooms and fuck her into submission she tend to forget her place" they both laughed

Nelo: "use the bedroom down the passage I don't want to hear your moans" he laughed and walked out heard the door lock after awhile I felt him getting in the bed and pulling me towards him I let him than turned to face him he smiled and kissed my nose

Nelo: "that was a short nap" didn't know if I should ask him about what they were talking about or not so I just smiled and kissed him got on top of him we kissed for awhile before I pulled back

Nelo: "can't wait for you to give birth nana than we can try again for our second born" I laughed so hard that I ended up crying like hysterical he just held me brushing my back until I was done

Me: "I'm only in high school sbonelo and I'm no baby maker"

Nelo: "you have me" he said that like it supposed to make everything better like everything will make sense

Me: "ok" I didn't wana argue with him

Nelo: "I love you nana" he kissed my forehead and we cuddled eventually I drifted off to lala land

Woke up a bit later when I felt the bed move I sat up and watched Nelo looking for something in his closet

Me: "what are you looking for baby" he left what he was doing and jumped to bed pulling me and getting between my legs in a speed he kissed me so hard shoving his tongue in me and sucking on mine that by the time we pulled back I was left breathless

Nelo: "hey" he bit his bottom lip I felt my body trembling under him I swallowed hard

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "I love watching you sleep it such a turn on" he mumbled while busy on neck.

After bapsing we took a shower I wore jeans n Nelo's hoody even though the sun was still out I felt cold when we were done dressing we went to join Kwandile and promise in the lounge

Kwandile: "you finally up"

Nelo: "yeah" I left them there went to the kitchen made myself a peanut butter sandwich with a glass of milk when I was done I went to the lounge sat next to Nelo putting my feet on top of his thighs and I started eating.

Kwandile: "don't you like pizza coz there's more than enough" they were having pizza and wine, I shook my head

Me: "don't feel like cheese"

Kwandile: "I can go get you something else than" Nelo cleared his throat

Me: "no I'm sorted" he sat for the rest of the day watching rugby while having conversations Kwandile is a really funny character but can be really rude towards promise poor girl when she got too comfortable he would say something mean to her Nelo would laugh and I'd punch him by the time they left at night Nelo's arm was red because of my pinching. They left at night after Kwandile and Nelo cooked dinner I actually had fun. After they had left Nelo and I went to bed but I kept tossing and turning the convo Nelo and Kwandile had was seriously bothering me but I couldn't bring myself to ask him. He could tell that I wasn't asleep because he sat up and pulled on top of me I sat on him with my legs around him

Nelo: "what's wrong" I shook my head "don't lie" I sighed

Me: "I heard you and Kwandile talking while you thought I was asleep"

Nelo: "flip .. Really" I nodded "what did you hear"

Me: "everything" he sighed

Nelo: "sorry you had you hear that"

Me: "you wanted to shoot my father sbonelo why do you even have a gun?" He closed his eyes for a breif moment

Nelo: "he hurt nana"

Me: "his my father"

Nelo: "I know that's why I didn't do it"

Me: "you can't just go around hitting and shooting people sbonelo what if you get arrested"

Nelo: "than Kwandile will get me out" I rolled my eyes

me: "he might be a lawyer but he doesn't control the law"

Nelo: "don't worry about me I can handle myself"

Me: "why do you have a gun baby"

Nelo: "I need it"

Me: "for what"

Nelo: "protection ofcos" I raised my eyebrows

Me: "from what"

Nelo: "everything"

Me: "don't lie to me" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "wouldn't dream of it nana" we sat like that talking until I fall asleep.

## **part 66 I am scared of lonely**

Woke Wednesday morning opened my eyes only to find Nelo looking at me I rubbed my eyes

Me: "staring is rude" he kissed my cheek

Nelo: "I'm allowed" I giggled "slept well"

Me: "yeah and you?" He got on top of me

Nelo: "with you next to me ofcos" we kissed

Me: "I'm hungry" he got out of bed and took my hand I also got of

Nelo: "bath or eat first"

Me: "food" he walked to his closet took out two hoodies n sweatpants it was cold n rainy we got dressed and went to the kitchen he made breakfast we ate and I washed the dishes. And ofcos I got sleepy after eating so we went back to sleep. I woke up a bit later he was sitting on the bed busy with his laptop I sat up rested my head on his shoulder and he kissed my head.

Me: "what you doing"

Nelo: "just work" he closed his laptop and put it aside

Me: "you work a lot"

Nelo: "I have a daughter that's due soon"

Me: "I see"

Nelo: "plus a wife in a few years" he pulled us down under the cover until we covered our heads completely

Me: "who said I'll marry you" he kissed me lightly

Nelo: "oh you will nana even if it means I kidnap you" I laughed

Me: "you crazy you've slapped me twice there's no way I'm marrying you"

Nelo: "I said I was sorry nana" I shrugged my shoulders "are we really naming our child LJ"

Me: "nah I want my child to have her own name" just than my phone rang Nelo got out to get

Nelo: "it your brother" I took it and answered

Me: "Siyabulela"

Siya: "lil sis how are you"

Me: "I'm cool" he laughed

Siya: "cool?" I nodded Nelo chuckled "you know I can't see you right"

Me: "yeah I'm cool"

Siya: "how's lj"

Me: "she's good we thinking about naming her already"

Siya: "that's great I got a few" I put my phone on loud speaker

Me: "like"

Siya: "Rose" Nelo laughed hard

Me: "no ways"

Nelo: "I like it"

Siya: "yeah it a nice name"

Nelo: "was thinking Nomalanga Rebecca we'll call her Rebs" they laughed so hard I felt

tears wanting to come out

Me: "I'd rather stick to Lj"

Siya: "those are beautiful names Lelo Nomalanga Rose Rebecca Ngcobo"

Nelo: "there are nana you gotta admit it"

Me: "I'm not giving my child an English name and Nomalanga is for old people"

Siya: "on a serious note lelo how about Melokuhle"

Nelo: "I love it"

Me: "it doesn't sound nice"

Siya: "it does Lelo"

Nelo: "think about it nana Melokuhle Melo"

Me: "I guess it could be nice but I like Othandiwe"

Them: "perfect" I giggled

Siya: "Melokuhle Othandiwe"

Nelo: "Ngcobo" Siya laughed

Siya: "ofcos"

Nelo: "mom will love them"

Siya: "so will mom"

Me: "I hope so"

Siya: "she will come around" Nelo took the phone and stepped out the room I got up went to take a shower he joined after a few minutes

Me: "why did you do that"

Nelo: "needed to speak to him about something"

Me: "you hiding something from me" he kissed my head

Nelo: "never nana"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I love both of you, why did you tell Siya the truth"

Me: "truth about"

Nelo: "that you lied to your parents and said you told me about pregnant"

Me: "coz his my brother and I needed to talk to someone" he kissed me then took my



sponge and shower gel scrubbed me when he was done he rubbed his body on mine before scrubbing himself we rinsed and got out of the shower. Wore the same clothes I went back to bed he went to warm leftover pizza, came back with it along with warm milk and snack we spent the rest of the day in bed eating and watching movies. At night he packed his bag along with all the clothes he had bought for Ij n I and we left he dropped me off at the flat before driving back to Mpumalanga. Ofcos we spent an hour or so in the car when he was trying to calm me down I just couldn't stop the tears having to say goodbye to someone you love is really hard the thought of him being so far and LJ just made everything extra by the time he left my eyes were red and puffy. When I got in the elevator Londy was in she just brought me to her and held me without saying anything.

Me: "hi" I got out of her arms

Londy: "wana talk about it"

Me: "painful goodbyes" she raises her eyebrow

Londy: "he left you" I looked at her puzzled "you two broke up" I laughed lightly

Me: "no his going back to work" the elevator opened we got out she worked me to my door I opened got in she just stood there

Londy: "can I come in"

Me: "I just wana sleep"

Londy: "I'll watch you"

Me: "that's creepy" she shrugged her shoulders

Londy: "wana make sure you ok" I sighed

Me: "I'm fine really"

Londy: "please" I rolled my eyes

Me: "yeah sure come" we got in I locked we went to my room mom wasn't home we got in I changed the hoody to tshirt she took off her skinny jeans was left in boxers and tshirt.

Me: "control yourself" she laughed we got under the blanket and cuddled

Londy: "believe me I'll behave Nelo looks scary" I laughed

Me: "you don't wana mess with him"

Londy: "how so" I told her how Nelo beat up sizwe, leon and Lindo, how he almost crashed into a car I was in with kyle by the time I finished she was in stitches

Londy: "your man is such a character bru" I giggled

Me: "tell me about it" we talked so much that night about her life and my life I was surprised by the way it was just easy to open up to her I told her everything there was to tell things that even Asa didn't know eventually we fell asleep.

My phone woke me up and it was Nelo I answered in my sleepy voice

Me: "daddy" he chuckled

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "sorry that I woke you up just wanted to tell you that I arrived safely im about to sleep I have two hours before I have to be up for work"

Me: "sorry I made you leave late"

Nelo: "it's not your fault"

Me: "I feel bad"

Nelo: "I'll apply for transfer as soon as I can nana I promise"

Me: "having you this side would be nice"

Nelo: "just give me a little time I love you guys and I wana be thT side"

Me: "we love you too" I yawned and he laughed

Nelo: "sleep nana"

Me: "I love you" I dropped the phone Londy brought me closer to her

Londy: "ypu two really love each other"

Me: "more than words could ever explain"

Londy: "keep it that way" we went back to sleeping.

The following morning we woke up had breakfast and she left. Mom came back later that day we went home since she was off for the rest of the week and the whole of next week.

The following Monday school opened was seriously showing now compared to when we

closed everyone could see I was pregnant I attracted lot of stares and whispers the first day of school I felt like crying if it wasn't for my friends and Sthe I would have spent both lunch brakes in the toilet or the library I couldn't stand it and every time I'd see leon he would make silly comments about how I claimed to be a virgin but now I was pregnant Sthe got fed up and told him to back off just because he couldnt pop my cherry doesn't mean everyone couldn't do it I was just waiting for a proper guy not some wana be thug who thinks messing with girls is cool after that he didn't say a thing for the rest of the week. On Saturday night mom, Mike, kyle and I went out for dinner it was the most awkward dinner ever even Mike could sense something was wrong, it was the first that kyle and I had met after the break up we both didn't know how to act around each other simple affection turned into cold handshakes and stares. Mom and Mike told us that mom was pregnant with twins kyle was happy about having sibilings I was just stressed coz that meant I was stuck with kyle. After that the rest of the dinner went by normal considering the situation kyle took me home coz mom was spending the night at Mike's. The ride was filled with silence we got at home he walked me to the door as I was saying bye he kissed me roughly told me how he still cares, loves and want me but I put him in his place in such a rude way that he left looking like someone poured water all over him.

## **part 67 I am scared of lonely**

Time went by pretty fast it was the beginning of October, I was almost 8 months and boy I was freakn huge I gained 2 jean sizes I walked like I had a huge watermelon between my thighs. Mike said I was going to be due 2nd week of November since my pregnancy wasn't a smooth ride I booked early at margate hospital. My relationship with Nelo was at it worst point I needed him more than I had ever needed him but he wasn't there. He hadn't come home since mid July I hated how much I needed him how much I loved him cause what he was doing was beyond hurtful. A day would go by without him calling and when he called all he seemed to care about was the child even the 'I love you' were always 'I love you guys' he would come to KZN sometimes but stay

in Richards bay.

.

I still remember the day I called him and a girl answered his phone I was at home with aunt dolly she was making me a snack in the kitchen while I was watching tv and busy on my phone looking at my pictures I came across a picture that Sthe took of Nelo and I we were looking at each other with his hands on my tummy I was just showing a little back than we were at the beach. I started feeling emotional so I called him only to get a shock of my life, his phone rang unanswered for the first time but the second time someone answered.

Voice: "Nelo's phone hello" I didn't say anything until she spoke again "hello" I cleared my throat before speaking

Me: "hi can I speak to Nelo please"

Voice: "his in the shower id say call again later but don't bother we busy" she said with her tone filled with attitude I felt the lump in my throat getting bigger with every passing second

Me: "sorry but who am I speaking to" she laughed really hard

Voice: "ooh honey I'm his gf Ndoe"

Me: "oryt please tell him I called"

Ndoe: "honey I'd suggest you stop worrying yourself about sbonelo and worry about your unborn coz my Nelo and I want a healthy baby from you" she said sarcastically I felt my heart braking into million pieces coz the fact that she knew I was pregnant meant they really were in a relationship it wasn't a night one stand bullshit kinda thing.

Me: "ok than bye" my voice braking as the tears flew out freely she dropped the call. I felt a sharp pain going through my body I couldn't even finger out where it was coming from i screamed out loud and dropped to my knees instantly aunt dolly came running to the lounge

Dolly: "what's wrong" she kneeled in front of me I tried standing up but couldn't so she helped me up started pacing up n down trying to ignore the pain but it just got worse I couldn't even see or hear aunt dolly I became aware of her when she was holding my

arm pulling out of the door into the car when she opened the car door I felt the sharp pain peircing through again I kneeled on the ground face down ass up same time you would swear I was getting ready for some epic doggy situation. Was crying out loud aunt dolly trying to make me calm after a few minutes it passed and I was able to get in the car she drove to the hospital Mike met us at the entrance and they rushed me in his concern made me panic I could feel my heart wanting to pop out he gave me an injection could feel the pain slowly disappearing he did his ish Mike was my doctor yeah sure but it felt weird n wrong having his fingers in me while his dating my mom. Did some tests and an ultrasound turns her heartbeat normal there was nothing wrong with the both of us what I was experiencing was normal for someone in my condition but I had to stay over for the night just so they can monitor us. Mom came to check on me but had to go back to work, nelo's mom and Kwandile also came which meant Nelo knew I was in the hospital but he didn't even bother to call.

.

So ever since that day things took a left in such a speed that I didn't even know how to handle things I couldn't even finger out how n where did things go wrong. That whole month was a drag I hardly went to school but luckily mom talked to my principal and teachers they understood Ndumo was helping me keep up with my work since we were doing the same subjects she spent most of her time at home we were slowly getting back to the point where I our friendship was before she started dating leon and it was great. No one but Londy knew what was happening between Nelo and I she was there for me fully. Kwandile called every now and than to check on me but I tried my best to keep my distance when it came to him, nelo's mom was just the best ever she called everyday we went out when she had time which was like almost everyday since she's a housewife but I loved every moment I spent with her. I had an amazing support system but my heart broke every time I was alone I cried myself to sleep every night. This one time a week went by without my child kicking and I prayed every night that whole week that she dies I knew she was loved I also loved her but I hated what Nelo was doing more than I loved her I felt like it was her fault that Nelo was acting out. Cutting myself

became such healing habit I did it every time I couldn't handle the emotional pain until this one night I cut my wrist I bled so much that I could feel my body giving up but it felt so good. I had a huge reality check when I woke up in the hospital the following day with mom and nelo's mom in the room as soon as mom saw that I was up she started shouting

Mom: "what wrong with you Lelothando why would you want to kill yourself are you that selfish"

Me: "mom i .."

Mom: "mom mom raah you stupid child"

Me: "I wasn't trying to kill myself"

N's mom: "then what were you trying to do Lelo" I looked down

Mom: "what's going on with you lelo"

Me: "I'm just tired can I rest a bit"

Mom: "I got you a therapist your sessions start tomorrow"

Me: "I'm not seeing no shrink mom get that idea out of your head soon"

N's mom: "you are seeing him even if it means we have to drag you there lelo im not about to lose you and my grandchild you can forget that" I didn't say anything after that I just turned giving them my back nelo's mom speaks with so much authority.

Mom: "it only for your best interest Lelo you getting out of control"

Me: "it was an accident mom it wasn't supposed to go that far"

Mom: "what we're you trying to do" I sat up and started crying nelo's mom brushed my back softly

Me: "I can't handle it mom it hurts so bad I don't want it anymore"

Mom: "talk to us Lelo wam" I just cried harder until I ran out of tears

N's mom: "you two are going to be fine I promise you" just then kwandile barged in looking furious he was red

Kwandile: "wtf Lelo you gona kill yourself because of that stupid thing you call a man" his mom n mom turned and looked at him curiously

Me: "don't talk to me like that"

Kwandile: “no man I never thought you were the desperate type”

N’s mom: “Kwandile !!! Just shut up”

Kwandile: “mxm” just than her phone rang

N’s mom: “sbonelo ... She’s fine they both ok .... What’s going on you haven’t been home in months .... She’s been in the hospital twice already but you not even bothered .... Don’t you love them anymore.... Start acting like it .... Boy you don’t want me sending our father after you .... Good” she dropped the call and shook her head before turning to Kwandile

N’s mom: “apologize to Lelo now”

Kwandile: “mah”

N’s mom: “you heard apologize now! You have no idea what she’s going through but you quick to judge” Kwandile mumbled an apology and left

N’s mom: “I’m sorry about that just that my sons tend to think they own the world I blame their father truly”

Mom: “it ok, do you mind giving my daughter and I some privacy”

N’s mom: “oh ok it fine” she kissed my cheek “I’ll see you tomorrow” she smiled at mom and left

Mom: “is all of this because of that Ngcobo boy” she asked as soon as nelo’s mom stepped out

Me: “no mom”

Mom: “don’t lie”

Me: “everything is just too much mom this has nothing to do with sbonelo”

Mom: “I hope so” she stayed for awhile and left later, after dinner I slept I was physically well but under supervision coz they thought I was trying to kill myself. I work up the following day ate, took a bath I had a session at 12:00 with the therapist. I was busy on my phone when he came in dressed smartly looking all professional nice looking young white man.

Him: “Lelo I presume” I smiled at him

Me: “he doesn’t even know me” I mumbled in zulu and he chuckled

Him: "I do know it you just wanted to be sure" I looked down embarrassed "no it ok everyone thinks I can't hear or understand zulu"

Me: "sorry" he laughed so hard that I ended up laughing

Him: "good, now that I've seen your smile and heard your laughter let's start"

Me: "oryt"

Him: "I'm Sean Goldstone" I nodded we had an hour worth session it went surprisingly well he was laid back which made talking to him easy. After an hour he packed his bag and made some silly joke we laughed so hard I was even in tears just as we were laughing the door swung open and there stood Nelo looking really nice he cleared his throat and we stopped laughing and looked at him

Nelo: "didn't mean to disturb Lelo I was told your session would be over" he looked at Sean my heart broke when I realised that he actually called me Lelo instead of nana but I told myself I'm done crying over him

Me: "yeah it done"

Nelo: "than what is he still doing here"

Me: "that's none of your business sbonelo" he shook his head

Sean: "see you tomorrow Lelo" he walked out I went to sit on the bed

Nelo: "what was all of that about Lelo" I laughed sarcastically

Me: "it straight out Lelo now" he looked down

Nelo: "what's going on with you"

Me: "nothing im perfectly fine" I rolled my eyes

Nelo: "God dammit enough with the attitude why you gotta be so childish"

Me: "I'm being childish" I pointed to myself "if I'm so childish than leave sbonelo just dump me already come on do it" I stood up and walked towards him "go on dump me sbonelo you already got your gf answering your calls" I pushed him but he didn't move

Nelo: "you going to harm my child and I'll smack you so hard you will stop flirting and dating white boys"

Me: "at least they here for me and my child" he grabbed my neck and smashed his lips on mine kissing roughly I lost all sense and let him possess my mouth until he pulled back



leaving me horny and breathless

Nelo: "stop acting out Lelo it not good for our child" I nodded like a 5 year old his phone rang and he took it out of his pocket and answered

Nelo: "yes ... Yeah give me 15 minutes... " he chuckled "relax ... You do that .... Sure me too" he dropped the call and kissed my forehead

Me: "who was that"

Nelo: "no one important" he kissed me softly "I've missed you nana" I sighed lord knows how badly I miss him

Me: "I've also missed you" he dropped to his knees and kissed my stomach before coming back up

Nelo: "you've gotten bigger you look beautiful" I blushed

Me: "I don't feel beautiful"

Nelo: "I love you but I have to go I'll see you later on tonight or tomorrow morning" he kissed my head

Me: "I love you too" he walked out and I remained in the room feeling some tyla way

## **part 68 I am scared of lonely**

I sat on my bed crying deep down I knew I had lost him but I still had hope I dont even know why I had but I kept telling myself that I need to hold on. I couldn't just accept that I lost him to someone else after all the love I have for him was something different it wasn't like the kind of love I had for tyson or even leon my heart couldn't let go. I cried for a good 5 minutes before the door opened and in came Nelo with his mom she rushed to my side and hugged for some reason seeing nelo there just made me cry harder Nelo sat on the bed and pulled me to him I buried my face on his chest his smell just made everything come flooding back he kept saying sorry and kissing my head. Eventually I stopped crying but we remained like that for a couple of minutes until his mom came back in I didn't even see her leaving she cleared her throat I tried moving from Nelo but he held me tight his mom noticed and chuckled before coming to stand next to the bed.

N's mom: "sbonelo what did you do to her how can you just leave her in tears alone I thought I raised you better"

Nelo: "mom can you give us a minute please"

N's mom: "no it about time someone intervened before before serious harm come to Lelo or the child"

Me: "mah please just give us a minute we need to talk" she looked at both of us before shaking her head

N's mom: "fine I'll go get you something Lelo do you want anything" I looked down and mumbled pop corn they both laughed

Nelo: "with butter and sour cream right" I nodded he kissed my head

N's mom: "I better find you here sbonelo"

Nelo: "yeah mom now leave and take your mom" she laughed and left

Nelo: "what's going nana"

Me: "I should be asking you that"

Nelo: "what you mean"

Me: "you changed sbonelo .... You haven't been here to see me in months"

Nelo: "I've been busy"

Me: "so busy that it hard to pick up your phone and call me sbonelo so busy that you can spend time at the bay instead of being here !"

Nelo: "don't raise your voice at me"

Me: "sorry but come on sbonelo just be honest with me"

Nelo: "I love you Lelo like I've never loved anyone else you and Melo are my life nana you have to believe me" he sniffed I looked up and he was in tears I wiped his tears and gave him a soft peck on his lips

Me: "if you love me as you claim to love than what's happening to us"

Nelo: "nothing nana I've just been busy and I'm stressed out"

Me: "what's stressing you daddy" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "I've missed that"

Me: "I've missed you"

Nelo: "not like I've been missing you" we kissed for a long time before I pulled back I could feel his hard dick pressed against me I laughed and looked at him

Nelo: "you can't blame me nana it been awhile" I knew he was lying but I couldn't bring myself to ask him about Ndoe I just didn't want to go back to that state being in his arms and feeling his warmth was all I needed at that time

Me: "it certainly has" I kissed him lightly "I love you daddy"

Nelo: "I love you more nana .... Now tell me why are you cutting yourself again I thought we talked about that and you promised to stop"

Me: "I just can't handle it sometimes baby and cutting myself makes the emotional pain better"

Nelo: "what emotional pain are you talking about nana"

Me: "you left Nelo you might have not dumped me but it as good as if you did"

Nelo: "you talking about emotional pain just because I've been busy"

Me: "I got admitted after your gf answered your phone you didn't even bother to check on us" he sighed

Nelo: "mom checked on you guys"

Me: "I'm not having your morher's child sbonelo" he looked down

Nelo: "you right I'm sorry I guess knowing that mom is here for you guys made my priorities shift"

Me: "you always said we come first"

Nelo: "you do come first"

Me: "you cheating on me"

Nelo: "no I'm not"

Me: " I maybe young Nelo and a little naive but even im not that foolish"

Nelo: "I swear I'm not"

Me: "she answered your phone sbonelo"

Nelo: "it was a misunderstanding nana believe" a single tear fell from my eye

Me: "don't lie to me please" my tone was pleading

Nelo: "I'm so sorry nana" more tears fell "I love you so much nana it was a mistake"

Me: "please leave" he shook his head and held me "please I'm begging you sbonelo please leave I don't have the energy for this" he wiped my tears and kissed my eyes

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "no you don't love me Nelo you don't do this to someone you love"

Nelo: "don't doubt my love for you"

Me: "there is no love to doubt"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "is this because I forgave for Kokesto"

Nelo: "ofcos not nana"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I love you too nana and I'm really sorry"

Me: "it fine now please leave im done with this relationship"

Nelo: "no you not"

Me: "actually I am its toxic and I can't handle it"

Nelo: "is this because of your therapist his the one that told you our relationship is toxic" hebana he raised his voice I could here the anger in his voice

Me: "no it not him it me"

Nelo: "you not leaving me nana we have a child"

Me: "she won't be the first child to grow up with parents who are not together"

Nelo: "no nana please" he started crying

Me: "Nelo stop acting mani !" I was getting really frustrated I love him yeah sure but after my first session with Sean I realized a few things and with Nelo actually not denying that he has cheated on me once again I lost all hope even that little hope I had that maybe he will come up with w good lie and I'll believe him it vanished and I just couldn't anymore

Nelo: "nana please" he kneeled in front of me and cried harder "I love you mamakhe please" just than the door opened and in came Kwandile Nelo turned and stood up

Kwandile: "aah hi little bro didn't know you were back" he quickly wiped his tears

Nelo: "what are you doing here"

Kwandile: "came to check on her"

Nelo: "how did you even know she was here"

Kwandile: "I'm the one who found her in her bathroom"

Nelo: "you what?!!!" Ayi even I was shocked coz I didn't know

Kwandile: "yeah" he said with so much confidence that Nelo was in front of him  
grabbing him by his shirt in a second

Nelo: "are you fucking her Kwandile" Kwandile calmly held nelo's hands and removed them

Kwandile: "I still have to go to court you idiot" he tried smoothing his shirt

Nelo: "don't play games with me Kwandile are you fucking her or not" Kwandile  
chuckled Nelo punched him so hard I screamed

Me: "what the fuck is wrong with you Nelo ofcos im not sleeping with him" Kwandile  
rubbed his cheek and clenched his jaws

Kwandile: "you need to grow up sbonelo even if you don't trust me the least you could  
do is trust Lelo" Nelo looked down "I'm sorry Lelo I'll see you later" he left Nelo  
punched the wall I took my phone and called Kwandile he answered quickly

Kwandile: "you ok"

Me: "no where are you"

Kwandile: "about to reach the parking lot"

Me: "please come back" I dropped the call Nelo was looking at me

Nelo: "you want him nana neh that's why you leaving me why do you even have his  
number"

Me: "you really losing it sbonelo and not everyone left me when you left"

Nelo: "stay away from him please"

Me: "I'm not stupid" Kwandile came in and walked straight to my bed and stood in front  
of me

Kwandile: "you ok"

Me: "yeah I'm fine please take your brother with you I'm done with him"

Nelo: "nana please I said I was sorry" I looked away from him

Me: "it not enough" I looked at Kwandile and whispered please while pleading with my eyes

Kwandile: "Nelo lets go"

Nelo: "I love you nana you and Melo" they left, I called kyle and told him I was in hospital he came to see me at night I know it was wrong of me but I needed his love and affection.

.

I stayed in the hospital for a full week, Nelo came in to see me that whole week I was just civil with him but he never stopped begging I told myself that I was done with him. Kyle and I were good but not in a relationship. Nelo called often just to check on us Kwandile and I were getting so close it was freaking me out he would just fetch me from school or pop up at home mom kept warning me and with Kwandile being old it drove her crazy.

.

November 11 I got admitted luckily I was done with exams I wrote in the principals office I don't know how mom managed to pull that off but she did and my exams went well. I didn't even suffer that much from contractions and judging from the stories I had heard I was glad I had my operation on the 13th of November nelo was there with him from the day I got admitted and I was really happy to experience it all with him I gave birth to a beautiful healthy baby girl 'Melokuhle Othandiwe Ngcobo' Nelo cried until his face turned pink it was actually funny how he was acting his mom couldn't stop laughing at him, everyone was just in love with our bundle of joy and I was truly happy

## **part 69 I am scared of lonely**

I got discharged 3 days later I was so in love with my daughter but I still felt incomplete without Nelo even though he was there for us. Melo had her nursery but everything was moved to my room since we had to stay there for a whole month, I got the hang of things quickly at the hospital how to bath her, how to hold her and feed her. the scariest part was sleeping with her God the first night back at home I hardly slept the following

night she slept in her cot. The first week was easy n peaceful after that hha she started crying aunt dolly n mom helped out mostly during the day but at night she was all mine this one night she cried so much that even I ended up crying when mom came in my room Melo and I were both screaming from the top of our voices

Mom: “aibo Lelo what’s wrong” she took Melo from my bed I had left her there and went to sit on the corner rocking myself back n forth

Me: “I can’t mom I just can’t” I said between sobs n sniffs

Mom: “it ok” she checked her nappy it was dry n clean she didn’t even want her bottle mom put her on her shoulder hushing her eventually she calmed down

Me: “I can’t do it mom I really can’t” she came to me with Melo and sat next to me

Mom: “it going to be ok” I rested my head on her shoulder we stayed like that until Melo fell asleep than all three of us got in my bed and we slept. When I woke up the following day Melo was in her cot asleep mom walked in with breakfast as I was getting off the bed she kissed my head.

Mom: “morning baby”

Me: “mom” I made the bed we sat down and ate

Mom: “sbonelo’s mom wants Melo to stay with her”

Me: “why”

Mom: “she thinks it for the best”

Me: “I might be having a hard time but I can manage ryt mom” she nodded “I don’t want her raising my child I just can’t” the thought of having to go to nelo’s home whenever I miss Melo or what if Nelo decides to bring his gf to introduce her to his family I can’t have them playing happy family with my child she might not even like Melo and try harming her

Mom: “it was just a suggestion”

Me: “I don’t like it”

Mom: “than it not happening”

Me: “oryt”

Mom: “so you and sbonelo really broke up”

Me: "don't start mom" she raised her hands

Mom: "oryt" we finished eating

Me: "I don't want her sleeping during the day mom or she won't sleep at night"

Mom: "she's a baby it normal and besides she woke up early, she ate and she's clean let her sleep"

Me: "if you say so" we spent the day in my room even aunt dolly joined us during lunch Nelo had left for Mpumalanga 3 days after I was discharged. Later that day Melo and I were asleep I woke up when I felt the bed move I looked up and it was Kwandile I shifted he got in behind me held my waist and kissed my head it was normal of him to do this it wasn't even awkward anymore Kwandile and I were pretty close it was so weird at first but I got used to it.

Me: "didn't know you were coming by"

Kwandile: "just needed to see Okuhle" yeah he refuses to call Melokuhle Melo so he calls her Okuhle

Me: "she's asleep"

Kwandile: "I see go back to sleep I'll wait for you two to wake up" he held me closer I disappeared in his body and drifted off to sleep. Woke up a bit later because of Kwandile's whispers I turned and looked at him he was talking to the phone he dropped the call and slide down the bed until his face was directly on mine

Kwandile: "you up" I nodded "I put Okuhle on her cot"

Me: "thank you"

Kwandile: "you really peaceful when you sleep" I smiled "I should get going"

Me: "why" I found myself asking without even thinking about it or how desperate I sounded

Kwandile: "work tomorrow and toti is a bit far from here"

Me: "oh" honestly speaking I was disappointed even I didn't know how to explain the sudden need to want him around he looked at me for the longest time ever I even started blushing

Kwandile: "sorry" he came closer to me and I swallowed hard before looking away



Me: "uhm" I got off the bed and went to check on Melo she was already up but not crying my phone rang and I answered

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "hey how are you guys"

Me: "we ok" Kwandile cleared his throat I looked at me

Nelo: "I miss you guys" Kwandile shouted that his leaving I whispered see you soon

Me: "that's nice"

Nelo: "who was that Lelo it not even a month and you already got a man around my child"

Me: "stop being forward that was Kwandile"

Nelo: "I don't like this nana"

Me: "who I hang with is no longer your problem Nelo"

Nelo: "his my brother"

Me: "exactly his melo's uncle he can see her whenever he wants to"

Nelo: "stay away from him"

Me: "I'm done talking about this"

Nelo: "mmh I see"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "do you guys need anything" I laughed

Me: "we have everything we need Nelo"

Nelo: "I'm coming home Friday"

Me: "that's nice we'll see you when you here"

Nelo: "I love you guys"

Me: "goodnight" he sighed

Nelo: "kiss her for me"

Me: "will do"

Nelo: "bye" I dropped the phone took a shower got out did my business wore my pjs took Melo out of her cot bath her by the time I was done aunt dolly had brought food mom was working night shift I gave her bottle afterwards I ate we stayed in bed I was

chatting to kyle and my friends Sthe was staying at Asa's for the exams.

Nelo came home that weekend he basically stayed the whole weekend at my home he would come early morning and only leave once Melo was asleep Kwandile didn't come to see us that weekend and I missed him so badly he didn't even call.

.

13 December my daughter was officially a month old which meant we could get out of my room I was so glad coz I was starting to feel suffocated. The house was packed and I hated being stuck in my room so as soon as my mom n my aunts came to my room the morning of the 13th to have a talk with me about how to behave now that I was a mother it sort of like those talks a bride gets the morning of her wedding just that what is said is different well that's our tradition as soon as they walked out I followed them. Siya Philisiwe and Sthe were home Philisiwe was visiting ofcos as usual Sthe didn't go home for the holidays since her mom was going to Cape Town with her bf. I was excited about being able go out more than anything that night we went out for dinner before my aunts drove back to their homes. Nelo was closing at work on the 23rd and coming home on that night I was a little anxious I don't know why. After that weekend that Nelo was back I had been getting weird vibes from Kwandile he called less and hardly came he always claimed to be busy with his cases so I let him be.

.

Woke up early on the 14th had a date with kyle no we were not in a relationship just close. I fed Melo bath her dressed her in a cool dress than took her to aunt dolly, I had breakfast while chatting mainly with Kyle he was getting ready so I finished eating quickly took a shower got out got dressed in skinny jeans and a tank top with sandlas luckily for me within a month of melo's birth I was almost back to my regular weight just needed to lose a little bit on my ass n thighs but my stomach was flat joys of having good genes I didn't even get stretch marks. Kyle called saying his was outside the gate as I was putting on make up I shouted for someone to let him in and they did. I finshed up took my slig back went to the lounge found him there chilling with Siyabulela he stood up and hugged me he was in vest n shorts with all stars

Siya: “don’t fall for him Lelo” he said in zulu and I gave him a dead stare before walking out and we left for gateways

Me: “I missed being out of the house” he took my hand and left it on his thigh

Kyle: “I just missed being with you without having to be in your room” I looked at him

Me: “Is it”

Kyle: “totally” the way he said it made me giggle. Went to gateway watched a movie funny enough I couldn’t even swallow the pop corn kyle couldnt stop laughing at me after the movie we did a little bit of shopping I saw this really nice high waisted black shorts I just had to buy them along with this black lace top. After shopping we went to dropkicks for late lunch I had one can of miller and we went home. Nelo had been calling non stop being on my case about leaving Melo at home like she was alone he threw a huge tantrum when I told him I’m with Kyle talking about how my white boy is making me neglect his child I just dropped the call and switched my phone off. I spent the 15 indoors with nelo’s child but on the 16 siyabulela Sthe Philisiwe Asa and I were driving all the way to pmb one of Siyabulela’s friend from varsity was hosting a braai we were all excited about it.

Woke that morning went to the kitchen everyone was sitting around the counter having breakfast Melo was with mom in her room she sleeps with her when she’s at home I took my plate and sat down

Me: “what time are we leaving”

Siya: “12:00” I looked at my phone it was only 09:30

Sthe: “can’t wait to see varsity boys” we all looked at her in a questions manner she shrugged her shoulders “I’m done with old man” we laughed

Phili: “and some hot pmb girls”

Siya: “now you talking” their high fived

Me: “some of us are mothers” they laughed

Phili: “not out fault”

Me: “yeah yeah whatever hoe” they laughed

Siya: “I hope I meet someone I need to blow off some steam”

Phili: "and pinky"

Siya: "she's not giving me some I don't know why" we laughed at him

Sthe: "stop poor Lelo has to wait for 3 months"

Phili: "plus she's single"

Me: "shut up" they laughed we finished eating went to get ready sthe n Philisiwe were sharing a room. Siya came in my room while I was lotioning already dressed in skinny jeans flooded at the bottom Nike sneakers and a muscle vest he sat on the bed and patted next to him I went to sit next to him

Siya: "was talking to Nelo"

Me: "oh about what"

Siya: "just that I should look after you"

Me: "oh"

Siya: "told him I was planning to anyway" I nodded "I'm sorry to pry in your business lil sis but as your brother I had to ask him why you guys broke up"

Me: "oh"

Siya: "don't wana lie Lelo im hurt you used to tell me everything what changed"

Me: "I don't know siyabulela you left I guess"

Siya: "doesn't mean you shouldn't call n talk to me"

Me: "I understand"

Siya: "he told me everything Lelo from Kokesto to the car accident until now with Ndoe" he wiped a tear on my face "why didn't you talk to me"

Me: "I can handle it"

Siya: "I feel so stupid I actually thought he was right for you but mom was right all along" I just cried and he held me rocking us back n forth

Me: "I love him Siya and it hurts so bad having to pretend that I'm over him and that I'm not hurting"

Siya: "it ok to hurt Lelo but it going to get better"

Me: "I hope so" we stayed like that until i stopped crying

Siya: "now fix yourself and let's go im sure the others are done now" I nodded and he

left, I went to wash my face lotioned it again put on make up topping it off with a dark maroon lipstick. I wore my new short n top put on my navy sandlas took my navy bag filled it with everything I'll need, I fixed my long twist into a bun. I went to the lounge everyone was there sthe was wearing the shortest thigh dress ever with short heels while Philisiwe was wearing a short jumpsuit with sandlas I kissed my daughter good by and we left. Picked up Asa first, The drive was long we stopped at ultra city sthe Asa and I took pictures while Siya and Philisiwe went in I asked the attendant to take a full length for us. I posted one picture on facebook Nelo commented immediately

\*you look beautiful nana\* I smiled and replied \*thank you daddy\* he replied instantly \*wow... Uhm I miss you and melo\* I thought a little before replying \*we miss you come home already\* notification came fast \*soon nana please behave where you going\* Siya came back we got in the car and left \*i always behave trust me\* ... \*i trust nana but when you that beautiful it natural to feel insecure and I don't like you exposing that much of your skin\* I laughed the top I was wearing showed cleavage I was wearing a black bra under it and thanks to Melo my boobs were still big \*leave with it daddy\* ... \*im trying too\* there was also another comment from some guy saying I looked good enough to eat Nelo told him to fuck off I just laughed and logged out. Eventually we arrived at pmb the place was packed we found parking and went in, you had to take a shot before entering I didn't even protest I took one Siya shook his head and I told him fun remember he laughed we went in and this hot guy came to us Siya and him shoulder hugged before he turned to us

Siya: "girls this is my friend Loyiso we do the same course at varsity, Loyiso these are my sisters Lelo you've heard about this is Philisiwe and sthe and that's Asa he point at each of us Loyiso hugged us he smelt amazing. Loyiso was tall dark medium size when it comes to body he didn't have a body like Nelo or Kwandile, Kwandile played rugby at varsity so his body is just wow.

**part 70 I am scared of lonely**

Asa pinched me and pointed at Loyiso with her eyes we giggled Siya looked at us and shook his head.

Phili: "can we get through already I wana meet some people" Loyiso chuckled I noticed he got one dimple on his right cheek it was so adorable I couldn't help but stare at him Siya noticed coz when everyone went to the bar he pulled me aside

Siya: "don't lelo"

Me: "don't what"

Siya: "saw the way you were looking at Loyiso"

Me: "aibo Siyabulela don't read too much into things"

Siya: "his off limit Lelo in fact every guy here is off limit"

Me: "hayi siyabulela no"

Siya: "yeah or im taking you guys home" I rolled my eyes at him

Me: "yeah sure whatever bigbro" I said sarcastically and he shook his head disapprovingly

Siya: "you better listen Lelothando" he took my hand and we walked to the others they already had drinks with them

Siya: "should I get you something lelo" I looked at him and shrugged my shoulder

Me: "yeah" he nodded and left I went to sit next to Sthe who already had her flirt game on with this other guy

Me: "Sthe" I sat down and pointed at the guy with my head she giggled shyly

Sthe: "Lelo this is sbu" I smiled at the guy

Me: "hey sbu" Siya came back and gave me a glass of white wine

Siya: "I'm the only one who is allowed to refill your glass ok"

Me: "ok" he kissed my forehead and left

Sbu: "boyfriend" Sthe and I laughed

Us: "brother" he chuckled

Sbu: "oh ja" I left them there took my glass just looked around the house until I found the door that led to the backyard I went there saw siyabulela and some guys standing around the braii stand braiing I went to them and stood next to Siya leaning on his

shoulder

Siya: "bored already"

Me: "not really"

Siya: "check" he pointed to a group of girls with his head

Me: "who"

Siya: "blue dress" I looked and noticed the pretty short dark girl in a blue dress

Me: "she's pretty" he smiled and nodded

Siya: "be back soon" he left me standing there and went to the group of girls

Loyiso: "you two are really close"

Me: "aren't all siblings close"

Loyiso: "not really" he came closer to me "you can lean on me since Siya left you" I

laughed he also joined me showing his dimple

Me: "you sure"

Loyiso: "yeah" I leaned on his shoulder he had a piece of waffles he offered me some I took a

bite it was still in his hand we kept our eyes locked I looked away as I started chewing

Me: "it's nice" I told him when I was done chewing

Loyiso: "yeah it is" I took a sip of my wine "Siya tells me you got a daughter"

Me: "yeah" I beamed at him

Loyiso: "you got pictures"

Me: "sure" I took my phone out and unlocked it

Loyiso: "nice home screen" I looked down it was a picture of Nelo and I looking down on

Melo while she was asleep

Me: "uhm thank you" I showed him a picture of Melo

Loyiso: "she's beautiful just like her mother" I giggled

Siya: "she actually looks like her dad" I didn't even notice that he was back

Loyiso: "got those digits bru" he chuckled

Siya: "you know me bru" I rolled my eyes and left them standing there went to find Asa.

Found them sitting with a group of boys at the front

Philisiwe: "where are you coming from we don't want Nelo beating people up" I sat

down between her and some guy

Me: "shut up" as n Sthe laughed we all sat there talking and drinking I finished my drink and went to look for Siya I stood next to him and he put his hands around my waist

Me: "my glass is empty" they all laughed

Siya: "wait here" he left

Loyiso: "didn't you see the bar"

Me: "ask Siya when his back"

Guy: "Siya always manages to get the hot ones" he licked his bottom lip and I looked at him in disgust

Loyiso: "behave Bhunu and its Siya's little sister"

Bhunu: "so Siya won't mind if I ..."

Siya: "if you what Bhunu" he laughed uncomfortably

Bhunu: "nothing bru" he gave me my glass I took a sip

Me: "I'm going back to the girls" he kissed my head and I left them they could feel eyes on me so I turned and saw Loyiso looking at me I looked away from him and smiled swigged my hips walking away.

Asa: "you took long even though you met someone"

Me: "had to go to Siya"

Asa: "where's Loyiso"

Me: "at the back"

Sthe: "look at the goofy smile on your face" I giggled and looked down

Mlu: "you into Loyiso"

Me: "ofcos not"

Mlu: "good coz his a known player"

Me: "all guys are players"

Sbu: "not me"

Sthe: "yeah tell her bubu" we all laughed

Asa: "all guys cheat"

Nhlaka: "for good reasons"



Me: "such as"

Nhlaka: "if the sex is not good"

Mlu: "can't be with someone who is lazy in bed the fuck would I want with a frozen chicken"

Senzo: "if she's disrespectful and too wild"

Mlu: "I cant be faithful to you if you out with other guys almost every weekend"

Asa: "bullshit!!" They laughed but I remained silent

Senzo: "worse when she stops taking care of herself like you need to look your best every time I see you"

Me: "you guys are just stupid"

Mlu: "how so"

Me: "you can have the perfect girl but still cheat"

Mlu: "I wouldn't cheat on you"

Me: "we not talking about me" just than my phone rang and it was Nelo

Me: "melo's dad" he laughed and I stood up walked away from the noise

Nelo: "nana you still good"

Me: "yeah I'm good"

Nelo; "having fun"

Me: "yeah how's work"

Nelo; "actually got off early and I'm on my way to kzn"

Me; "oh that's nice"

Nelo: "you don't sound happy about it"

Me: "no come on ofcos I am"

Nelo: "good where about pmb are you"

Me: "scotville"

Nelo: "ok how's Melo doing"

Me: "shit!"

Nelo: "don't tell me you haven't even checked on her since you left in the morning"

Me: "it not like that"

Nelo: "mmh" he dropped the call I decided to let him be and went back to the others  
but as I sat down my phone rang again

Me: "sbonelo"

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "sure" I dropped my phone we continued chilling. A little later siya called us so the girls and I went to them they were eating we sat down and ate with them by the time we finished eating I was on my 4th glass I was beyond tipsy so siya gave me bottled water

Me: "why"

Siya: "I'm not going home with you drunk"

Me: "oryt" I pulled Asa up and we went to the dance floor luckily for me they were playing hip hop I could never dance to house music. Philisiwe and Sthe joined us along with Mlu and sbu and Cleo some girl Philisiwe was feeling, while busy dancing I felt hands around my waist I didn't even need to turn his smell and Asa's smile told me that it was Loyiso he started breathing on my neck and the hair at the back of my hair stood  
Loyiso: "nice moves"

Me: "I try" he held my hips firmly and brought me closer to him started moving us in circular motion when he noticed I got the hang of it his hand moved to my waist he started griding on me at first I didn't react than I started moving along with him shaking my ass up n down and sideways it felt so good I didn't wana stop but eventually the song stopped playing he turned me around to face

Loyiso: "hi" I blushed

Me: "hi"

Loyiso: "let's get some air" he held my hand and lead us out of the house he stopped at a corner and pressed me against the wall using his body I lost my breath for a moment

Loyiso: "you so beautiful" I looked down and he held my chin making me look at him before smashing his lips on mine and I kissed him back his lips were soft and cold tasted minty my hands went on his neck and he grabbed my ass making me stand on my toes the kiss felt magical I could feel his hard on pressing on my punani I was so moist. He

pulled back

Loyiso: "wow"

Me: "you can say that again" he held the back of my neck brought my face to his we started kissing he moved from my lips to my neck I let out a slight moan someone cleared their throat we both looked at the person and it was Sthe

Sthe: "siya is looking for you cuz"

Me: "shit" I pushed him off me

Loyiso: "calm down lelo"

Me: "I can't you off limit" he chuckled

Loyiso: "he also told me that you off limit"

Me: "it not funny"

Loyiso: "relax than go to him but you need to calm down first"

Sthe: "yeah calm down" I breathed in and out a couple of times

Me: "ok let's go Sthe" as we were walking off Loyiso pulled me to him and smashed his lips on mine shoving his tongue in my mouth I moaned and he pulled back

Loyiso: "just had to" Sthe laughed and walked in the house straight to the back where siya was we got to him and he held me on my shoulders looking at me all over my body

Siya: "you ok"

Me: "yeah" he gave me another bottle of water I galped half of it same time

Siya: "when do you guys wana leave"

Sthe: "not now" it was already dark around 20:00 the boys laughed Sthe just smiled

Siya: "oryt just don't disappear again Lelo"

Me: "ok" Sthe and I left

Sthe: "Loyiso is so into you"

Me: "he just wants sex" Sthe chuckled

Sthe: "like you don't want it" we laughed

Me: "I do lord knows it been over months im sure I'm a virgin again" we laughed "but I still have to wait for bloody 3 months"

Sthe: "I don't get it though it not like you gave birth naturally"

Me: "mom said 3 months bru but I'm dying hha it been over 5 months" she laughed so hard she had tears coming out of her eyes

Me: "it's not funny bru" we joined the others they were taking shots we also took some it was two each I excused myself went to the toilet so I could call mom

Mom: "lelo"

Me: "mom how is Melo"

Mom: "did you drink Lelo"

Me: "ofcos not"

Mom: "don't lie"

Me: "mom"

Mom: "ok Melo is ok she's asleep"

Me: "I miss her" she laughed

Mom: "come home"

Me: "soon"

Mom: "ok bye" she dropped the call I checked myself on the mirror fixed my make up and made my lipstick darker. As soon as I stepped out of the bathroom I saw Loyiso standing next to the door

Loyiso: "I've been waiting for you"

Me: "oh well here I am" he took my hand

Loyiso: "come with me" he went to this room he locked the door

Me: "whose room is this"

Loyiso: "mine"

Me: "you clean" he chuckled

Loyiso: "I try" he picked me up and threw me on the bed came on top of me he looked at me for the longest time while smiling

Loyiso: "you really beautiful Lelo"

Me: "thank you" I shifted under him and he chuckled

Loyiso: "you need to relax" I nodded we kissed that hot kinda kiss filled with lust my shorts were lose so his hand quickly went up my thigh to my punani and he rubbed it

under my tongue and I moaned in his mouth his lips moved from my lips to my neck he started licking and sucking it I was panting under him trying to get my breathing pattern to be normal he took my shorts off in a swift move he looked at my tongue and smiled biting his lip he took off my top and the smile on his face was priceless

Loyiso: "tryna kill me"

Me: "never" I pulled him to me and kissed him I took off his vest my hands wondered all over his body he stood up and took his jeans and boyleg as well as my panty off along with our shoes he got back on the bed and put me on top of him we kissed again he held my waist and we started grinding on each other my punani was like a river at that moment he flipped us over and stood up went to the bathroom came back with a rubber on him. We started kissing again I felt his dick on my entrance he tried entering me but failed after a couple of tries he got off me and lifted me up before pulling me down and his dick entered me painfully I cried out loud and he cursed

Loyiso: "how long has it been" he looked at me questioningly I was so embarrassed he noticed and laughed it off I couldn't help but laugh with him while laughing I wasn't even done laughing when he started moving my laughter turned to moans his hands were on my waist he was guiding me on how to move it was my first time on top his dick was smaller than nelo's but he reached places I didn't even know were possible to reach while I was on top after my first orgasm he flipped us over got on top of me before pulling me to the edge while he was standing that drove me crazy straight to my second orgasm after that he made me bend with my chest on his desk and went in from behind he came straight after I had come we sat on the floor trying to catch our breaths with his hand on my punani and his finger in it after a few minutes he stood up and pulled me up and we kissed for a while before I pulled back

Me: "I need to go before siya worries"

Loyiso: "let him worry come on let's nap a little" I laughed

Me: "there's a party going on and you wana nap come on get dressed" I moved from him and started getting dressed but he pulled my clothes and carried me to the bathroom we had a quicky in the shower got out lotioned and got dressed we

exchanged numbers before going to the others. As soon as we reached the backyard where siya and the girls were I saw Nelo standing next to siya my heart skipped a beat but I relaxed and went to them Nelo looked at me then back at Loyiso who was following behind me

Me: "hey when did you get here" he brought me closer to him

Nelo: "couple of minutes ago" I nodded and he kissed my forehead "you have a love bite nana I see you've been busy" he smiled and clenched his jaws the veins on his forehead were showing could tell he was beyond angry but trying to play it cool he looked at Loyiso who was looking straight at us and shook his head

### **part 71 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo pushed me aside with the aim of going to Loyiso but I quickly stood in front of him with my hand on his chest his heart was pounding fast

Me: "please don't" I whispered so that no one could notice, he looked at me with his red eyes

Nelo: "move" he also whispered but with so much authority

Me: "no" I shook my head "not here Nelo not in front of my brother" he looked at Siya who was busy with the blue dress girl then moved his eyes to Loyiso who was still staring at us

Nelo: "nxa fuck this" he walked in such a speed straight to Loyiso I panicked last thing I wanted was Nelo causing a scene

Me: "Sbonelo!!" He stopped walking "Please" I pleaded I walked to him and stood in front of him "please take me home I don't feel well" my voice was breaking

Nelo: "what's wrong" his eyes n tone became softer

Me: "I got a headache plus I miss my daughter please take me home I don't wana be here anymore" he sighed

Nelo: "ok" we were standing next to Loyiso Nelo turned and looked at Loyiso

Nelo: "if you ever as to even breath the same air as her I swear to God" he closed his eyes and shook his head before opening them again "I'll kill you I won't even use a gun

I'll do it with my bare hands" he hissed than held my waist we walked to Siya

Nelo: "we leaving Lelo is tired" Siya looked at me

Siya: "you sure Lelo"

Me: "yeah it been a long day plus I miss Melo"

Siya: "alright" he kissed my forehead before giving Nelo a look "drive safe with my sister sbonelo" Nelo chuckled

Nelo: "haven't even had a beer bru relax" we went to say bye to Sthe who was on top of sbu and Philisiwe before leaving we outside to where the cars, he opened my door before going in on his side instead of driving he turned and looked at me

Nelo: "did you fuck that boy"

Me: "that's none of your business Nelo we not together anymore"

Nelo: "ok" he drove off in such a speed I immediately put on my seatbelt it would usually take about 2 hours to drive from pmb to mkomaas but that night it took less than an hour before I knew it the car was parking in Nelo's garage he got out and went to my side opening my door but I didn't get out

Me: "I said take me home sbonelo not your house"

Nelo: "ei fuck off mani Lelo!! Did you see the time did you even notice the state you in"

Me: "I'm perfectly fine just take me home"

Nelo: "mxm suite yourself" he scoped me up unexpectedly lifting me out of the car and closing the door behind me

Me: "put me down sbonelo im not your child" he laughed really hard putting me down I looked at him puzzled

Nelo: "yeah you not because Melo sure as hell wouldn't go around fucking random boys" I slapped him so hard as my eyes started watering he held his cheek

Nelo: "what the fuck Lelo if ..." He didn't even finish his sentence the 2nd slap followed

Nelo: "ei fok of mani Lelo!!"

Me: "I've done nothing but be dedicated to you and our love while you continuously went out fucking random girls while we were in a relationship you have no right absolutely no right to talk to me in that manner" I was crying and punching him trying to

push him but he wasn't moving at all that just angered me more I dropped to the ground and sobbed loudly think the alcohol was also playing a major part he also sat on the ground and put me on his thigh rocking me back n forth

Nelo: "ssh I'm so sorry nana"

Me: "I can't Nelo I just can't anymore" I said clinging on his shirt while my loud cries were turning to hiccups

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana I know I've put you through a lot of shit but please forgive me ma'Tolo please maka Melo" he smashed his lips to mine kissing my wet lips as good as it felt I just couldn't go back to that roller coaster I pushed him and stood up

Me: "no sbonelo I'm done being your fool" he also stood up attempted to hold my hands but I moved back

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "no!!" He looked at me defeated and went to opened the door we got in I went straight to his bedroom opened his closet my clothes were still there but I took his tshirt and my panty took off my clothes including my underwear was not about to sleep in a thong went to the bathroom left my clothes in the laundry basket went back to the bedroom Nelo was sitting on the bed with a glass of water he stood up and met me halfway

Nelo: "here" I took the water and adcol than have him back the glass when I was done he grabbed my cheek sinking his fingers in my jaws painfully moving my head from left to right looking at my neck n cheekbones

Nelo: "fuck!!" He let go off me and smashed the glass on the wall it broke he looked at my thighs and I followed his gaze only to notice the bite marks on them

Nelo: "you really slept with him" he roared

Me: "Nelo I ... It was a mistake" he slapped me so hard I fell on the floor for some reason I couldn't even cry I sat up leaning on the wall and watched him while he paced around the room cursing and kicking things I stood up balancing on the wall

Nelo: "is this you now sleeping around"

Me: "you have no right sbonelo we not even together anymore" he came to me and



grabbed my neck lifting me up until my feet left the ground he was choking me

Nelo: "you are mine Lelo you the mother of my child" he spat out each word I could feel my throat closing in

Me: "Nelo it hurts" he pressed harder before letting go completely and I stumbled before hitting the floor

Nelo: "how could Lelo" he sat on the floor and started crying "I've never loved anyone the way I love you nana" he buried his face on his knees "how can you destroy us like this nana" I crawled to him and put my head on his shoulder

Me: "I'm so sorry baby" we cried together until he stopped he picked me up and took me to the bed we got under the cover I slept on top of him.

.

When I woke up the following morning I was alone in bed I got out of bed went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth and washed my face as I was drying my face I noticed the bruise on my face and neck tears fall from my eyes aggressively I sat on the cold bathroom floor and cried my lungs out I cried to the point that my head was banging Nelo came in and rushed to me

Nelo: "what's wrong nana why you crying"

Me; "look at me Nelo look at my face my neck you hurt me Nelo you promised and you broke your promise you laid your hand on me in an aggressive way" he looked down

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana im so sorry nana it was a mistake I didn't mean to nana you have to believe me" I shook my head

Me: "you hit me Nelo you said you would never do it again nelo"

Nelo: "nana please I'm sorry" he picked me up and walked us in the shower he stripped us naked before opening the water he went down on me my cries turned into silent moans he came to my face after making me come and smashed his lips to mine shoving his tongue in my mouth before pulling back

Nelo: "I'm so sorry nana please forgive me" he was busy rubbing my clit he fucked the forgiveness straight out of me when we were done he dried us and carried me to the bed we slept. I woke up awhile later because my phone was ringing

Me: "mom"

Mom: "have you forgotten that you have a child Lelo!!" She was shouting

Me: "sorry I over slept mom I'm on my way home"

Mom: "who did you even tell that you weren't coming home"

Me: "I'm coming mom"

Mom: "I don't even know what to do with you anymore"

Me: "I'm sorry mom please just give me an hour" she dropped the call I woke Nelo up

Nelo: "mmh nana"

Me: "wake up I need to go home" he mumbled later "sbonelo wake up mani!"

Nelo: "ok ok I'm up geese woman"

Me: "just take me home I got a child to look after" he laughed and got up we got dress out of my clothes that were at Nelo's I didn't have anything to cover my neck

Me: "where's my bag"

Nelo: "in the car"

Me: "please get it for me I need my make up kit"

Nelo: "you don't need make up"

Me: "I need to cover these bruises unless you want mom n Siya on your case" he came and stood behind we looked at ourselves on the mirror he kissed my neck and my cheek

Nelo: "I'm really sorry nana" I nodded

Me; "it ok go get my bag" he left and quickly came back I fixed my face n neck did a pretty good job guess I got used to hiding bruises with Leon

Nelo: "let's go out nana"

Me: "out where"

Nelo: "pavilion just us n Melo" I smiled it would be the first time that Melo went out of the house

Me: "yeah sure" he kissed my forehead and changed from shorts n vests to skinny jean tshirt and sneakers we left shortly after the ride he parked outside the gate

Nelo: "call me when you guys are ready I need something from the shop"

Me: "ok" I got out of the car and as soon as I stepped in the house I was welcomed by

my daughter's screams I walked to the kitchen aunty dolly was trying to calm her down

Me: "why is she crying like that"

Dolly: "don't know think she's sleepy" I took her as soon as she was in my arms she stopped crying aunt dolly laughed

Me: "do I need to give her a bath"

Dolly: "no she's good to go"

Me: "where's mom"

Dolly: "everyone is asleep"

Me: "Nelo is taking us out"

Dolly: "that's nice"

Me: "yeah I guess" I went to my room changed Melo first before changing into a short cool summer dress and sandals. I called Nelo telling him to come I packed Melo's bag we went to the kitchen took her 3 bottles one for juice one for water and the other for her formula. Nelo called saying his outside we left as soon as we got out the gate he came to us with a smile on his face

Nelo: "my beautiful girls" he took Melo and kissed my forehead

Me: "where did you go" he opened the back door and there was a baby car seat

Nelo: "to get this" I smiled

Me: "do you think she's even allowed to sit on that"

Nelo: "aah yeah I think so" he looked so unsure I laughed at him

Me: "oryt" he put her on it "be careful with my child nelo" he seemed to be struggling with it

Nelo: "I got this nana" eventually he managed I got in and we left Melo slept all the way. We got to pava he took her out of the seat

Nelo: "hold her for a sec" I took her he opened the boot and took out a stroller

Me: "you've been busy, you should have asked me though Kwandile already bought her a stroller you shouldn't have bought that" he clenched his jaws

Nelo: "please don't ruin my day and you will throw that stroller away"

Me: "oh oryt ill throw it away" he put her in the stroller and we went in the mall did a

lot of shopping for all three of us than had lunch got take aways for dinner Melo and I were spending the night at nelo's. We left the mall late got to the house I feed Melo before giving her a bath gave her to Nelo so I could take a bath. I quickly showered lotioned wore my pjs my phone rang as I was tying my hair and it was Loyiso

Me: "hey"

Loyiso: "hey you how you doing"

Me: "I'm good and you"

Loyiso: "I'm good just missing you"

Me: "oh yeah"

Loyiso: "yeah look sorry I didn't call earlier after you left things got hectic I woke up late and we had to clean"

Me: "it ok I get it"

Loyiso: "I miss you I miss your nails on my back" I giggled I heard someone clearing their throat behind me I turned and it was Nelo carrying an asleep Melo he put her on the bed

Me: "look I have to go"

Loyiso: "what why..." Nelo snatched the phone from me he looked at the caller ID before throwing my phone on the wall and it broke to pieces

Nelo: "you like fucking with me don't you" he walked out banging the door so loud that Melo woke up and started crying

## **part 72 I am scared of lonely**

I took my daughter gave her, her bottle she calmed down and went back to sleep. I put her on the bed and covered her went to check on my phone it was in pieces the screen was fucked up I couldn't even put it back together I left it like that went to bed wasn't even gona wait for Nelo and his dramatic self.

.

Woke up the following day it was the 18th of December just few days before I turn 16. Nelo was asleep next to me with Melo on top of him it was such an adorable view both

they lips slightly open Melo was holding her daddy's finger I took nelo's phone snapped a picture. Went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth washed my face. Went to the kitchen made breakfast Nelo came in carrying his daughter as I was finishing I looked at them and smiled like the way Melo looks like her dad from the shape of her face to her skin colour well Nelo and I are both light skinned so she was bound to be a typical yellow bone. Anyway Nelo came to me and kissed my cheek

Nelo: "morning nana"

Me: "morning daddy slept well?"

Nelo: "with my two favorite girls next to me ofcos" I just chuckled at the thought of last night

Me: "food is almost ready just check on it so I can change her nappy and feed her"

Nelo: "changed it already just give me her food and I'll feed her" I nodded and fixed Melo's purity porridge with aunt dolly practically raising Melo at 1 month old she was eating and her bottle was a mixture of her formula and nestam, I gave Nelo her food and he fed her while I dished up for us we ate as soon as he was done feeding her. I took Melo so I could bath her while Nelo cleaned the kitchen I finished bathing her she fell asleep immediately I went to take a shower as I was bathing Nelo joined me ofcos we did some bapsing we got out all smiles couldn't stop looking at each other while we got dressed he came stood behind me so he could zip up my dress I was wearing a thigh fitting dress just below the knee it had a zip that started just at the crack of my ass all the way up my back instead of zipping me up he ripped the dress of me after another session of bapsing we got dressed. He took Melo's bag I took my purse and Melo we left he locked up he took Melo put her in her car seat we got in and he drove off stopped at the mall he got off and came back quickly with a plastic from Edgars Nelo: "here" he drove off I took it and opened it, it was a new phone the same phone that I had but new with a new starter pack

Me: "thank you but my SIM card is just good"

Nelo: "think it time you changed your number"

Me: "excuse me"

Nelo: "Am I supposed to repeat myself"

Me: "sbonelo you really not being fair here"

Nelo: "there's really nothing to talk about nana"

Me: "you can be so controlling at times it irritating" I spat out and looked out the window he held my thigh pushing my dress up I hit it and he laughed

Nelo: "you can't really be angry at me nana"

Me: "just let me be please"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "I'm not a thing you can own and control Nelo what you doing is not right"

Nelo: "I'm sorry you feel that way"

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "you still changing your number"

Me: "sbonelo!!"

Nelo: "I love you" the rest of the ride was silent we reached his parents house we were spending the day there they hadn't seen Melo since the hospital, Nelo got out opened my door I got out he kissed my forehead then took Melo out. We knocked and Sfundu opened

Sfundu; "hey" I smiled

Nelo: "sho kid how are you" we walked in

Sfundu: "I'm good everyone is at the back" we walked to the back indeed everyone was there nelo's mom stood up as soon as she saw us

N's mom: "oh my god my baby" she took Melo

Nelo: "hi mom" he went to shake his dad's hand kwandile stood up and gave me a hug

Kwandile: "you look beautiful" he whispered while hugging me I just smiled and nodded

N's mom: "she looks more like you sbonelo"

Nelo: "she's mine mom who else would she look like" Sfundu came out with two glasses and poured juice for us Sethu hadn't said anything the entire time when we sat down she stood up walked to her mom looked at Melo before walking in the house without a word

Sfundo: "and what's her problem"

Kwandile: "she just bitter" we sat there having juice n snacks while nelo's mom didn't wana give Melo to anyone. I stood up and went in the house coz I needed to use the bathroom I bumped into kwandile on the passage as I was going out to the back he stood in front of me.

Kwandile: "I've missed you"

Me: "you the one who decided to disappear"

Kwandile: "didn't really have a choice"

Me: "what you mean"

Kwandile: "it was too deep I couldn't handle it"

Me: "handle what" he shook his head

Kwandile: "can't believe you got back with Nelo after everything he has done to you"

Me: "you wouldn't understand" Sethu walked to us while smirking

Sethu: "I knew it" she chuckled "I just knew it hha wait until Nelo knows that his so innocent nana is not so pure" I looked at her puzzled

Kwandile: "fuck off Sethu" I left them standing there and went outside nelo's mom was feeding Melo. We had lunch later on like nelo's mom is the best cook ever, after lunch Nelo and I did the dishes we left later on the day. Nelo dropped us off at home as soon as we got in mom took Melo I went to charge my phone I looked for my SIM card in my bag but couldn't find it I called Nelo using the landline

Nelo: "hello"

Me: "where's my SIM card" he started laughing "sbonelo!!"

Nelo: "I threw it away"

Me: "it wasn't yours to throw"

Nelo: "I got you a new card"

Me: "mxm" I dropped the call and went to sit with everyone in the lounge

Mom: "why you using the house phone"

Me: "don't have airtime mom" she nodded we had dinner in the lounge over jokes n lighy conversation Sthe and Philisiwe did the dishes

Siya: "what we doing for lelo's birthday"

Sthe: "party ofcos"

Mom: "you and alcohol" we laughed

Me: "I'd be happy with just a family lunch"

Philisiwe: "I'm with Sthe on the party"

Siya: "family lunch than we braai at night"

Sthe n Philisiwe: "yeah!!" We laughed

Siya: "no elders at night"

Mom: "now you losing left son" we laughed

Siya: "I'm serious mom"

Mom: "but it my house"

Sthe: "it lelo's day"

Mom: "no ways"

Me: "yeah ways mom come on we gona behave and we'll clean"

Mom: "yeah sure whatever" she left with Melo

Sthe: "great I'll invite some people"

Siya: "no old men" we laughed at her

Sthe: "give me some credit"

Mom: "don't forget to invite kyle" she shouted from her room Sthe and I looked at each other before laughing really hard

Sthe: "shit"

Me: "don't even mention it"

Siya: "I'm in charge of the guest list"

Philisiwe: "as long as there's alcohol and meat im good" we continued talking about the party everyone was excited until we went to sleep.

.

The next few days went by in a flash on the 20th we went shopping for the party with mom and Siya bought lot of alcohol meat rolls and snacks ordered a cake at bread ahead than bought clothes Siya bought chino pants n shirt with a blazer at Fabian I



bought a really short body hugging dress with a lace back that was black at cotton on with mint blue heels than bought ripped white boyfriend jean with a light blue tight top went to sportscene bought nice pair of Jordan's. By the time we left the mall mom was dog tired luckily Siya was driving we got up unloaded the stuff had dinner and slept.

.  
I woke up early morning because of nelo's call he sang me happy birthday Kwandile called straight after that also wishing me happy birthday I have no idea how he got hold of my new number. Mom made me breakfast in bed after breakfast I took a bath and got dressed after bathing Melo around 12 my aunts uncles and cousins started coming in ofcos anti dolly was invited along with her family but she only came with sizwe mom and Philisiwe's mom along with aunty dolly cooked up a storm. Dad and his gf also came as well as Mike and kyle the tension around dad and Mike was funny. I had an amazing time we had a feast after lunch they sang me happy birthday we had cake I opened my presents. Late around 20:00 the elders left my uncle left with his snobs like my cousins from westville always exclud themselves from the rest of us you know those type who are always on their phones only speak English and don't speak to people they don't know. We left the gate open because no one would have time to keep on opening it for people. Mom left with Mike they took Melo with them, I was in my bedroom after changing when kyle came in.

Me: "hey" he kissed my cheek

Kyle: "didn't even get time to give you your present" I laughed

Me: "but I did receive one from you" he winked at me

Kyle: "I mean a special one"

Me: "kyle behave" I started walking backwards he was just smiling mischievously

Kyle: "come here" his voice was barely a whisper

Me: "kyle Williams!" He laughed

Kyle: "relax" he took his hands out of his pocket and came out with a rectangular box I relaxed and went to him he opened it was a beautiful silver necklace with a small diamond

Me: "Kyle it beautiful I love it" I hugged him and gave him a baby kiss

Kyle: "I'm glad you love" the door opened and Nelo came in looking drop dead handsome in navy skinny chino with a maroon shirt flooded to short sleeves. He came to me and scooped me up in a hug spinning me around I was giggling and telling him to put me down eventually he did and gave me a deep dominating kiss it was more than just a kiss he was telling kyle to back off through it. I couldn't even pull out until he did leaving me breathless

Nelo: "hey kyle"

Kyle: "hi"

Me; "he was just giving me my present" Nelo chuckled

Nelo: "I didn't ask but ok nana"

Kyle: "I'll go chill with Sthe"

Nelo: "you do that" kyle left

Me: "was that necessary sbonelo" he shut me up by a kiss which followed with my clothes being on the floor we had a very steamy quicky after we were done I pulled him up so we could take a shower

Nelo: "where to nana"

Me: "shower" he pulled me to him holding my naked ass

Nelo: "no"

Me: "no?"

Nelo: "I want every guy that comes near you to know that you taken and your man just buried himself in you" he was looking deeply in my eyes

Me: "ok" he smiled biting his bottom lip, we got dressed and got out I locked my room and took my key with me mom's room was also locked she locked it and left with her key. By the time we got outside it was packed I even saw the girl in a blue dress from pmb I walked to her and Siyabulela while Nelo went to get a beer for himself and a glass of wine for me. I got to them and greeted the girl Siya introduced her as Sane from pmb someone came and stood next to us my heart skipped a beat when I noticed that it was Loyiso.

### part 73 I am scared of lonely

Loyiso looked at me with a smirk before hugging me

Loyiso: "I've missed you" he whispered while we were hugging I pulled back and smiled at him

Me: "hey" he looked down on me with a smile and I just blushed like there is just something about a hot tall guy to make things worse a guy who has been in you

Loyiso: "Lelo happy birthday I got you a present but it in my car"

Me: "thank you I'll get it later"

Loyiso: "cool"

Me: "will see you later have fun" I started walking off towards the house to look for Nelo the plan was to keep Nelo as far away from Loyiso as possible I bumped into Kyle

Kyle: "you don't have time for me and Sthe n Asa are starting to act weird" he pouted and I laughed

Me: "what you mean weird"

Kyle: "I think they drunk" he looked so uncomfortable I just laughed at him

Me: "come on let's go look for Siya" I took his arm and we went to Siya when we got to them Loyiso looked at Kyle then his hand in my hand he cringed for some reason I just dropped Kyle's hand without a second thought

Siya: "you've been avoiding little bro" Kyle chuckled

me: "Sthe and Asa freaked him out" Siya laughed

Siya: "I know how they get once they start drinking"

Kyle: "they so weird" Loyiso cleared his throat

Siya: "oh Kyle that Loyiso my friend from varsity Loyiso this Kyle my lil bro" Siya n Kyle laughed while Loyiso and Sane looked at them confused, I saw Nelo from the corner of my eye approaching us I walked to him meeting him halfway

Me: "you took long" I stood on my toes and gave him a soft peck on his mouth

Nelo: "met up with Philisiwe" he gave me my glass I gulped more than half of it the same time "yoh nana relax" he took the glass from me

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "I don't like this thing of you and drinking now you making it worse" I just wanted to get drunk pretty fast I didn't wana be sober when Nelo finally realizes that Loyiso is here

Me: "I'll slow down" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "good"

Me: "can we chill in my room or just go to your place I don't think I'm up for this" he chuckled put his beer along with my wine on a table that was next to us and picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist giggling he walked past Sthe Philisiwe asa and Ndumo with a group of boys from high school as well as Sizwe they looked at us laughing sizwe looked away as soon as our eyes met I just buried my face on Nelo's neck. When we got to my door he put me down and took out the key from the back pocket of my jean opened the door and picked me up again he spanked me grabbing my ass I laughed. We got in and he threw me on the bed he got on top of me and licked my nose

Me: "eewu daddy that's gross"

Nelo: "shut up coz you love it" I giggled he licked it again and started tickling me I laughed so hard I ended up gasping for air and he stopped and put me on top of him

Me: "hi" he smiled

Nelo: "nana" I started kissing him he wrapped his hand around my waist I sat straight on his dick and griding on him while our tongues danced together I took of his shirt I kissed him from his neck to his navel while my hands went up n downs his packs he pulled me up and took of my top leaving my breast exposed since I wasn't wearing a bra he stared at me with a mischievous smile just than the door opened Nelo moved so fast sitting up and held me close to his chest covering my breast we laughed so hard when we saw Sthe standing and giggle at the door

Me: "the fuck do you want Sthe"

Sthe: "there's a party going on and you two are out here fucking each other"

Me: "leave now get out" Nelo was dying with laughter

Sthe: "can I join" she looked at nelo's muscle around my body and bite her lip I looked

at her

Me: “fuck no!!! Are you crazy” she shrugged her shoulders

Sthe: “what” Nelo had stopped laughing I stood up pushed her out and locked

Me: “why didn’t you lock the door”

Nelo: “didn’t think about it”

Me: “that could have been Siya” he laughed out loud “it not funny daddy” he stood up pulled me to him

Nelo: “sorry ok” he held my chin and kissed softly

Me: “let’s get dressed”

Nelo: “but we were about to...”

Me: “no I’m not in the mood anymore”

Nelo: “but nana”

Me: “no” I moved from his hold and put back my top

Nelo: “but nana look at me” I looked at him and he was hard I laughed

Me: “sorry”

Nelo: “think I should go call Sthe to help me out” I stopped laughing immediately

Me: “that’s not funny and if you ever as to even think about her while you with me I’ll cut off your dick” he chuckled in disbelief

Nelo: “aibo nana”

Me: “I promise you daddy” i gave him a soft peck and left the room. I went to look for Sthe and found her with the others I pulled her aside

Me: “don’t ever do that again”

Sthe: “it was a joke lelo”

Me: “it not funny”

Sthe: “relax Lelo”

Me: “don’t tell me to relax Sthe Nelo is a no go zone” she rolled her eyes

Sthe: “stop acting Lelo just a few days ago you slept with Loyiso a guy you meet ...” She didn’t even finish I slapped her so hard she tried slapping me back but Nelo held her hand

Nelo: "what's going on with you two"

Sthe: "she's just angry coz I called her out on sleeping with Loyiso" I felt like dying right there Sthe didn't even know that Nelo already knew about Loyiso so for her to just say that

Me: "I should have punched you"

Sthe: "Nelo should just leave you" she looked at Nelo "she doesn't deserve you"

Nelo: "firstly what I deserve and don't deserve is not your concern secondly my relationship with Lelo has nothing to do with you" I flooded my arms in front of my chest and looked at Sthe who just looked down

Sthe: "sorry" Nelo took my hand and kissed my cheek

Nelo: "let's go have fun nana" his phone rang as he was leading us to the kitchen for drink

Nelo: "sho .... Nah bru .... Grnd.... At lelo's \*he laughed\* ofcos not a man doesn't do sleep overs .... Having a braii for her birthday.... Sho wait" he looked at me "nana Qin wants to come by is it cool"

Me: "yeah sure"

Nelo: "it cool bru I'll sms you the directions .... Lol yeah she's here ..... We don't want drama Qin .... Lol sho" he dropped the call and chuckled he sent the sms to Qin we got to the kitchen he poured me wine took his beer we sat in the kitchen drinking and talking

Me: "I miss my daughter daddy"

Nelo: "let's go get her" I laughed

Me: "mom would never allow us to take her this time"

Nelo: "yeah true plus this pregnancy just made her hate me more" he pouted and I laughed

Me: "she doesn't hate you baby she just doesn't like you" he pinched me

Nelo: "as if that's better" he pinned me on the counter "I love you nana" Mina wrapped my arms around his neck

Me: "I love you more" we kissed his hands went to my ass grabbing it

Voice: "ei fuck off you two" we pulled out and looked at the door it was Qiniso with 3 other guys and 2 girls

Nelo: "you fuck off" they laughed he held my waist and we walked to them they all hugged

Nelo: "nana that's lizwi finoli and Zwe" I waved my hand and smiled

Qin: "that's Akhona and Samke Zwe n lizwi's gf" Nelo stood behind pressing his hard dick on my ass

Nelo: "let's drink" we all went outside to where they were parked they took out camp chairs and cooler boxes we all sat around well I sat on nelo's lap

Nelo: "I love you nana" he wispheres and kissed my neck making me giggle

Me: "I love you more daddy ka Melo you make me happy" I licked his nose

Qin: "that's gross"

Samke: "I think it cute"

Lizwi: "come I'll lick your nose baby" we all laughed

Samke: "baby you don't even have your red wings yet" lizwi strached his head

Lizwi: "I just can't do that"

Qin: "I earned my red wings with Asa"

Zwe: "my love gave me the honors just a few days ago" he winked at Akhona

Me: "what are you guys talking about" they all laughed

Qin: "don't tell me Nelo hasn't earned his" Nelo chuckled uncomfortably

Samke: "it when a guy goes down on you while you on your periods" I made a funny face same time

Me: "that disgusting"

Samke: "oh honey it not"

Me: "nah I'm good thank you"

Nelo: "it not a big deal nana and I'm getting mine soon"

Me: "no ways"

Nelo: "will use a shower" Siya and Loyiso came to us

Siya: "hey the meat is done I don't know if you guys wana come eat with us or you will

eat here”

Me: “I’ll come get ours”

Loyiso: “I’ll help you out” that’s when Nelo noticed Loyiso I felt his breathing pattern change he shifted under me

Me: “it ok I’ll get the girls to help Siya im right behind you”

Siya: “sho” they left I turned to look at Nelo he was busy clenching his jaws

Me: “I’m sorry” I pressed my forehead on his

Nelo: “move”

Me: “no” he lifted me off him and stood up

Nelo: “we’ll be right back”

Zwe: “don’t go fucking each other we want food” I smiled weakly and Nelo chuckled.

We went to his car he pressed me against the boot and got in between my legs

Nelo: “you knew he was here”

Me: “baby his Siya’s friend”

Nelo: “so I’m the fool here nana” I shook my head “even Siya thinks I’m a fool” I looked down and he chuckled “he doesn’t know that you slept with his friend” I nodded “wow Lelothando just wow”

Me: “baby”

Nelo: “think I should go home”

Me: “it my birthday” I said in a very low tone

Nelo: “I cant nana please don’t make me stay coz I’ll really lose it if I see him” I cupped his face with my tiny hands and kissed him deep I pressed my body against him harder he groaned and I pulled back

Me: “please don’t leave daddy” he sighed

Nelo: “keep him away from me nana coz whether he is Siya’s friend or not I’ll beat his ass” I smiled and kissed him

Me: “I love you”

Nelo: “I’m so getting my red wings for this” we laughed and walked back to the others

Qin: “that was a really quick quicky boy”



Nelo: "fuck you" he sat down and pulled me to him

Me: "need to get the food"

Nelo: "oryt" I stood up kissed his cheek

Me: "help me out" Samke n akhona stood up we went to the kitchen Siya wasnt there anymore we dished up for the guys Loyiso came in as we were finishing and stood behind

Loyiso: "you know the only reason I agreed to come here was so I could see you n spend time with you"

Me: "don't do that" he was pressing his body on mine

Loyiso: "I've missed you" I moved and carried on with dishing "what does he have that I dont" I looked at him and shook my head I took the plate Samke n Akhono took the others as we stepped out I turned and looked at Loyiso

Me: "he has my heart" he nodded

Akhona: "what was all that about"

Me: "just an exe that doesn't understand the meaning of the word exe" we laughed we have the guys food Nelo and I shared a plate. the rest of the night went by nicely around 02:00 people started leaving Nelo helped put Asa n Ndumo in my room we locked them in I gave siya my key, sizwe slept in his mom's bedroom, kyle slept in Melo's nursery luckily it had a double bed as soon as I saw that they were settled Nelo and I left for his place I didn't care about the others Siyabulela will see what happens to them. We got to his place by the time we reached the door I had lost all senses we fucked like rabbits throughout the whole early morning from the lounge to the kitchen the bathroom we finally dosed off after a round on the bed.

.

Woke up the because of the light shinning through the widow Nelo was still on top of me as heavy as he was I liked his weight on me I shifted a little his eyes shot open

Me: "morning daddy"

Nelo: "morning nana mmh I could get used to this" he kissed me hard while massaging my breast I could feel him getting harder n harder in me after a nice session of bapsing

we got up I wore his shirt he wore boxers we went to the kitchen I sat on the counter while he made breakfast. We spent the whole day in bed by the time I went home in the evening my poor punani was on fire Nelo bought me an iMac and two charms for my bracelet as a present. I got home mom wasn't back sane and Loyiso were still at home I have no idea why, I went to leave my presents in my room before joining everyone in the lounge they were just chilling drinking

Sthe: "Lelo cuz can we talk" I chuckled

Me: "not now"

Sthe: "please"

Me: "fine" I stood up went to the kitchen she followed me

Sthe: "look im sorry for how I behaved last night I was drunk"

Me: "I get it but please stay away from Nelo that's all I ask"

Sthe: "I don't want Nelo for God sakes his Melo's dad"

Me: "yeah I know" I rolled my eyes

Sthe: "please don't be mad at me"

Me: "I'm not mad cuz relax" she breathed out

Sthe: "thank you" I left her there went to my room I took my phone called mom just to check on Melo. As I was about to go out there was a knock on my door I opened and Loyiso came in

Me: "hey"

Loyiso: "so you really don't want me near you or you were just acting out because of your baby daddy"

Me: "I love Nelo with every part of me"

Loyiso: "you didn't answer my question" he walked closer to me

Me: "don't mess with my emotions Loyiso" he smiled revealing his dimple

Loyiso: "you played with mine yesterday" my phone rang and I answered

Me: "hey"

Asa: "hey are you home"

Me: "yeah why"

Asa: "I'm coming over tomorrow we need to talk"

Me: "about" she giggled

Asa: "qiniso and I are back together" she sounded so excited I just laughed and dropped the call I went to the door and opened it

Me: "please leave I need to sleep"

Loyiso: "I can join you"

Me: "no thank you"

Loyiso: "at least give me your number" I gave it to him and he left and I slept.

#### **part 74 I am scared of lonely**

I tossed and turned trying to sleep but was having trouble so I took my phone n started chatting but no one interesting was on line decided to go through people's wall noticed a status on Sthe's wall \*when all you need and want is love\* it had me thinking for a minute or two I logged out went to the kitchen warmed a glass of milk took it to my room and it worked like magic as soon as my head hit the pillow after drinking it I slept. Woke up in the middle of the night because of my phone I checked the caller ID and it was an unknown number

Me: "hello"

Caller: "hey come get your present" the voice sounded familiar

Me: "Loyiso?" He laughed

Loyiso: "yeah come outside I'm parked near the garage" I didn't even hesitate

Me: "I'm coming" I dropped the call got off the bed went to rinse my mouth put on my sleepers and sneaked out found him standing outside his car

Me: "where is it" he pulled me to him and smashed his lips to mine we kissed for the longest time he picked me up and I wrapped my legs around his waist while he kept his hands on my ass I could feel myself getting wet so I pulled back

Loyiso: "hey" I giggled

Me: "my present Mr" he laughed out loud and I smacked him lightly "ssh you will wake up Siyabulela"

Loyiso: "eish yeah sorry"

Me: "so why am I here" he put me down and opened the back door we got in and I sat on top of him

Loyiso: "I really did miss you Lelo"

Me: "oh really" he nodded "that's nice" put my hands around his neck and we kissed he took off my pj top then started sucking on my neck but I pushed him

Me: "don't do that" he looked at me confused

Loyiso: "do what"

Me: "suck on my neck coz you gona leave a love bite and I don't like it" he chuckled

Loyiso: "you don't like it or your baby daddy don't like it"

Me: "don't act like you jealous"

Loyiso: "what if I am" he bite his bottom lip while smiling

Me: "you have to care first" he slowly shoved his tongue in my ear I giggled and he took it out

Loyiso: "who said I don't care"

Me: "I know you don't" he kissed roughly his hand went in my pj bottom he started rubbing on my clit I let out a small moan and he pulled back

Loyiso: "tell me that's not caring" his voice was hoarse I swallowed hard

Me: "that's merely sexual" he laughed

Loyiso: "you love it though" I smiled

Me: "yeah whatever so why didn't you go home"

Loyiso: "needed to spend time with you first" I laughed

Me: "why"

Loyiso: "I have feelings for you if that's not obvious" I laughed until I realized he was actually serious

Me: "what feeling are we talking about here" he grabbed my neck and kissed me hard n deeply I held him closer wanting to feel his skin run against mine but he pulled back and pressed his forehead on mine

Loyiso: "I love you lelothando" I laughed so hard that I ended up in tears and he looked

irritated

Loyiso: "are you done laughing now"

Me: "sorry but come on Loyiso you don't even know me"

Loyiso: "I know you in a very intimate way"

Me: "exactly my point don't let sex confuse you" he chuckled

Loyiso: "you sound like a boy" I laughed

Me: "you sound like a girl catching feelings"

Loyiso: "I really do love you" I sighed

Me: "let's go sleep"

Loyiso: "can I sleep with you"

Me: "you crazy Siyabulela's room is a door away from mine"

Loyiso: "yeah so"

Me: "his going to kill us"

Loyiso: "I'll wake up early and besides siya is busy with Sane he won't even notice"

Me: "oryt lets go" we got out the car sneaked back in the house went to my room he took off his Jean and tshirt

Me: "no funny business" he chuckled

Loyiso: "we've had sex so I don't know what you talking about" I laughed

Me: "yeah well" we got under the cover he wrapped his arms around my body and I buried my face on his chest we slept.

.

Was woken up by my phone ringing by than I had my back on Loyiso and he had his leg between my thigh his arms still around me I checked the phone and it was Nelo I ignored it but it rang again so I answered

Me: "hey" he chuckled

Nelo: "it hey now" I giggled

Me: "hey baby" Loyiso moved I looked at him and he disappeared under the covers

Nelo: "better how you doing nana"

Me: "I'm good and you"

Nelo: "I'm well nana what you doing today I'd like to spend the day with you and Melo"  
just than I felt Loyiso's tongue on my clit and I gasp

Nelo: "nana you ok" I tried closing my thighs but Loyiso bit them and I let out a scream

Nelo: "don't piss me off lelo" I dropped the call and pulled Loyiso up using his ears I got off the bed just as my phone started ringing I ran to my bathroom and answered

Nelo: "what the fuck nana"

Me: "I'm in pain daddy it hurts so bad" I let out another scream

Nelo: "what's wrong nana talk to me"

Me: "it cramps daddy"

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana"

Me; "I'll be fine daddy I'll call as soon as mom is back with Melo I have to talk to her first"

Nelo: "ok nana I love you" I giggled

Me: "I love you more daddy" I dropped the call and walked out the bathroom found Loyiso sitting on my bed smiling

Me: "what the fuck is wrong with you!!!" He just smirked and stood up

Loyiso: "relax you too pretty to be all worked up over nothing"

Me: "that's not nothing th..." Didn't even finish he just kissed roughly shoving his tongue in my mouth I lost all senses and allowed him to possess me he lifted me up I wrapped legs around his waist he pinned me on the wall

Loyiso: "see what I mean stop getting all worked up for nothing" I sighed

Me: "just leave before everyone wakes up" he walked over to the bed and put me down

Loyiso: "go back to sleep beautiful I'll see you at breakfast" he kissed my forehead and left I let out a huge sigh I was so horny just went to take a shower I got out wore sweatpants and a vest with all stars took my phone plugged in my earphones played my music and left just needed to clear my head I took a walk I walked over 30 minutes than walked back home when I got home everyone was up Sthe Philisiwe n Sane were setting up the table for breakfast when they were done we sat down and ate Loyiso kept on staring at me and winking when no one was noticing after breakfast I did the dishes and

went to call mom

Mom: "lelo"

Me: "hey mom are you guys good"

Mom: "yeah we good"

Me: "when are you coming"

Mom: "ei Lelothando did I leave with something that belongs to you" I laughed

Me; "yeah actually you did mom my daughter" she laughed

Mom: "don't be stupid"

Me: "sbonelo wants to see his daughter"

Mom: "tell him to go die"

Me: "mom!" She laughed

Mom: "I'm joking I'll come back tomorrow"

Me: "oh oryt"

Mom: "yeah I need to talk to you and Siyabulela"

Me: "about what"

Mom: "I'll tell you later"

Me: "ok mom bye"

Mom: "I love you Lelo wam"

Me: "oh mom I love you" she dropped the call and I called Nelo

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey daddy mom is only coming back tomorrow so I guess you will see us tomorrow"

Nelo: "no ways im coming to get you now if I can't have both my girls I'll settle for you" I laughed

Me: "nice to know I'm a settlement daddy"

Nelo: "that's not what I mean but I'm coming to get you nana get ready"

Me: "oryt"

Nelo: "we going to chill with my friends n they girls nana"

Me: "oh" he laughed

Nelo: “we weren’t going to go coz I thought I’ll spend the day in doors with my mini family” I laughed

Me: “what do I wear”

Nelo: “just look good baby we going to Sibaya”

Me: “oryt daddy”

Nelo: “see you in a few” he dropped the call. I went to take a bath got out lotioned looked for something to wear settled for maxi thigh fitting dress with an open back and a slit all the way up my thigh it was black wore a red lace thong no bra did my make up wore my maroon short pump heels took my maroon handbag put everything I’ll need in it i fixed my hair when I was done I left my room after locking it as soon as I got to the lounge siya whistled

Siya: “you look gorgeous lil sis”

Me: “well thank you now big bro”

Philisiwe: “where you off to looking all sexy”

Me: “some of us have man” she rolled her eyes Sthe laughed Loyiso looked at me with irritation all over his face i left my bag on the couch went to the kitchen Nelo called just as I was drinking juice I went to the lounge took my bag said bye and left. Got to the gate and found Sbonelo standing outside his car in black skinny jeans with a black short sleeve tshirt hugging his muscles and navy sneakers. He met me halfway and picked me up we kissed before he put me down

Nelo: “you look absolutely beautiful nana”

Me: “you look hot daddy” I gave him a soft kiss he opened my door I got in and we left.

The ride was long but eventually we got there everyone was already there it was Qin Asa Lizwi Finoli Samke Akhona Zwe and Promise we gambled has early dinner which was more like drinks by the time we left the restaurant everyone was tipsy. We all went our separate ways Nelo drove to North beach instead of home it was already really late I took my shoes off we took a walk around the beach found a nice place we sat on the sand and just talked about everything and anything our dreams and hopes it started to drizzle so we left for his place we got there took a bath and cuddled.



## **part 75 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up the following day because my phone was ringing I answered it

Me: "hello"

Philisiwe: "wake up bitch we going shopping already spoke to aunt and she said it cool

Qiniso is going to drop us off at gateway" I chuckled

Me: "you didn't greet you stupid" she laughed

Philisiwe: "there's no time come home"

Me: "you guys can get me at Nelo's there's no point in me coming all the way there"

Philisiwe: "true will call you when we leaving"

Me: "cool" she dropped the call I got up took a shower got out wore nelo's tshirt just as I was about to get out the room his phone rang

Me: "baby wake up your phone is ringing" I shook up but he didn't wake "Nelo come on" he took the phone next to him and answered

Nelo: "hello" he was still sleepy "Ndoe?" He sat up and I looked at him he dropped the call and looked at me I just shook my head and walked out I heard him call out for me I walked to the kitchen to start on breakfast he came in running

Nelo: "nana I can explain" I didn't say anything just continued with what I was doing "nana please" I opened the fridge to take out eggs but he closed it "nana" I moved from the fridge took a pan and put it on the stove it was already getting hot I took the oil just as I was about to open the oil he banged the counter and I jumped a little "nana just listen to me"

Me: "you know I haven't said anything I don't know why you getting all worked up now let me make breakfast I need to eat m get ready before the girls get here"

Nelo: "what girls" I didn't say anything I just continued with making breakfast until I was done he was sitting on the high chair watching me I gave him his food and juice I also took mine we sat around the counter eating in silence. When we were done I stood up went to the bedroom I felt sleepy. I got under the covers just as I was about to doze off his phone rang again I checked the caller ID it was Ndoe I was hesitant at first but I answered it

Me: "hello"

Ndoe: "who are you give Nelo the phone now!!" I laughed like I seriously let out a loud laugh

Me: "calm your clit Nelo is busy and I'd prefer if you stopped calling and bothering my man"

Ndoe: "listen here kid if I were you I'd stick to boys your age" I laughed sarcastically

Me: "listen here granny you better leave Nelo alone I might not know you but I'll find you n I'll go all crazy on you now stop bothering us Sbonelo is my man my daughter's father and there's nothing you can do about it I might be young but you know what they say about small packages"

Ndoe: "you don't scare me" I chuckled

Me: "if I were you I'd be scared bitch" I dropped the call I was already out of the bed when I turned I saw Nelo standing by the door I threw the phone at him but he caught it before it fell on the floor

Me: "you better explain and you better explain fast before I walk out that door n never look back"

Nelo: "nana I don't know where to start"

Me: "how about why is she still calling you"

Nelo: "I don't know but .."

Me: "you love her"

Nelo: "I never did nana I just needed something from her"

Me: "sex" he looked hurt

Nelo: "ofcos not"

Me: "enlighten me" he sighed and sat down next to me

Nelo: "she works at work nana she's in charge of distributing tenders and I needed her to make sure I got this contract to provide something for eskom nana"

Me: "so you got in a relationship with her for that"

Nelo: "the only person I've been in a relationship with ever since I met you is you she thought we were in a relationship and I didn't correct her"

Me: "you basically slept with her hurt me for a stupid contract Nelo"

Nelo: "I needed it nana it a 5 years contract nana this is for us and Melokuhle"

Me: "don't do that don't use my daughter and I as an excuse"

Nelo: "I'm not nana you have to believe me it was purely a business transaction on my side"

Me: "I can't deal with this" I tried walking away from him but he pulled me to him and smashed his lips on mine I pushed him "don't do that Nelo don't use sex to get your way it the same thing you did with her don't make me feel that cheap" he looked

Nelo: "sorry I didn't mean to"

Me: "it ok"

Nelo: "please tell me where you going" I sighed and laid on the bed with my stomach

Me: "gateway with the girls" he got on top of me

Nelo: "you meeting them there or what"

Me: "they picking me up from here Qin is going to drop us off" he started sucking on my neck and I let out a small moan

Nelo: "why didn't you tell me to take you there" he lifted my tshirt up exposing my ass

Me: "Philisiwe called me in the morning saying we going they already had everything planned" he moved his hand under me and started rubbing on my punani my phone rang Nelo took it and answered it putting it on loud speaker

Nelo: "sho" Philisiwe chuckled

Philisiwe: "where's lelo"

Nelo: "under me" Philisiwe laughed

Me: "Nelo!!" He entered his finger in me and I moaned

Nelo: "see what I mean" Philisiwe was dying of laughter

Philisiwe: "ok ok stop before I get all crazy horny I get it just wanted to tell her we leaving now and you have about an hour to finish off"

Nelo: "that's not enough time but bye" he dropped the call he lifted me up and positioned me ass up face down after an amazing session we took a shower got out I wore my ripped black jean bum shorts with a vest and jordans I fixed my hair did my

make as I was moving my stuff from my handbag to my slig bag Nelo stood behind me

Nelo: "what are you guys going to do there?" I shrugged my shoulder

Me: "mainly shopping"

Nelo: "you can take my card" I kissed his cheek

Me: "nah I'm good"

Nelo: "please it will put me at ease"

Me: "no I'm fine really I have my card with me" he nodded and we kissed he grabbed my ass I stood on my toes with my hands on his chest I pulled back when I felt his hard dick and he laughed

Nelo: "you don't want me anymore"

Me: "nope I'm good for the rest of the year" he laughed

Nelo: "I see nana" we went to the lounge we sat down and watched TV until Philisiwe called saying they outside we went out qin came out the car and talked to Nelo I greeted the girls it was Philisiwe Sthe Asa and Ndumo I could see Sthe looking at Nelo while she probably thought I wasn't noticing Nelo was just wearing shorts n vest revealing his muscles after awhile we left on our way I got an sms from Nelo

\*sorry nana but the pin is 90305 I love you and have fun\*

I opened my bag and found his card I just shook my head and sent him a reply

\*thank you baby I love you more\*

Eventually we arrived at gateway we went to the saloon first everyone was doing their hair so I decided to do mine as well I did 24 inch jodier weaves werent such a deal back in 2009 at least where I'm from anyway I got done and used Nelo's card to pay. We went shopping I used Nelo's card to pay for the expensive things you know the kind of things you buy only when shopping with your parent than used my card at Mr price n legit. Than we went to grab a bite which turned to a drinking spree when we checked the time it was around 19:00 and there was no way we could get a taxi back home so I asked Nelo to come get us he said he will after about an hour he was still busy with his mom n Sfundu at pava. By the time he got to us we were all beyond tipsy he paid our bill and we left the ride back home was funny Nelo was pissed and the girls kept on

singing along to every song that played and if they didn't know it they would ask me to change it and I would. We got home after dropping off Ndumo and Asa, Philisiwe and Sthe got off but I didnt I looked at him and he kept his eyes straight when we were alone

Me: "I know you angry but I don't know why"

Nelo: "is drinking a habit now Lelo"

Me: "but you didn't have a problem with it before"

Nelo: "that's because you were with me"

Me: "ooh I'm sorry"

Nelo: "I know now go sleep it late"

Me: "I love you baba ka Melo" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "I love you to nana" he got out opened my door I got out he took my plastics from the boots and walked me to the gate when we got to the gate he gave me the plastic

Nelo: "drink lot of water and take some adcol before you sleep"

Me: "I will"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more" I got in and watched him going back to his car and driving away I went up the driveway and went in the house mom was back I could just hear Melo's screams my child is loud though even now I don't know who she takes after. I went to my room left my plastic went to the kitchen had a strong cup of coffee took a shower wore my pjs took the adcol before going to see mom she was in her room with Melokuhle I got under the blanket with them and took Melo while she called Siya he came in the room soon after that

Mom: "I need to tell you guys something"

Us: "yeah"

Mom: "I'm moving in with Mike"

Me: "excuse me"

Mom: "we all going to stay together"

Siya: "what do you mean"

Mom: "I mean you lelo kyle Mike Melo and the twins we all going to move in together"

Siya: "now that's fuckn bullshit why you gotta be so selfish" he walked out and banged the door I just sat there expressing no emotions the only thing that was on my mind was how Nelo was going to freak out knowing that kyle and I are staying together

## **part 76 I am scared of lonely**

We sat there I could hear mom calling me but my thoughts were too loud eventually after what seemed like a century I got off the bed took my daughter and her bottle as I was about to walk away from the bed mom held my hand

Mom: "Lelo say something" I let out a sigh

Me: "you should have talked to us mom before making that decision we not kids anymore you can't just take a decision that affects our lives and expect us to simply go with it"

Mom: "I didn't think it was going to be an issue"

Me: "mom you expect us to pack up our lives and you didn't think it was going to be an issue come on mother"

Mom: "I thought you and Siya were ok with Mike"

Me: "you don't get mom do you"

Mom: "get what"

Me: "we ok with Mike heck I like him mom and we love kyle the point here is that what you did was selfish you should have spoke to us first" I pulled my hand from her hold and walked out I went to Siya's room he was sitting on his bed under the blanket

Siya: "give me my niece"

Me: "did you change your sheets" he laughed

Siya: "don't be stupid ofcos now give her to me" I gave him Melo and joined them in bed

Me: "you angry?"

Siya: "yes I'm furious sis how can she just expect us to be ok with this"

Me: "he makes her happy Siyabulela"

Siya: "we should come first to her we her children" I put my head on his chest while Melo was on his stomach

Me: "at least you will be a varsity most of the time"

Siya: "I know Lelo but it still doesn't make it right and kyle is in love with you"

Me: "no his not"

Siya: "no he is Lelo and you know it, now how are you going to stay with him in the same house"

Me: "he also stays at his flat when campus is open so it won't be a problem"

Siya: "I don't like this"

Me: "me too but look at the bright side we getting 3 siblings out of this it won't just be us only" he chuckled

Siya: "I guess you right plus kyle is a good kid" I laughed "we going to be such a dysfunctional family"

Me: "totally with kyle n Mike being white the twins being colored than us n mom n Melo so fuckn weird I can already see people's stares when we going out" we laughed

Siya: "does this mean we going to be staying at scottburgh now or are they moving in with us"

Me: "I have no idea"

Siya: "ei mom though !!"

Me: "she's hurting siya go apologize"

Siya: "no"

Me: "go now! She's our mother siya and she's pregant she doesn't need the stress" he put Melo down and walked out mumbling bullshit I just laughed at him he came back after few minutes and we slept.

.

When I woke up Christmas morning Melo and siya weren't in bed, I got off the bed went to the kitchen everyone was there Sthe was making breakfast with mom

Me: "merry Christmas family"

Everyone: "merry Christmas" I took my daughter from siya and kissed her all over her

tiny face

Me: “merry Christmas baby lets go call daddy” we went to my room took my phone and called Nelo after the call we went to the dining room mom took Melo and fed while I ate after breakfast Philisiwe and I did the dishes while Sthe n siya cleaned when we were done I took Melo gave her a bath after dressing her she fell asleep I went to take a shower got out it was a cold rainy day I wore a simple black skinny jean with a white vest and a black biker along with my knee length boots I fixed my hair did my make up packed melo’s bag after everyone was done we left we used moms car we were spending Christmas at Philisiwe’s home in Malangeni we got there the whole family was there we chilled talking having fun later on we had lunch after the lunch the girls and I took a walk it had stopped raining as we were walking I saw these twins

Me: “Philisiwe who are those twins”

Philisiwe: “oh it Kwandile and kwanele”

Me: “mmh”

Mbali: “they are known players cuz” we laughed

Sthe: “every guy is a player” we laughed and they walked past us

Me: “woah!!”

Sthe: “yeah woah!!!!” We giggled

Me: “you felt that”

Sthe: “totally”

Me: “which one is that” I pointed at one of them

Philisiwe: “ooh that’s kwandile”

Sthe: “I could see myself having a 3 some with them” we laughed

Mbali: “that’s gross”

Sthe: “just imagine ooh Kwa yea Kwa deeper Kwa oooh ooh my God I’m about to come” she was moaning and touching her self I laughed so hard

Me: “hold your self”

Philisiwe: “why you getting all hot coz you got your Nelo who is more yummy”

Me: “doesn’t hurt to admire cuz and what you know about yummy boys” we laughed at



her

Philisiwe: "I might be into girls but I can still see you stupid"

Mbali: "can I go back to shepstone with you guys"

Philisiwe: "you will have to talk to mom and aunt first" Mbali is Philisiwe's younger sister she's 17

Me: "mom won't have a problem"

Mbali: "cool" we continued walking later on we went back home while walking back we ran into the twins again kwandile and I looked at each other and smiled as we walked pass each other. We got home and cleaned the kitchen than made coffee for the elders we left at night Mbali was with us. We got home we all went to sleep Mbali was sharing aunt Dolly's bedroom with Philisiwe.

.

Woke the following day we were spending the 26th at Nelo's house I woke up took a bath got out wore skinny jeans with a hoody and all stars when I got to the lounge everyone was up besides mom n Melo

Siya; "where you going so early"

Me: "Nelo is picking us up in a few"

Mbali: "can I see him"

Me: "no!"

Mbali; "hawu"

Me: "joking but not today"

Mbali: "oryt" I walked to the kitchen made myself a sandwich and coffee after eating I went to take Melo I gave her a bath dressed her warmly Nelo called saying his outside as I was packing melo's bag it was raining so Nelo had to get in so I opened the gate for him just as his car parked outside mom came in the lounge

Mom: "so when you coming back"

Me: "aah mom"

Mom: "when"

Me: "tonight"

Mom: "good and can't sbonelo greet anymore"

Me: "he can mom"

Mom: "than why is he not coming in"

Me: "I ,... I'll call him" I went outside and waved for him to come in he got out and ran for the door I smiled at him

Me: "love me that much" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "I do love you that much but I had no idea you would be wearing this" he was also wearing skinny jean hoody n all stars

Me: "I missed you"

Nelo: "not like I missed you nana"

Mom: "you better come in or go out but just close that bloody door it cold" we were standing by the door but they couldn't see us I moved Nelo got in we went to the lounge

Nelo: "uhm hi"

Mom: "hi sbonelo how are you"

Nelo: "I'm well mah and you?"

Mom: "hayi im good, when are you bringing my kids back" Nelo looked at me and I looked away

Nelo: "was hoping tomorrow mah coz we having dinner at my mothers and I'd like to get somethings for Melokuhle tomorrow but that's if it ok with"

Mom: "that's not what Lelo said"

Me: "I forgot" I lied

Mom: "ok you can go let me not keep you" Nelo took melo's bag I took Melo from Mbali and we left. We got to nelo's spent the whole day in bed sleeping and watching movies late around 18:00 we got ready I wore a grey pencil skirt below my knees with a grey vest and a black jacket with sandlas we left just after 19:00 when we got there everyone was there besides kwandile we waited for him. He came late with a girl that he introduced as his gf everyone was shocked since he had never mentioned her and it was the first time he introduced a girl at home. We had dinner over light conversation after

dinner Zama (kwansile's gf) and I washed the dishes after the dishes we all sat in the lounge just talking I got a text from kwandile

\*can we talk I want to explain\* I looked at him but he looked away

\*explain what?\*

\*about zama\*

\*theres nothing to explain kwandile\*

\*i love you lelo\* I looked at him and shook my head than sent Nelo an sms

\*daddy can we go I don't feel well please\* he looked at me and nodded we said our goodbyes and left

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "just stomach bug think I ate to much" he chuckled

Nelo: "maybe you pregnant again"

Me: "never" I remembered how Nelo and I have not been using condoms I made a mental note to see a doctor for contraceptives

Nelo: "you never know nana"

Me: "can we not talk about another child" he looked at me before looking back at the road

Nelo: "it wouldn't hurt having another child nana"

Me: "yes but not anytime soon" he sighed

Nelo: "if you got pregnant in January by the time you give birth Melo would almost be one"

Me: "sbonelo!! Drop it now"

Nelo: "fine sorry" we drove in silencer Nelo would look at me from time to time we got to his place and slept.

.

We woke up the following day we got ready and went to pava had breakfast there than went to parklands hospital Nelo needed to fix somethings we left we drove around town Nelo was busy fixing somethings by the end of the day I was fed up we had dinner at musgrave after dinner we went home Melo and I slept as soon as we got home Nelo

stayed up doing some work.

.

Melo and I went home the following day. Days went by fast I was having a great time with my cousin and brother. New Years eve came Nelo was hosting a party again my cousins and I along with siya were going there and we were all excited.

### **part 78 I am scared of lonely**

We all woke up on New Years eve everyone was excited anyway we cleaned and sat around the counter having breakfast

Siya: "let's go out .... You know before the party later on"

Mbali: "yeah!!" We laughed at her enthusiasm

Philisiwe: "hold yourself sis"

Sthe: "so where we gona go" we all looked at each other I bursted out in laughter

Me: "can't we just sit at home n watch tv" they all shouted no ways the same time

Sthe: "we could always go to the beach there's still lot of alcohol from lelo's party"

Siya: "nah not the beach"

Me: "where than"

Siya: "restaurant"

Me: "what?! No"

Siya: "why not"

Me: "we can't spend the whole day at a restaurant"

Siya: "really don't wana go to the beach though"

Mbali: "Lelo shouldn't you be helping Nelo out for tonight"

Me: "nah he has it covered" she looked at me and smiled I smiled back

Sthe: "we could just chill than go out later on before going to Nelo's"

Me: "guess that's cool" we all agreed so we just chilled at home drinking n talking Jr

(Siya's friend) joined us mom was at Mike's Melo was spending sometime with Nelo's parents (from that time Melo has always spent New Years Eve n day with Nelo's parents and Christmas at home) later on around 4 we started getting ready I was already tipsy

but the shower helped. I got out the shower lotioned I already knew what to wear I wore my short black thigh fitting dress with black pump heels and gold accessories put on make up fixed my hair letting it loose. Took my black sling bag with a gold belt moved everything from my purse I found Nelo's card I left it in my purse. Everyone was done they were just waiting for me so when I finished we locked and left we started at scottburgh mall went to spur we ate n drank by the time we left spur it was late Nelo kept on calling he was pissed off already which just made me giggle irritating him further we got to his place and it was packed Siya and jr had to park by the gate. We got off and went in straight to the kitchen everyone got something to drink I took a bottle of water than went to look for Nelo couldn't find him so I called him and told him to meet me in his room when I got there it was locked so I waited for him while standing and leaning on the door. He came up the stairs looking all Godly in black skinny jeans with a black shirt and black diesel sneakers he stood in front of me looking at me from my shoes to my head while biting his lip his eyes filled with lust n desire matching my own. Nelo: "if I take you in that room I won't be able to hold myself I'll fuck you senselessly" I gwak at him

Me: "I think I want that" he fixed his eyes on me before turning me to face the wall and pressing his body on mine his hand went up my thigh when he got to my ass he spanked me hard I let out a loud moan

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "daddy" he chuckled and squeezed my ass "holy fuck!"

Nelo: "do you want me to fuck you nana"

Me: "yeah" he turns me around to face him and he has a stupid grin on his face

Nelo: "I'd rather not" I felt so disappointed

Me: "why not" my voice was surprisingly too low

Nelo: "why did you come so late" he smashed his lips on mine his tongue instantly finding mine while his hand grabbed my hair yanking it hard I moaned in his mouth before he pulled back "I asked you a question nana"

Me: "we ... We got held up sorry" he nodded and opens the door we get in and he locks

it

Nelo: "this is going to be really fast nana we've got guest" I nodded seemed like my voice had disappeared he lifted my dress up leaving it around my waist than pushed me on the bed he took of my thong and started planting kisses biting n sucking on certain spots all the way up my punani his started circling my clit with his tongue driving me crazy I grabbed the cover he went on and on while I was moaning loudly

Me: "daddy please" I cried out and he chuckled

Nelo: "what nana" I pulled him up

Me: "I want you in me" he raised his eyebrow

Nelo: "do you now"

Me; "yes please" he shoved two fingers in me and I moaned out loudly he kept moving them in n out it was pure amazing torture he stood up dropping his jeans n boxers to his leg I look at his D with anticipation he pulled me to the edge of the bed he sank into slowly I closed my eyes and let my head hit the bed at the feel of his D in me he started moving fast and I lifted my pelvis up meeting him with every thrust as he pounded me hard n fast I tremble as I come while calling out his name digging my nails in his arms and he followed calling out my name as well and collapsed next to me after a sec or so he laid on the bed properly and pulled me on top of him he kept on playing with my hair until I fell asleep.

I woke up because of someone knocking on the door Nelo was asleep under me. I stood up pulled my dress down and I opened the door just slightly sticking my head out it was Qiniso

Qin: "you guys been in here for over two hours tell Nelo to come out already"

Me: "oh ok"

Qin; "where is he anyway" I looked at Nelo on the bed with his jeans on his legs and sneakers still on and laughed

Me: "asleep" Qin laughed

Qin: "one would think with Melo you two would stop fucking so much"

Me: "hey! What is that supposed to mean"

Nelo: “nana who is that” I looked at him he was sitting up on the bed

Qin: “ayi fuck you man you can’t invite us here and sleep while we drinking”

Nelo: “eish sorry boy we’ll come out now”

Qin: “sho and stop fucking so much” he walked away while laughing I closed the door

Me: “daddy”

Nelo: “come here” I got on top of the bed “sit on me” I giggled and lifted my dress up and sat on him

Me: “we should go out”

Nelo: “soon” he grabbed my neck we kissed for every long time I could feel his D getting harder n harder under me he lifted me up a little and sank me in him slowly after another session of bapsing □ we freshened up and went to the others Philisiwe shook her head n whistled as soon as she saw us Nelo just laughed and kissed my cheek

Philisiwe: “you two are something else”

Me: “don’t start Philisiwe” she and Nelo high fived “don’t encourage her Nelo”

Nelo: “what did I do nana” I rolled my eyes

Me: “I’m hungry have you guys eaten”

Philisiwe: “sex will do that to you” everyone laughed

Me: “Philisiwe!!” She just shrugged her shoulders

Philisiwe: “was just saying”

Mbali: “yeah we’ve eaten already”

Nelo: “I’ll go get us food” he kissed my cheek and left

Mbali: “you guys are so in love it so cute” I laughed

Philisiwe: “ncooh you wana be in love lil sis” she said sarcastically

Me: “where’s siya”

Sthe: “outside with the guys n Asa”

Me: “oh cool” Nelo came back with meat rolls n chakalaka we shared a plate after eating we went outside and joined everyone we drank and when it was close to midnight we did the count down at 00:00 I welcomed 2010 in my man’s arm and his lips on mine. I didn’t even remember when I went to bed when I woke up the following day

with a banging headache naked and Nelo next to me I shook him lightly but he didn't wake up so I shook him harder and his eyes shoot open

Nelo: "what's wrong nana"

Me: "my head hurts so bad" he chuckled

Nelo: "that's what's you get when you get too drunk"

Me: "Nelo" I cried out

Nelo: "ok wait here" he got out the bed naked put on his boxers and was about to step out the room when I called his name and he looked at me

Me: "get dressed im sure we not the only people in the house"

Nelo: "but I got my boxers on"

Me: "just get dressed" he sighed and walked to closet took out a short n vest he got dressed and left. He came back with a plate filled with meat and hot sauce and water we ate after eating he gave me pills I took them and slept.

Woke up a while later I'm bed alone I made the bed went to take a shower came out lotioned got dressed in leggings and vests went downstairs found almost everyone there eating and drinking

Qin: "you sure can get down" he laughed and I looked down

Nelo: "Qin don't" he was also laughing "come here nana" I went to him and he made me sit in his lap

Me: "where's my family"

Nelo: "went to get ready we going to mgababa"

Asa: "did you even see what time it is" she sounded like she's angry

Me: "no"

Asa: "well we've been waiting for you Nelo refused to wake you up!"

Me: "sorry"

Qin; "it not a big deal we leaving late anyway" Asa stood up and stormed to the kitchen

Akhona: "what was that about"

Qin: "moods" the guys laughed I stood up and followed her

Me: "what's wrong why you angry"



Asa: "I'm just sick n tired everything being about the precious Lelo and Nelo"

Me: "oh I'm sorry you feel that way"

Asa: "don't i don't want your sorry just stop parading your little family like your royalty"  
she left me in the kitchen all shocked Nelo came in

Nelo: "what was that about"

Me: "I don't know baby"

Nelo: "oh well let her be nana come" we went back to the lounge Asa was sitting on  
Qin's lap crying Qin looked at us rolled his eyes and murmured words Nelo laughed.

Later on everyone got ready I wore bum shorts with a tank top and all stars Nelo wore  
skinny jeans with all stars and short sleeve tshirt we all left for mgababa finding parking  
was a nightmare but eventually we found it siya and my cousins met us there and fun  
was had.

.

On the 2nd of January the plan was to go get Melo at Nelo's parents spend the night at  
Nelo's since he was going back to Mpumalanga on the 3rd. I was woken up by my phone  
ringing it was Nelo's mom I sat up and answered

Me: "hello mah"

N's mom: "where's sbonelo I've been trying to reach him but his phone is on voicemail"  
she was panicking

Me: "his asleep mah"

N's mom: "please come to margate hospital Lelo something is wrong with Melokuhle" I  
dropped the call and shook Nelo it was around 03:00 in the morning he woke up we got  
dressed and left he drove like a racer I just sat on there with tears flowing and my mind  
a miles away

## **part 79 I am scared of lonely**

It felt like Nelo was driving backwards the car couldn't be fast enough I could hear him  
calling out for me but my thoughts were once again too loud. I looked at him when he  
grabbed my hand the car had stopped at the robot

Nelo: "nana please stop crying" I shook my head violently

Me: "Nelo please drive faster I cant hold on anymore" he nodded and drove right through the red robot he didn't stop at any other robot he kept on trying to reassure me even though his own voice was failing him. Eventually we arrived at the hospital I didn't even wait for Nelo I ran for the entrance and got to the reception

Me: "I'm looking for Melo my daughter" the receptionist looked at me like I'm crazy I felt like slapping her at that moment "you idiot where's my daughter" I shouted

Her: "ma'am I don't know of any Melo when was she ..." Nelo interrupted Her

Nelo: "it Melokuhle Othandiwe Ngcobo I don't know when she was admitted but we just got a call" the nerve of that girl she had time to stare at Nelo like his the last chocolate at the shop not saying anything until I grabbed her shirt

Me: "you gona help us or you just going to stare at my man like that" I let go of her

Her: "uhm I,.. I'm sorry ma'am please follow me" we followed her

Nelo: "that wasn't necessary" he whispered

Me: "don't even dare mxm" we got to her room I barged in I trembled as I saw her on the bed with pipes all over her tiny face which was turning bluish I ran to her bed wanting to lift her up and letting her rest on chest. Nelo tried holding me but I moved from him i kneeled next to her bed and cried

Me: "Nelo what's happing to our child why is she turning blue"

N's mom: "we still waiting for the doctor they running tests but she's stable now Lelo" I stood up and looked at her

Nelo: "what happened mom"

N's mom: "she was sleeping with Sethu than we heard Sethu call out for us when I got to her room Melo was breathless" I didn't even ask anything in a speed I was on top of Sethu punching her

Me: "she's just a child you hate me that much that you would harm my baby" I lost all sense of respect and home training Nelo tried lifting me off Sethu but I was surprisingly strong "she's just a baby Sethu a bloody baby if you hate her parents than deal with us" Nelo managed to pull me off her but I was still kicking the air trying to get to Sethu Nelo

held me firmly

Me: "fine!! Fine sbonelo let me go"

Nelo: "nana calm down please"

Me: "I'm calm put me down"

Nelo: "promise me you calm"

Me: "sbonelo Ngcobo im calm now put me down" he put me down I fixed my hoody

Nelo: "now someone explain what's happening to my child"

Sethu: "I don't know sbonelo I really don't brother she was just ok when we slept but I woke up because I had to pee that's when I noticed she wasn't breathing properly and her skin was changing it colour"

Nelo: "what did you do to my child Siphosethu" Sethu started crying

Sethu: "nothing I swear Nelo you have to believe me"

Nelo: "don't start with your crocodile tears" honestly speaking the only thing that was running through our minds was that Sethu did something to Melo I know it wrong but Sethu hated me from the first time we met

Sethu: "Nelo"

Nelo: "what did you do" she ran to her mothers arm she held her brushing her back

Nelo went out and came back with the doctor

Doc: "so you the parents of this little fighter"

Me: "what's wrong with her"

Doc: "we still waiting for the lab but it looks like it cyanosis"

Nelo: "what causes it"

Me: "is it curable"

Doc: "yes it treatable but we might have to perform surgery to avoid it being consistent"

yoh! I let out a waterfall "it nothing hectic we just have to wait for the results to come back than we'll know if it central or peripheral"

Me: "she's just a baby" I said between sobs

Nelo: "what caused it"

Doc: "it caused by lack of oxygen you see when she doesn't get sufficient oxygen from

the lugs her blood turns blue that's why her skin colour was changing but right now we giving her some glucose and she's on a ventilator at the moment we looking at her heart, lungs and several types of haemoglobin" kwandile came in at that moment I was leaning on Nelo

Kwandile: "Lelo" his voice was barely a whisper I ran to him and he held me tightly pressing his chin on my head I just let it all out I cried harder than before he didn't say anything he just held me tight. Throughout my pregnancy I learned to lean on kwandile when I was hurting he was there all the time just comforting me I felt better in his arms than I did in Nelo's arms, he was there while Nelo was out n about being busy with his life kwandile was there throughout all the hardships going in and out of hospitals with me.

Kwandile: "she's strong just like her mommy she's going to be fine ok" I nodded "remember what I said" I moved my head from his chest and looked at him "I'm here for the both of you I'll protect you it ok to be weak" someone cleared their throat that's when I remembered I was in kwandile's arms right in front of Nelo and his family I moved from kwandile and went to lean on Nelo he wrapped his hand around my waist

Me: "I'm sorry I don't know..." I whispered

Nelo: "it ok nana I get it"

Doc: "uhm we won't get the results until morning and she needs to rest so I'd suggest you all leave and come back in morning"

Me: "I'm not leaving my daughter"

Nelo: "yeah me too"

Doc: "but there's nothing you can do for her now"

Us: "we not leaving!!!"

N's mom: "listen to the doctor"

Nelo: "mom no" the anger in his voice even scared his mom

Doc: "I'll leave you to it" the doctor left us

N's mom: "we'll see your'll in the morning I'll bring something for your'll as soon as the shops open"

Me: "thank you mah and we sorry Sethu"

Nelo: "I'm not until those results comes back you to blame and you better pray to your God or ancestors that my daughter pulls through or I swear to God I'll kill you Sethu"

Sethu: "mom!!"

N's mom: "let's go" they all left Nelo's dad n Sfundu had been silent the whole time

Nelo: "kwandile you can leave" he wasn't even looking at him

Kwandile: "you sure"

Nelo: "I can take care of my family now go"

Kwandile: "I'll see you guys in the morning" he left as soon as the door closed Nelo moved from me

Me: "baby" he kept his eyes on Melo "baby I'm sorry"

Nelo: "not now Lelo"

Me: "but.."

Nelo: "shut up just shut up please our daughter is sick instead of being vulnerable with me you would rather find comfort in my brothers arms"

Me: "you know it not like that" he sat on the couch

Nelo: "come" I went to him and he pulled me to him and laid on the couch with me on top of him

Me: "what's wrong with her daddy how can she just get sick out of nowhere" he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "she's going to be fine nana she's got our blood running through her veins"

Me: "what if she doesn't get better"

Nelo: "don't talk like that nana" I sighed "I love you ok I love you both more than anything and I'm not losing one of you"

Me: "I love you more" he put his hand on my head massaging it until I fell asleep.

Woke up in the morning nelo was talking to the phone I went over to melo's bed her skin was slowly going back to its normal colour I felt a little relief Nelo got done with his call and came to stand next to me

Nelo: "she seems a little better" I nodded "I called siya he said he will tell your parents

they should be here soon I also called work I got a week off”

Me: “oryt” he pulled me to him and wrapped his arms around me

Nelo: “I’m here for the both of youll you two are my girls” Nelo’s mom came back in the morning alone with some breakfast from wimpy we ate a little later siya and Philisiwe came with my clothes and toiletries I took a bath and got dressed Nelo used my toiletries but he didn’t change. We were just sitting in silence when Melo woke up with a loud cry I ran to her tried picking her up but couldn’t because Nelo went out and called the nurse she came in and opened that bed thingy that babies use in the hospital (I dont know what’s it called) I had to fed her while she’s on the bed. Mom came with Mike around midday they explained it simpler terms what was happening. They had left when the doctor came in

Doc: “I see little miss Ngcobo has pulled through the nurses told me she’s getting better way better than I had expected”

Nelo: “it would seem that way”

Doc: “the result came back and I’ve got good news turns out she just has an infection on her lungs nothing antibiotics and a couple of drugs can’t fix but we need to keep her here for a day or two just to manage her and ensure no further damage is done it really could have been worse”

Me: “so she’s going to be ok”

Doc: “yeah I’ll put her on antibiotics right away” we nodded and he left

Me: “daddy” I started sobbing

Nelo: “she’s fine nana she’s going to be just fine”.

Indeed Melo got better we stayed in the hospital the whole time our families would come see us Sethu also came Nelo still didn’t apologize to his sister. We left after 3 days at the hospital Melo was way better we went straight to Nelo’s house. It was already the 6th and we were moving to westville atholl heights mom and Mike found a really big beautiful house there everyone had their own rooms including Melo and the twins plus a study and play room for the kids there’s a pool house that aunty dolly and the new nanny that mom was getting would share it has a huge yard on the 10th Mike was

looking for an office space around Westwood he wanted to open his own surgery. It was the 8th I had just put Melo down for her midday nap I went back to the lounge where we were watching tv it was a cold rainy day when I found Nelo busy on my phone with tears falling down

Me: "ba... Baby" he looked at me "what's wrong"

Nelo: "I'll ask you one question and you will answer me honestly"

Me: "oh ok"

Nelo: "do you love my brother"

Me: "what? No ofcos not"

Nelo: "don't fucken lie to me" he roared and threw the phone at me I caught it and looked at it he was going through my messages and saw the ones kwandile had sent to me

Me: "it not what you think Nelo I promise" he stood up and grabbed my neck choking me

Nelo: "everything Lelo I give you everything!!! I show you my love in every possible way but you go n fuck with me" he let go of my neck I stumbled trying to catch my breath he slapped me so hard with the back of his hand I fall and hit the tiles with my head

Me: "it him not me!! His the one that loves me did you even see my replies to him" I cried louder he kneeled in front of me

Nelo: "you think I'm stupid you think I don't notice the looks you share and everything else in between"

Me: "my heart beats for no one but you I love you sbonelo it has always been you" I stood up took my phone and walked upstairs

Nelo: "nana!!" I stopped by the stairs and turned looking at him

Me: "what?!"

Nelo; "I'm sorry I just panicked I just love too much nana I don't wana lose you"

Me: "ok" I walked to his bedroom called siyabulela

Siya: "sis"

Me: "please come get us"

Siya: "what's wrong why can't Nelo bring you" I started crying "Lelo talk to me"

Me: "he hit me siya just come get us please" he cursed

Siya: "I'll be there soon ok" I dropped the call took melo's bag packed everything of hers

Nelo was now knocking at the door but I ignored him I took one of his travel bag and

packed all my clothes his knocks were loud Melo woke up and started crying I tried

hushing her but she wouldn't calm down I ended crying as well Nelo managed to brake

the door and got in he came towards us and I screamed for him to stop

Nelo: "nana please at least let me take her" I gave him Melo and she stopped crying

immediately I stood up and finished packing my clothes

Nelo: "what you doing"

Me; "what does it look like im doing"

Nelo: "nana im sorry"

Me: "you always sorry you should have given me a chance to explain instead of just

beating up again"

Nelo: "it was a mistake I acted out of anger nana please don't walk away from me from us"

Me: "I'm tired of being your punching bag you should have went to beat your brother

up not me I did nothing wrong"

Nelo: "nana please im sorry"

Me: "just let me" he sat on the floor and cried I finshed packing I took our things

downstairs I waited for 30 minutes or so downstairs while Nelo was in his bedroom siya

called I opened for him

Siya: "where is he"

Me: "please don't"

Siya: "no fuckn way Lelo look at your face even your neck SBONELO !!!" Nelo came

down siya punched him as soon as he reached the last stairs Nelo stumbled back

Siya: "you son of a bitch" he kicked him Nelo groaned in pain I went up to get Melo she

was asleep went back downstairs Nelo was sitting on the corner with blood all over his

face a huge part of me wanted to run to him to make sure his ok but another part was



saying let go. We left siya sped the whole way home he was shaking with anger we got home siya took Melo to mom I went to sleep after sending Nelo an sms

\*i love you God knows how much I love, you my daughters father and right now that's the only relationship we have. We done as a couple I can't take it anymore and please let me go, we have to be civil towards each other because of Melokuhle\*

.

The next couple of days were busy Nelo left for Mpumalanga, Philisiwe and Mbali had gone back home Sthe was going to be staying with her mother again. We finally moved to our new home and we all loved it, I was looking forward to starting my grade 11 at Eden College in Glenwood. New school new place new people I was looking forward to it all.

## **part 80 I am scared of lonely**

Settling in at our new home was easy everyone seemed happy, siya kyle and I went out exploring Westville the following day our side of westville was boring the street was quiet but we were used to it. Siya was just happy that he would be going back to Cape Town Kyle was forced to move out of his flat mom n Mike said there's no need for him to rent a flat while home is around durban and he has a car. Mom was 6 months pregnant her tummy was huge but she looked really nice pregnancy agreed with her, we all couldn't wait for her to give birth coz she was a nag oh she was carrying a girl n boy. Nelo called everyday I hated it coz it made me miss him while I needed to forget about him but it was impossible because of Melo he would say he loves us at the end of every conversation we had when I asked him to stop he would straight out refuse, I was just glad that after a week of our post breakup he stopped asking me if we could fix it but he acted like we still together.

.

Woke up Monday morning my first day of school reality sank in I had no friends I was gona be a loner I started crying im not good at making friends my phone rang and I answered

Me: "hello" I sniffed

Nelo: "nana are you crying"

Me: "no I'm not"

Nelo: "you crying I can hear your voice, what's wrong nana talk to me?" I let out a small sob

Me: "it nothing really im just freaking out a little about school" he laughed

Nelo: "come on nana at your age"

Me: "hey! It not that easy" he didn't stop laughing I ended up laughing as well

Nelo: "you gona be fine man"

Me: "I guess, anyway why you calling so early"

Nelo: "just wanted to wish you good luck for today"

Me: "oh thank you that's nice of you"

Nelo: "I love you and you know that" I didn't say anything "where's my daughter?"

Me: "she's with aunty dolly she's going to be sleeping with her if I have school the following day or mom if she's not working the following day"

Nelo: "I see"

Me: "let me get ready before I run late"

Nelo: "ok nana I love you guys"

Me: "oryt bye" I dropped the call charged my phone plugged my iPod to the speakers played music nothing like drake in the morning, I fixed my bed went to the bathroom I still had a bathroom in my room even though it only had a bathtub unlike the one I had before, I took my pjs off put them in the laundry basket took a bath quickly. Got out lotioned got dressed in my uniform I looked good, fixed my natural hair into a tight neat bun put on eyeliner nude lipstick took the earrings that Nelo bought for me wore them. When I was done with everything I took a picture and posted it on facebook using the caption \*first day of school feels good to have a chance of starting over\* I packed my school bag I had already bought everything that I needed. I switched my iPod off took my phone from the charger took my bag and blazer got out locked my room. Went downstairs through the loung and pass the dinning room to the kitchen I made myself a

cheese n ham sandwich took a glass of milk sat down on the high chair and ate. I noticed the time I was getting late and mom hadn't come downstairs she was going to drop me off at school before going to work so I went up to their room and knocked

Mike: "come in it not locked" I got in mom was still asleep

Me: "but mom was supposed to take me to school" Mike chuckled

Mike: "she refused to wake up"

Me: "how am I supposed to get to Glenwood"

Mike: "go wake up kyle or siya"

Me: "mom needs to see the principal first" Mike sighed

Mike: "give me a minute to get dressed I'll take you"

Me: "please hurry im running late already" he laughed

Mike: "leave our room than" I got out of the room went to Siya's room knocked and got in it wasn't locked I shook Siya and he woke up

Siya: "God Lelo what?!"

Me: "see your mom"

Siya: "what happened"

Me: "she was supposed to take me to school and she won't wake up"

Siya: "want me to take you"

Me: "no Mike is taking me"

Siya: "than what's wrong"

Me: "people are going to think I'm adopted" Siya bursted out in laughter

Siya: "don't be crazy Lelo" someone knocked

Mike: "Lelo lets go" I frowned siya didn't stop laughing I walked out "where's your bag and blazer"

Me: "in the lounge" we went downstairs I took my things and we left traffic was a nightmare we finally got to school Mike got off and I didn't

Mike: "Lelo come on"

Me: "Mike im scared" he laughed

Mike: "it ok just come you late already" he opened my door I got off Mike carried my

bag I put on my blazer and breathed out we left it was assembly already we stood at the back when the assembly was done we left for the principals office we waited a little before the principal came in they talked with Mike when they were done I was showed my class Mike went with me there we stood outside it

Mike: "calm down"

Me: "I'm calm"

Mike: "I'll send on of the boys to pick you up, you got cash?"

Me: "yeah"

Mike: "ok bye love you"

Me: "love you" he kissed my cheek and left I got in the class everyone turned and looked at the door

Ma'am: "you must be Lisa" I giggled and nodded "find a sit" I sat next to this Indian girl.

Time flew the bell rang for the first brake I went to the cafe bought water n a pocket of chips went back to the class I sat there ate my chips while chatting to Asa

Me: "how's school going"

Asa: "I didn't go"

Me: "why?"

Asa: "just didn't feel like"

Me: "what's going on Asa" she called me and I answered

Asa: "I'm pregnant Lelo" she started crying I wasn't really surprised

Me: "don't cry ok have you told Qin" she cried louder

Asa: "Qin has a one month old baby Lelo and his not serious about me"

Asa: "Qin is not Nelo I know he won't want this baby" I sighed

Me: "don't do that to yourself Asanda don't compare Qin to Nelo they are two different people and besides you don't know how Qin is going to react"

Asa: "I'm scared Lelo what if he says I must have an abortion"

Me: "he can't force you to do something you don't wana do"

Asa: "my parents are going to be so disappointed Lelo what am I going to do"

Me: "how far are you"

Asa: "three weeks"

Me: "you caught on quickly" she chuckled

Asa: "was going to get my injection so the doctor said I should take a test first I did n it came out positive"

Me: "shit I was supposed to go get mine but I forgot"

Asa: "you should go soon"

Me: "yeah I will"

Asa: "I miss you" I laughed

Me: "you know you can visit me anytime you want right"

Asa: "yeah I know, I don't know how I'm going to survive school without you and Sthe"

Me: "you have Ndumo"

Asa: "it not the same" someone cleared their throats I turned to find one white girl from my class standing by the door

Me: "have to go we'll talk later"

Asa: "cool bye" I dropped the call

Girl: "you know phones aren't allowed in school ryt"

Me: "yeah so"

Girl: "you could get in trouble"

Me: "oh well" she giggled

Girl: "I'm Kate by the way" I smiled at her

Me: "Lelo"

Kate: "but ma'am called you lisa"

Me: "it my first name I prefer Lelo though"

Kate: "cool so why you sitting here by yourself"

Me: "no friends" she laughed

Kate: "I thought as much come" she took my hand I quickly grabbed my bag n water we went to this group of guys

Kate: "guys this is Lelo, Lelo that's shane, zee, Courtney, Trey, Mzo and Sebastian" Zee n Mzo were black while Shane n Trey were colored and Courtney n Sebastian were white

Me: "hi"

Seb: "I saw you in the morning you arrived late with your uhm" he ran his hand through his hair "dad" I giggled

Me: "yeah mom kinda bailed on me last minute that why I was late" the bell rang just than Kate Shane and I were in the same class so we walked to class, time went by 2nd break I chilled with Kate and her friends soon it was after school we were given our timetables and told which teacher will take us for what. I was with Kate and Zee when I saw my brothers as we were walking out the gate they were standing outside Siya's car in skinny jeans tshirts and sneakers

Me: "got to go guys I'll see you'll tomorrow"

Zee: "whose picking you up" I pointed to Siya n Kyle

Me: "my brothers" they looked at me confused and I laughed and left. I got to them and we shared hugs

Me: "did yal have to get out of the car"

Them: "yeah" I rolled my eyes

Siya: "we want to check out the girls" they high fived

Me: "seis high school kids"

Siya: "the younger the better"

Me: "hha I can't deal with you two" they laughed and we got in the car as we drove off I saw Sebastian looking at the car.

Kyle: "how was the first day of school"

Me: "cool just normal"

Kyle: "I see you made friends"

Me: "yeah"

Siya: "no boys Lelo"

Me: "what did I say"

Siya: "I'm just saying" we drove to musgrave had lunch than went home. I got home took a bath wore shorts n tshirt spent some time with my daughter.

The rest of the week was the same siya and kyle took turns with picking me up Mike

dropped me off if mom wasn't going to work Kate set up a group chat Saturday we were going out for ice skating and lunch.

I woke up Saturday morning because my phone was ringing and it was Nelo after talking to him I got off the bed went to the kitchen had breakfast, when I was done I woke Melo up fed her gave her a bath she went back to sleep. I took a bath got out lotioned wore black skinny jeans with a black n white tank top and all stars I let my hair lose did my make up took my slig back put in my card phone n lipstick went back downstairs kyle was watching TV siya was in pmb

Me: "please take me to the ice rink"

Kyle: "got a date?"

Me: "yeah"

Kyle: "no find your own way there"

Me: "but I can't drive" he chuckled

Kyle: "tell your date to come pick you up doesn't he have a car"

Me: "ok fine was joking I'm going to my friends now please take me there" he laughed

Kyle: "should have just said so"

Me: "you can be an ass sometimes"

Kyle: "yeah yeah whatever" I told aint dolly I was leaving and we left, when we got to the ice rink everyone was there standing outside kyle got out as I was getting out

Me: "where you going to?"

Kyle: "meet your friends ofcos"

Me: "do you have to" he smirked

Kyle: "well yeah you my little sister it only makes sense" he was sarcastic I rolled my eyes and we walked to them everyone smiled at we reached them

Me: "hi guys"

Them: "hey"

Me: "uhm this is my brother kyle"

Kate: "hey kyle" she flipped her eyelashes and boys laughed

Mzo: "you joining us"

Kyle: "nah just here to drop of my little sister" he messed my hair up and I punched him

Me: "you can't do that kyle look at my hair now" they laughed

Kyle: "I'll pick you up later" he kissed my cheek and left

Sebastian: "were you adopted" I laughed

Shane: "that's insensitive Sebastian"

Me: "it cool, nah I wasn't adopted his dad n mom are engaged and we all live together"  
yeah Mike proposed before we moved in and they getting married as soon as mom gives birth

Sebastian: "cool lets get in" we got in paid n changed our shoes and started skating I fall a couple of times before Sebastian came and held my waist we started skating together, later on we went to Mimmos for lunch after lunch we went to north beach and took a walk

Me: "I should call kyle to come pick me up"

Seb: "there's no need I'll take you home"

Me: "you sure"

Seb: "yeah I only came with Mzo and Shane there's space for one more"

Me: "cool" we chilled later on we all went out separate way I sat in front with Sebastian while Shane and Mzo sat at the back the ride home was fun Shane is a funny character. They dropped me off home at I got home took a bath got out wore sweatpants and tshirt than chilled with the family Siya was back mom n Mike were out.

## **part 81 I am scared of lonely**

Two weeks went by I had never felt so lonely so unloved my self esteem was at it lowest my insecurities shot up I yearned for some affection some love. I loved my daughter unconditionally she's the only thing that made sense in my life, yeah sure my family was there but it still wasn't the same I felt like there was a huge part of my life that was missing even though Nelo was still in my life it still wasn't the same. I needed something I needed the kind of love and affection one is suppose to get from their lover. I hardly slept I'd wake up screaming from vivid nightmares, I smiled and laughed when I was



around people when someone asked how I was doing I'd simply give my best smile and say "I'm really good hey" and they all believed it besides Sebastian he would look at me concentered and shake his head. My life was such a routine school, home, spend time with Melo and sleep every weekday. I wasn't talking to Kwandile anymore after the day Nelo found those texts he called apologizing I begged him to stop talking to me at first he refused but I made him see reason eventually he agreed that it was for the best. I also cut off all communication with Loyiso there could never be anything between us his Siyabulela's friend.

.

It was Friday Nelo was coming home since it was month end I hadn't seen him since the day he hit me I really wasn't looking forward to it, I woke up Friday morning took a bath got dressed after lotioning packed my school bag took my bag n blazer and left my room for the kitchen while I was having breakfast mom came in already dressed for work

Mom: "morning baby" she kissed my head I still had my relaxed hair

Me: "morning mom, slept well?"

Mom: "yes n you"

Me: "slept peacefully" I lied I didn't even get 2 hours rest

Mom: "finish up so we can go"

Me: "you not eating?"

Mom: "I ate already"

Me: "ok" I finished up quickly rinsed my dish, we took our things and left

Mom: "Ive found a nanny"

Me: "oh that's nice"

Mom: "she's going to start on Monday"

Me: "who is she"

Mom: "Thobeka from mthwalume she's 24 trying to save up for varsity"

Me; "hope she's nice"

Mom: "she seemed nice when I met her, when is sbonelo seeing his child?"

Me: "his coming home today so maybe tomorrow"

Mom: "how is this thing going to work since you two are not together anymore" I sighed

Me: "I don't know"

Mom: "Melo is too young to be with Sbonelo alone"

Me: "I know mom" she shook her head

Mom: "what did you get yourself into though Lelothando"

Me; "mom not now"

Mom: "not now not now when then"

Me: "I don't know ok " I snapped

Mom: "watch yourself young lady im still your mother"

Me: "yes mother" I rolled my eyes the rest of the ride to school was just silence we got to the drop off I got out opened the back door took my bag

Me: "bye mom"

Mom: "have a good day at school kyle will pick you up"

Me: "ok" she sighed

Mom: "I love you Lelo" I smiled at her weakly

Me: "love you too mom" she drove off I got in the premises went to find my crew at our spot only shane and Sebastian were there

Me: "hey guys" we hugged

Shane: "you good"

Me: "yep n you guys"

Seb: "we good"

Shane: "how come you don't ever talk about your bf when all the girls talk about theirs Lelo I've been meaning to ask you"

Me: "I'm single"

Shane: "really" he looked at Sebastian

Me: "yeah really"

Shane: "you wouldn't mind going out with me than" I laughed

Me: "you not my type Shane" Mzo came to us laughing

Mzo: "ouch bru"

Shane: "you not type too I like my girl blonde and with a flat ass" we all laughed

Seb: "that's why you single"

Court: "whose single"

Mzo: "can't you greet" she stuck her tongue out

Seb: "Shane and Lelo"

Shane: "dude you also single"

Seb: "yeah but someone has my heart"

Me: "whose that"

Seb: "just someone" the bell rang we went to our classes. Time flew before we knew it, it was after school Sebastian grabbed my hand just as I was stepping out of the gate

Seb: "you just going to leave without saying bye" I giggled and pushed him back lightly

Me: "ofcos not" he pulled me in for a tight hug it felt so good I pulled back quickly

Seb: "uhm" he ran his hand through his nicely cut brown hair he always does this when his a little nervous "I'll miss you Lelo have a good weekend" I giggled shyly

Me: "have a good weekend Sebastian" I kissed his cheek and ran to the car kyle drove off as soon as I got in

Kyle: "see you two are getting close"

Me: "his a good guy"

Kyle: "he wants you"

Me: "don't be stupid his just a friend"

Kyle: "don't like him" I laughed

Me: "his not your friend you don't have to"

Kyle: "mxm brunettes are stupid"

Me: "I heard the same about blondes"

Kyle: "I'm not stupid"

Me: "so you say kyle" I chuckled and he shook his head

Kyle: "being single is good for you Lelo"

Me: "what did I say"

Kyle: "I'm just saying keep it that way .... Ok?" I rolled my eyes

Me: “yeah whatever” we continued talking until we got home I went to take a bath got out wore short umbrella dress and sandals let my hair loose I needed to get my hair done so I asked Kyle to take me to town I just took my phone and wallet and we left.

Kyle: “you need to learn how to drive”

Me: “even if I did I still can’t get my license until 2012”

Kyle; “I’ll be attending soon Nsiya is leaving Sunday I won’t have time to drive you around”

Me: “ok I’ll get Sebastian to drive me”

Kyle: “mxm” he sounded so irritated I laughed at him

Me: “jealous much?” I was still laughing

Kyle: “let me be ... Ok ... Feelings don’t just go away” I sighed

Me: “you preaching to the choir big bro”

Kyle: “you can’t expect me to like someone you date Lelo”

Me: “yeah I don’t but it would make things a hell lot easier” he blinked a couple of times before frowning

Kyle: “I hear you where should I drop you off” I shrugged

Me: “I’m not familiar with this place but I need a saloon” he chuckled we drove around until we found a saloon on Smith Street

Kyle: “let me know when you done” I got off and walked in, it was packed I had to wait over an hour eventually a chair was free I just did straight back when I was done I paid mom picked me up on her way from work. We got home late had dinner after dinner I took Melo and we went to sleep.

.

Woke up Saturday Nelo was coming to pick us up, I got up Melo was already up just staring into space next to me I laid on my back staring at the ceiling and exhale loudly. I got off the bed and walked to the window opening it I was welcomed by a cold breeze it was raining the air was chilly and fresh our house is surrounded by trees. My phone rang and I picked it up it was Nelo telling me that he is on his way I checked the time it was only 08:30 am I dropped the call. I took Melo and we went to the kitchen I found aunt

dolly already preparing food for her

Me: "morning mah"

Dolly: "morning Lelo you two slept well"

Me; "yeah"

Dolly: "you not happy Lelo you might fool everyone but you can't fool me"

Me: "mah?" Truly aunt dolly knows me too well

Dolly: "when you ready to talk about it im here, now give me my granddaughter" I

sighed and gave her Melo I ate while she fed her

Me: "sbonelo is already on his way and I still need to bath"

Dolly: "it ok I'll get her ready"

Me: "thank you" I finished eating washed my plate and glass than went to bath got out lotioned wore leggings with a black tank top did my make up sprayed my hair wore my knee length boots and a black biker. Went to Melo's nursery packed her bag, Nelo called saying his by the gate I opened for him than took Melo's bag and my purse. He knocked I opened the door for him he took Melo after hugging me he ran to the car strapped her in her car seat I got in

Nelo: "I've missed you so much nana" he kissed my cheek I've also missed him horribly but I couldn't let him know that

Me: "it been a while" he looked at me smiling

Nelo: "it certainly has, let get out off here" he drove off

Me: "how are you"

Nelo: "I'm breathing nana I just really missed my girls"

Me: "we've missed you two" I found myself saying without even thinking about it, he looked at me before looking back to the road

Nelo: "that's nice to hear" he took my hand and put it on his thigh I tried removing it but he just held it tighter

Me: "so where we going"

Nelo: "was thinking pava since it close than we could go home"

Me: "oryt" the car stopped at the robot he looked at me and smiled

Nelo: "you look beautiful nana I really missed you I still miss you" he attempted to kiss me but I looked away

Me: "if you not going to respect me please take us back home" he sighed and started driving again

Nelo: "I'm sorry" we got to pava he took his daughter started at pick n pay bought her food n diapers and everything she needed, went to woolworths bought her some clothes than went to spur got take aways and left for his house. I fed Melo while he dished for us

Nelo: "you do know that I'm sorry right.... For what happened the last time we were here"

Me: "I know Nelo you've tol.." My phone rang and it was Sebastian I found myself smiling before answering

Me: "hey"

Seb: "hey you, you good?"

Me: "yeah I'm good n you?"

Seb: "I'm cool ..... Uhm ..." I could just tell he was running his hand through his hair I found myself giggling at the thought "I was just checking on you you've been quiet on the group chat"

Me: "I've been busy"

Nelo: "the child is hungry and you busy talking to your boyfriends mxm" he took Melo and her food

Seb: "who is that" I looked at Nelo and shook my head

Me: "it no one"

Seb: "ok cool I'll see you Monday"

Me: "see you Monday Sebastian" he chuckled

Seb: "like how you call my name" I chuckled

Me: "bye Sebastian" he sighed

Seb: "bye Lelo" I dropped the call and looked at Nelo who looked like he was ready to bite my head off

Me: "did you really have to say that"

Nelo: "you dating now Lelo"

Me: "no I'm not even I was Nelo we not together"

Nelo: "we taking a break"

Me: "no we broke up"

Nelo: "what is it with you and white boys" I laughed

Me: "his my friend from school"

Nelo: "am I no one to you nana" he muttered looking down he looked wounded and I instantly felt bad I look down and played with my nails

Me: "I didn't mean it like that Nelo"

Nelo: "you did" I sighed in exasperation

Me; "I'm sorry"

Nelo: "I need you nana I love you please" he sat Melo down on her chair and came to me "I can't go on knowing we not together I love you so much nana please forgive me" tears start falling from his eyes I found myself crying as well I love him so much it hurts but I can't a part of me says give him another chance but another part says no his not worth the heartache

Me: "Nelo please let it go let me go I've cried so much already I can't go on" he held both my cheeks but I looked away

Nelo: "I love you nana" he says as a way of explaining

Me: "I love you too but I can't please respect that sbonelo for Melo's sake"

Nelo: "but .."

Me: "no but" he nodded. We ate in silence after eating I went to give Melo a bath and put her to sleep, I went back to the lounge Nelo was watching TV under a blanket I joined him resting my head on his chest he wrapped his arms around me it was already late

Me: "when are you taking us home"

Nelo: "was hoping you guys would sleep over"

Me: "no why"

Nelo: "please nana I don't get to spend time with Melo and besides mom wants to see her tomorrow"

Me: "you can't just expect us to sleep over you should have told me"

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana but please stay"

Me: "I didn't even bring something to wear" he smiled

Nelo: "I bought you something"

Me: "eh?"

Nelo: "I bought it the last time I was here but didn't get a chance to give it to you"

Me: "well go get it" he kissed my cheek and stood up ran to his room came back with a forever new paper bag

Nelo: "hope you love it" he gave it to me I opened it, there was a nice black handbag with a cream dress

Nelo: "try it on" we went to his bedroom I took my clothes off and put it on, it was just below my knees tight fitting with lace on the bag all the way to my ass it showed my hips n ass perfectly and hugged my waist I looked good Nelo whistled in appreciation I stood in front of the mirror Nelo stood behind me

Nelo: "and you expect me to let go of you nana" he breathed on my neck my blood started boiling

Me: "Nelo" he kissed my neck

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "please stop please" he stopped and looked at the mirror our eyes met

Nelo: "I love you" I nodded and moved from him I took the dress off went to the bathroom took a shower got out lotioned using his things wore his sweatpants and tshirt I joined them in bed and we watched a movie.

.

Woke up Sunday morning with my head on Nelo's chest and Melo on top of him they were still asleep. I got up took a shower got dressed in what I was wearing went to the kitchen I made breakfast as well as Melo's food than went to wake them up

Nelo: "hayi hayi nana"



Me: "wake up"

Nelo: "5 more minutes"

Me: "no" I pulled the blanket away from him than took Melo

Nelo: "but nana it cold"

Me: "Nelo it already late we still have to go to your mothers and I have school in the morning" he sat up and rubbed his eyes

Nelo: "fine"

Me: "food is ready" I left him got to the kitchen fed Melo he came in kissed my head and took his food after feeding Melo I also ate. While I gave Melo a bath Nelo was also bathing when I was done I got dressed we left, we drove pass Mr price I bought shoes I had to wear my biker coz it was freezing. We spent the day at Nelo's parents house luckily kwandile and Sethu were not there. After lunch Nelo took us home I got home finished up on my homework and chatted to my friends we were discussing Shane's party on Saturday it was going to be his birthday on Wednesday.

## **part 82 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up Monday morning and prepared for school it was mom's day off so Mike took me to school. As usual I was early I went to our spot found Kate Mzo Sebastian and Shane there

Me: "hey guys" we shared hugs

Shane: "looks like you had a good weekend you got that spark in your eyes" I laughed

Me: "don't be crazy"

Shane: "did you get some this weekend" the others laughed besides Sebastian

Me: "don't be a perv Shane" he shrugged his shoulders

Mzo; "what did you this weekend mine was boring spent it in Cape Town with dad and his gf"

Kate: "the cape can be so boring" she rolled her eyes

Me: "nothing much just spent it with my daughter" Sebastian's eyes popped out

Seb: "you have a daughter"

Kate: "how come you've never mentioned that"

Me: "yes I have a daughter I've never mentioned it coz it has never came up"

Mzo: "how old is she" I smiled

Me: "two months"

Kate: "wow!"

Shane: "yeah wow"

Seb: "I have to go I'll see you guys during lunch break"

Shane: "dude we still have over 30 minutes before the siren rings" he just took his bag and left I don't know why but it kinda made me a little upset, we continued talking but my mind n heart was not there anymore. The siren rang we had assembly than attended soon it was the first break Sebastian didn't come to chill with us after break I had physics Sebastian and I were in the same physics class he sat at the far back I'd look at him and catch me looking at me but he would look away as soon as our eyes met. We had another period than break again Sebastian still didn't come to us I seriously felt hurt i don't know why I was catching feelings but I was Shane would look at me in an apologetic way if I asked about Sebastian. Soon it was after school as I stepped out the gate I saw his car driving off in a speed, a part of me knew he was acting this way because of Melo but I didn't understand why would me having child make him act this way. Anyway I went to Mike he was picking me we had to go pass McD drive through and get a meal for mom her cravings were crazy she ate McD like there's no tomorrow she would even make poor Mike go get it around dawn. I got home had lunch took a bath and burried myself in my school work I was few chapters ahead of everyone in all my subjects after all I had no life outside school. When I felt tired I decided to Asa I hadn't spoken to her since the first day of school

Asa: "hey" she sounded so broken

Me: "hey how are you"

Asa: "I'm ok Lelo and you"

Me: "I'm ok, have you spoke to Qin"

Asa: "yes"

Me: "and?" She sighed

Asa: "he doesn't want Lelo" she sniffed "he says he has a new born what is he going to do with another child"

Me: "he should have thought of that before he went raw on you" she started sobbing

Asa: "he wants me to have an abortion Lelo what am I going to do"

Me: "he can't force you to do it Asa"

Asa: "I can't raise a child alone Lelo and I still have school my dad is not like your dad he will cut me off and I'll be forced to drop out of school"

Me: "so what you thinking"

Asa: "I'll have the abortion"

Me: "don't take that decision based on emotion Asanda coz you will regret it, just think about it first" she sighed

Asa: "I'll see now let me rest we'll talk later"

Me: "ok bye" I dropped the call and called Nelo

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "how can your friend do this to Asa"

Nelo: "nana don't get involved"

Me: "how can I not when Qin is being a bully"

Nelo: "it has nothing to do with you nana let it go"

Me: "she's my friend Nelo!!"

Nelo: "she knew what she was getting into"

Me: "agh Nelo!"

Nelo: "yes, now let's rather focus on us and giving Melo a little brother"

Me: "fuck off sbonelo!!" He laughed and I dropped the call switched my phone off. I went to the lounge that's when I noticed there was a stranger there

Me: "hello"

Her: "hi"

Dolly: "oh now you see us when you came back from school you couldn't even greet" I looked down

Me: "sorry mah"

Dolly: "it's ok I get it, this is Thobeka your mom spoke to you about her already"

Me: "yes, hi sis Thobeka" she smiled shame she was a little cute

Thobeka: "hi how are you"

Me: "I'm cool just starving"

Thobeka: "I'll go make you a snack dinner is almost ready" I laughed

Me: "nah I'll do it myself" I left them in a lounge, made a peanut butter sandwich with a glass of milk last time I had it I was still pregnant. I ate my food in front of the TV than chilled with Melo later on we had dinner after dinner I went to sleep.

.

Woke up when I heard someone knocking I sat up and rubbed my eyes the sun was already out shining through the window

Mom: "Lelo come out im running late already" I jumped out the bed check the time it was 07:45 I was still in my pjs I opened the door mom was shocked

Me: "I over slept mom"

Mom: "what happened to the alarm"

Me: "I forgot to switch my phone back on"

Mom: "guess you missing school bye" she left I went back to sleep, I woke up a while later took a bath got out go dressed in sweatpants and vests I ate than took Melo she was already fed and clean. We chilled in my room the whole day watching movies and napping only got out to get food. Late around 17:00 I switched my phone back on and texts from my friends came flooding I ignored them until my phone beeped an sms was coming through I checked it was from Sebastian

\*why didn't you come to school?\*

I replied

\*what is it to you?\*

Another one came through

\*hey, are you mad at me?\*

I replied again

\*do I have a reason to Sebastian?\* it took awhile before he replied

\*im sorry if I upset you lelo\* I choose to not reply, I put my phone away and played with my daughter. Later on we go downstairs for dinner after dinner I got to bed.

.  
Woke up Wednesday morning prepared for school mom drops me off when I get to our spot everyone is already there I greet and wish Shane happy birthday. Soon the siren rings we all go to our classes time flies to lunch things are weird between Sebastian and I it like he doesn't know how to act around me. The bell rings again we go to class which is over quickly on the 2nd break Sebastian pulls me aside from others

Seb: "hey" I flooded my arms around my chest and tilted my head one side

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "are you mad at me for some reason" he ran his hand through his hair and I watched it falling back to his face

Me: "why would I be?" The atmosphere between us was tense filled with too many unspoken words, he tries saying something but hesitate at first

Seb: "look im sorry about how I reacted when you said you have a child it just that I wasn't expecting it, I'm such an insensitive ass" his voice is hoarse as he talked fast while running his hand through his hair

Me: "yeah you are" he chuckled uncomfortably

Seb: "I like you Lelo .... A lot everyone in our group knows that and I think you've noticed it to" I look at him raising my eyebrow

Me: "like?" I said the word as if I'm trying to see how it sounds coming from my mouth

Seb: "yes I'd like for us to get to know one another on a personal level in a way that is more than just friendship"

Me: "oh"

Seb: "I only acted that way yesterday when you told you have a daughter coz I know a relationship between people who have a child is never truly over and my fragile heart couldn't take it I got jealous of what you and her dad share" I looked away coz there was so much truth in what he was saying

Seb: "Lelo look at me" I took a deep breath than looked at him his hair was a mess which made me giggle

Me: "I got baggage Sebastian"

Seb: "it doesn't matter" he pulled me to him holding my chin "how about dinner tonight and maybe a movie"

Me: "it a school night"

Seb: "lunch then after school I'm not taking no for an answer"

Me: "my step dad is picking me up"

Seb: "call him and tell him you having lunch with your friends and one them is going to drop you off"

Me: "I'll think about it"

Seb: "please do" his gray eyes were twinkling

Me: "let go we in school remember" he laughed and let go of me we went back to the other

Shane: "finally bru" him n Sebastian fist pumped

Zee: "don't be forward Shane"

Shane: "guess im the only who is single now and it my birthday"

Me: "yoh! Yaphapha shane yazi uyadika kakhulu futh mele ufunde ukuzibamba" (you so forward Shane you really irritating and you need to learn how to hold yourself) Zee and Mzo laughed while the others looked confused

Seb: "that's not fair" we laughed at them

Shane: "whatever you were saying Lelo same to you" I laughed and rolled my eyes the bell rang I called Mike before going to class.

After school Sebastian waited for me outside my class

Seb: "ready?"

Me: "yep" he took my bag and we walked to his car got in and drove off

Me: "how come your parents let you drive without a license"

Seb: "I have my learners and I don't like being driven around"

Me: "you gona get in trouble" he laughed

Seb: "I doubt" we went to sun coast Wimpy had lunch over light conversation when we were done he paid and we left

Seb: "can we go to the party on Saturday together"

Me: "we both going there anyway"

Seb: "yeah I know but the party is at night I could pick you up around midday we do something than go to the party later on"

Me: "sounds cool"

Seb: "shuu!! Great" I giggled

Me: "I like that I make nervous it cute" he laughed

Seb: "I'm glad you take pleasure at my discomfort" I leaned in and kissed his cheek he gave me the most gorgeous smile ever I flushed

Seb: "press play there" he pointed to the stereo I pressed and Justin beiber started playing that baby baby song yoh I've never laughed that hard I was in tears

Seb: "hey!! That's a very nice song" he started singing along

Me: "you so white" he put his hand on his chest

Seb: "you wound me Lelo" we laughed and we sang along all the way home

Seb: "shall I pick you up in the morning"

Me: "there's no need thanks though"

Seb: "I want to"

Me: "don't you have to pick up Shane from ballito"

Seb: "he will manage I wana pick you up"

Me: "you do know that my mom's workplace is near school so is kyle's campus"

Seb: "ok I guess it makes sense"

Me: "will see you tomorrow" I got off but he also got off

Seb: "can't I get a proper goodbye"

Me: "yeah come here" we hugged than I went home.

.

The rest of the week went by smoothly Sebastian made me laugh a lot and I loved it. It was Friday after school I was with the girls at pava looking for outfits for tomorrow as

we were coming out of Legit I bumped into someone and I dropped my phone coz I was busy chatting to Sebastian instead of watching where I'm going

Person: "so sorry" I knew the voice I picked my phone up than got up slowly "muhles wam?"

Me: "my God Tyson!" We hugged

Tyson: "wow what are you doing here? How are you?" I giggled

Me: "I'm shopping ofcos" I lifted my plastics

Tyson: "you no longer at sheppie high"

Me: "no we moved"

Tyson: "wow really"

Kate: "Lelo?"

Me: "oh I have to go Ty it was good seeing you" we shared a hug and as the girls and I were walking off tyson grabbed my hand

Tyson: "give me your number so we can catch up"

Me: "yeah sure" I gave him my number and we left

Zee: "who is that?"

Me: "an ex from back at home"

Zee: "his cute" we laughed and continued shopping later on we ate than left Zee's brother picked us up they dropped me off first.

.

Woke up Saturday morning Sebastian was picking me up 13:00 so I had time I went downstairs and made breakfast for everyone set up the table Melo was still asleep in my room I called everyone we all sat down and had breakfast afterwards kyle and I did the dishes. After the dishes I had to wake Melo up the way that child sleeps and she got it from sbonelo, I fed her than gave her a bath she fell asleep straight after bathing I had to get her dressed like that. After that I went to watch tv while chatting to Asa she was keeping the baby Ndumo went back to dating leon I don't blame her though we don't choose who we love I would know after dating Leon and Nelo. Around 11:30 I went to take a long bath got out lotioned got dressed in a black rippes boyfriend jeans with a



baby blue top tucked in and a black short sleeve boyfriend blazer did my make up topped it off with a dark matt maroon lipstick packed everything I'll need in my black handbag the one Nelo bought for me Sebastian called as I was finishing up I wore my mint blue heels told mom I was leaving and left. Sebastian got off the car as I was approaching it

Seb: "wow Lelo you look breath taking"

Me: "thank you, you don't look bad yourself Mr, you clean up good" he ran his hand through his hair "stop you messing up your hair" he chuckled

Seb: "it just happens without me meaning to"

Me: "come on let's go" we went to circus circus for lunch than watched a movie by the time we were done it was already late we left for Shane's house. When we got there the party was happening but it was chilled vibes hip hop, drinks, people braiing outside while others held conversations and others dancing, it was mainly kids from school Sebastian and I joined our crew as soon as we saw them. We had fun got drunk ended up sleeping at Shane's house the girls and I shared a room all 4 of us. Woke up Sunday morning freshened up had breakfast and Sebastian took me home, mom started shouting as soon as I got in the door and my head was pounding at that moment when she was done shouting Mike sat me down calmly and told me that I should have at least called coz mom was going out of her mind with worry I apologized and went to sleep I slept the whole day only got up to bath and eat.

.

Monday morning I woke up sick I was vomiting and dizzy felt hot I was even sweaty so Mike took me to see a doctor he stayed outside while I went in to consult

Doc; "miss Tolo how can I help" I told him what was going on

Doc: "when last did you get your periods?" My heart started beating fast

Me: "was supposed to get them December 27" he nodded

Doc: "and now it February" he looked at me as I started sweating "please take this and pee in it" I took the glass my hand was shaking as I returned it I felt like fainting as I remembered having sex with Loyiso I could feel his hands all over me tears started

falling I panicked and split a little as I thought of Nelo. I gave the doctor the glass back he dipped the stick in it and looked at me with sadness as we waited for the results.

### **part 83 I am scared of lonely**

Well the results came back negative thank God I got my injection done no way I was risking being pregnant again.

.  
It was March we had a week left before school opened for the 2nd term Sebastian and I were officially dating yeah we were exclusive like that, I was totally happy always had a smile on my face just the thought of him made me blush my life was drama free. Nelo knew I was with Sebastian and boy did he act out!! I still remember we were at his place Melo and I were spending the weekend with him I was in the kitchen alone making a bottle for Melo when my phone rang

Me: "hey baby"

Seb: "hey hun, you good?"

Me: "yeah I'm cool n you?"

Seb: "I'm cool I just miss you" I giggled

Me; "I also miss you so bad baby it making me sad"

Seb: "I know hun but I'll see you tomorrow right we having dinner remember"

Me: "yeah tomorrow night"

Seb: "cool my brother can't wait to meet you" we were going to have dinner with his brother and his brother's gf

Me: "hope his going to like me baby" he chuckled

Seb: baby are you nervous"

Me: "a little"

Seb: "oh how I'd love to see you right now"

Me: "don't make fun of me" he laughed

Seb: "I wouldn't dream of it my love" I could sense his grin on the other line

Me: "Sebastian!!" He laughed louder

Seb: "ok ok I'm sorry, I miss you though"

Me: "not as much as I miss you" he sighed

Seb: "what you busy with"

Me: "making a bottle for Melo I should go baby before she starts crying"

Seb: "ok hun later"

Me: "later" I hung up when I turned I was met by Nelo's eyes with anger all over his face

Nelo: "who was that"

Me: "Sebastian" I continued with what I was doing

Nelo: "thought you said he was a friend from school"

Me: "yeah he was" he took the bottle from me forcefully I just looked at him and rolled my eyes

Nelo: "don't play smart with me Lelo"

Me: "I'm not playing at anything Sbonelo Sebastian was my friend and now he's my bf" I saw a range of emotions going through his face anger hurt fear and regret

Nelo: "what about us?"

Me: "there is no us we Melo's parents and that's just it"

Nelo; "I love you God damn it we are a family what wrong with you" he shouted so loud I got scared and moved away from him

Me: "Nelo we are not together it's been over a month already you can't expect me to not move on"

Nelo: "you supposed to wait for me God! Lelo here I am thinking we will work things out and you busy with white boys"

Me: "sbonelo" I pleaded wanting him to calm down

Nelo: "don't you love me"

Me: "don't ask me a stupid question"

Nelo: "you going to leave that boy, there is no way you playing happy family with my child Lelo"

Me: "I'm not leaving him" he came closer to me and I moved back until my back was on the wall

Nelo: "yes you will and now!" He roared and I shut my eyes closed when I opened them he was standing near me looking at me with hurt all over his eyes

Nelo: "you scared of me" I nodded "why?"

Me: "you hit me sbonelo" he sat down on the floor and started crying I kneeled in front of him

Nelo: "I'm so sorry nana I don't want you to be scared of me I love you" tears were still streaming down his face I wiped his tears with my hands

Me: "I love you too so much sbonelo but please let go"

Nelo: "I can't nana I don't want to"

Me: "you can and you have to" he pulled me to his lap and burried his face on my neck we sat like that without talking I think close to an hour until Melo started crying

Nelo: "I'll go get her" he lifted me off and stood up went to hush Melo after dinner he took us even though we were supposed to leave the next day.

.

It was Saturday we still had a week left before school opens I was going out with my crew, than the following day Sunday Melo and I were leaving for Mpumalanga Nelo was really busy at work and he missed Melo and I had time so he begged mom for us to visit and surprisingly she agreed without a hustle. I woke Saturday cleaned my room fed Melo than gave her a bath when I was done I took her to Thobeka than ate after eating I took a bath got out lotioned wore my bum shorts with a tank top and jordans did my make up tied my yanky into a messey bun wore hops. Sebastian called saying his outside I took my slig bag said my goodbyes and left I jumped on him as soon as we were close I wrapped my legs around him and he held my ass we kissed for a very long time until Mzo and shane started screaming stop in the car he put me and I burried my head on his chest inhaling his scent he kissed my head

Seb: "hey baby"

Me: "I missed you"

Seb: "I also missed you" he held my chin and moved me from his chest grinning and planted he soft peck on my lips

Mzo: "enough already lets go" we laughed he went to open my door I got in and he went to his, he drove to gate way the ride there was pure bliss. We met up with everyone there took lot of pictures ofcos we watched a movie had lunch than played games late we left first we went to drop of Mzo since he stays at mhlanga than went to drop shane off at balito he still had to go back to mhlanga since he stays there. After dropping Shane off we went home

Seb: "finally it just us" I giggled

Me: "yep"

Seb: "so you really leaving tomorrow" I breathed out loudly

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "I don't like it Lelo I won't lie"

Me: "but we spoke about this"

Seb: "do you really have to go"

Me: "Melo needs to spend time with her dad as much as she spends time with me and his busy he can't come this side"

Seb: "that doesn't mean I have to like Lelo I can't pretend to be cool with it"

Me: "but Sebastian"

Seb: "but what"

Me: "there's nothing going on between sbonelo and I the only thing we have is Melo nothing else this is not about sbonelo and I it all about Melo"

Seb: "so you say" I looked down feeling defeated

Me: "you don't trust me"

Seb: "I don't trust him and what you two share" I didn't say anything after that the rest of the ride home was filled with silence. It was already dark outside so he parked near the gate and turned the car off switching the lights as well we remained silently like that until i got irritated I got off the car and banged the door he got out as well and held my hand

Me: "what Sebastian what?!" He ran his hand through his hair

Seb: "please don't get mad"

Me: "I'm not mad"

Seb: "you can't expect me to be fine with this Lelo it not fair"

Me: "you don't trust me Sebastian that's the issue"

Seb: "I do trust you ok!!"

Me: "don't shout at me" he ran his hand through his hair grabbing it before letting go

Seb: "I didn't mean to im sorry, Lelo look you going to see your ex not just for a day but days and you expect me to be ok with that Lelo how would you feel if the roles were reversed" I looked away feeling guilty

Me: "I'd be hurt"

Seb: "than don't expect me to be cool with it .... I love you Lelo in fact I think I loved you the first day of school" I looked at him and his eyes were filled with sincerity

Me: "you ... You love me?" It was the first time him saying it, he nodded shyly

Seb: "I do love you"

Me: "Sebastian" my voice was braking he put his arm around my waist bringing me closer to him and he held my chin with the other hand making me face him

Seb: "I love you Lelo" he kissed me passionately possessing me

Me: "I love you too Sebastian" I mumbled in his mouth he lifted me up and put me on top of the boot got between my legs we were still kissing my hand in his hair we kissed for a very long time before pulling back.

Seb: "you really do love me?"

Me: " totally in love with you Mr Kiley" he gave me his panty dropping smile. We stayed outside until really late he left coz mom wouldn't stop calling.

I got home packed our bags took a bath had dinner and slept.

.

Woke up really late Sunday and our plane was at 14:00 I got ready quickly while thobeka got Melo ready Mike took us to the airport we made it just in time for check in. Nelo picked us up from the jhb airport we left for Mp after stopping for late lunch Melo and I

took a nap as soon as we got to his place. Woke up later Nelo had cooked we had dinner I got Melo ready for bed we slept was using another room Sebastian woke me up around 03:00 to just "check on me" I laughed at him when he said he loves me and I said cool he was like oh ok cool I guess with sadness after laughing at him I told him I loved him than hung up.

Melo's screams woke me up Monday morning sbonelo had left for work, I fed her than gave her a bath after bathing I carried her trying to make her fall asleep it took awhile eventually she slept I had breakfast than cleaned after cleaning I took a shower got out wore a bum short and vest took my phone chatted to my friends and Sebastian while watching tv later on Melo woke up we chilled together around 16:00 I cooked Nelo came back from work around 17:30

Nelo: "family" he kissed my forehead and took Melo

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "you good?"

Me: "yeah you n how was work?"

Nelo: "tiring nana let me take a shower quick" he put Melo down on the couch and went to his room after a while there was a knock I went to open and there stood a girl

Me: "oh hey" he flooded her arms on her chest and raised her eyebrow

Her: "hello" I smiled and made way for her to get in she got in

Her: "where's sbonelo?"

Me: "his in a shower I'll call him for you" I went to call him he was already out of the shower with a towel wrapped around his waist so low one could see his v

Me: "uhm sbonelo" he looked with a smirk we might not be together but that does not make him unattractive

Nelo: "yeah nana"

Me: "you have a visitor" he got closer to me I walked out of his room like someone was chasing me, he followed me while laughing his laughter died as soon as he saw the girl at the door

Nelo: "Zinhle what are you doing here"

Zinhle: "I came to check on you, I didn't know you had company" she gave me the evil look I just laughed went to the room I was using took my earphones and iPod went back to the lounge took my phone

Me: "watch Melo I'll take a walk"

Nelo: "nana wait please"

Me: "ayi Nelo sort out your business habe" I walked pass the girl and smiled at her

Me: "nice meeting you Zinhle im Lelothando by the way" I left them plugged my earphone on and listened to music I didnt even know where I was going to but I took a walk found myself at Spar I checked my pockets for cash luckily I had some so I bought ice cream and went back to the house when I got there Zinhle was gone I dished up for us we ate in silence when we were done Nelo did the dishes. We sat down watching tv could see he wanted to say something but was scared so I asked

Me: "what's up"

Nelo: "you know nana I can explain about that girl" I shook my head

Me: "there's no need"

Nelo: "I want to"

Me: "I don't want you to so don't"

Nelo: "but nana.."

Me: "no sbonelo" we sat like that in silence only the TV and Melo we making the noise

## **part 84 I am scared of lonely**

The rest of the week it was the same thing wake up fed bath Melo put her to sleep so I could clean eat bath watch tv cook only if Nelo wouldn't be buying food on his way from work, he always walked around the house half naked and I hated it when I asked him to get dressed he would just grin and touch his muscles then say "If you like what you see come get it I mean it all yours after all" I'd just roll my eyes and look away. I missed Sebastian so bad that week even though we talked like all the time it wasn't the same and thanks to skype we managed to see each other. The only time things were different



it was Friday he came back from work around 12 I was still in my pj shorts n vest I was still cleaning he came in put his back bag on the counter in the kitchen I was mopping  
Nelo: "hi" he came to me he looked taller more muscular than ever I kept on moving backwards until I was pressed on the fridge there was just something different about him in him the way his eyes burned he was dominant and it made me feel all kind of hot n bothered. My lips parted n my breathing picked up

Nelo: "you ok nana?"

Me: "ye... Yes" I stuttered he grabbed the back of my waist bringing me closer to him pressing us against each other I could feel his hard D pressing on my thigh

Nelo: "you sure?" I nodded not wanting to speak coz I knew my voice would fail me I was so turned on

Nelo: "where's melo?" I looked over to her in the lounge sleeping on her rocky bed he followed my eyes and nodded

Nelo: "nana" he brought his face closer to mine until I was breathing in what he was breathing out

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "finish up n get ready I need to sort out somethings we leaving tonight I got Monday n Tuesday off" I looked at him like he just poured water all over me and he chuckled

Me: "what?!" He let go of me

Nelo: "yeah hurry that place closes at 15:00 and it a bit far" he walked away

Me: "sbonelo!!" He walked to his bedroom laughing I got so irritated I left the mop n bucket in the kitchen went to my room flopped on the bed with a huge sigh, I was on my stomach. He came in the room and laid on top of me holding my hands

Nelo: "hey" he kissed my cheek

Me: "just go Sbonelo please"

Nelo: "I love you ok"

Me: "ok now go bath n I'll also get ready"

Nelo: "sho" he left I took my phone and called kate we talked for awhile then I went to

finish up cleaning after that I took a bath while Nelo showered in his room, I got out lotioned wore a tight strapless navy maxi dress with sandals tied my yanky into a messy bun did my make up by the time I was done Nelo already had Melo in his hand waiting for me. I took my phone and Melo's bottle we left. We went to the Audi car dealership we got in that's when I fall in love with Audi cars my God! Those cars are something else  
Me: "you getting a new car" he grinned

Nelo: "yep it about time already bought it though just need to sign somethings so they can deliver it"

Me: "oh wow cool"

Nelo: "come"

Me: "you go in ill stay out here and admire" he laughed and went in the office I was still looking at the cars when he came out

Me: "done"

Nelo: "come see my baby" I frowned and he laughed holding my waist he ushered me to the other side

Nelo: "here we go" it was a black Audi suv

Me; "nice but isn't it kinda too much for you"

Nelo: "no way nana" I laughed and rolled my eyes we left, went to the mall got a couple of things and food had to leave quickly before the delivery people came. They were already calling when we got to the house they were already outside I took melo and got in leaving Nelo and the people outside. He got in with the hugest smile ever while I was feeding Melo

Nelo: "done and dusted nana"

Me: "you happy"

Nelo: "ofcos nana things are going well at work my business is picking up I got my two favorite girls with me I just got my sweet ride ... Things couldn't be better"

Me: "I'm glad you happy daddy"

Nelo: "excuse me" he was amused I looked down feeling stupid

Me: "sorry" he laughed

Nelo: "mmh .... Let me dish up im starving and I need to sleep a little" he did dish up after feeding Melo we ate over light conversation Sebastian called while we were eating I told him we were leaving tonight he was happy when I dropped the call Nelo just shook his head took his plate to the kitchen and went to sleep. I packed up my things along with Melo's when I done eating than washed the dishes Melo was asleep so I joined her. Nelo woke me up around 21:00 I took a bath than changed to jeans vest n biker with all stars, he came in my room as I was fixing my hair wearing the same clothes as me we looked at each other and laughed

Me: "I didn't know"

Nelo: "come here" I went to him he held me and took a photo of us I laughed and shook my head

Me: "you crazy"

Nelo: "crazy for you" I laughed at him

Me: "no!"

Nelo: "I am though"

Me: "Zinhle wouldn't be pleased"

Nelo: "nana" I giggled

Me: "ok ok sorry you so touchy"

Nelo: "don't" he took our things and loaded them in the car I changed Melo into warm clothes made her bottles Nelo took her and placed her in her car seat I got in the back seat with her than we left drove pass McD got food went to the garage for snack. Melo and I slept through the whole way to Kzn Nelo kept on waking me up and complaining Id stay up for a few minutes than go back to sleep we stopped a couple of time before reaching Richards Bay Nelo drove to a BnB we arrived there early hours of the morning and slept.

.

Woke up Saturday morning Nelo wasn't in bed I took a bath while Melo was still asleep, when I got out the bathroom Nelo was back

Nelo: "how I wish I could just unwrap that towel" I rolled my eyes

Me: "don't be foward please leave I want to get dressed" he laughed so hard that Melo woke up screaming he took her

Nelo: "I'm not leaving nana I know your body more than you know it"

Me: "mmh if you say so" I lotioned took out my red lace thong n a bra to match I dropped the towel and got dressed took out a simple short n tshirt got dressed I turned to face him when I was done he eyes were red n half closed his dick looked like it was about to pop out of his jeans I laughed at him

Me: "I did ask you to leave the room" he shifted uncomfortably

Nelo: "uhm please hold her" he gave me Melo and I took her while laughing he went to the bathroom I took a pillow put it down and laid Melo on it while I made the bed. Nelo came back after awhile I laughed at him

Me: "really ? ... Aah sbonelo you jerked off" he shrugged his shoulders

Nelo: "what am I supposed to do when you won't give me some" he picked Melo up

Me: "don't touch my daughter with those hands"

Nelo: "ouch!!" He chuckled and I laughed

Me: "where did you go in the morning"

Nelo: "needed to go to the municipality before it closed"

Me: "ok can you go ask for boiling water I need to fed her n make her bottle"

Nelo: "cool" he left and I went to the bathroom gave Melo a bath dressed her up after feeding her we left it was just after midday we went to broadwalk ate and drove to this site they were building something he walked out we remained in the car after like an hour he walked out from one of the temporary offices with a guy holding some documents they shook hands he came running to the car

Nelo: "sorry I took long"

Me: "it ok can we leave now"

Nelo: "geese don't bite my head off"

Me; "don't even start with me" he started the car n drove off

Nelo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "you dropping us off at home right"

Nelo: "mom wants us over for dinner she misses Melo"

Me: "when were you going to tell me that"

Nelo: "I'm telling you now"

Me: "mxm"

Nelo: "what are you fighting with your lovely Sebastian" he said sarcastically

Me: "shut up" he laughed

Nelo: "what's wrong nana talk to me is the sex with Sebastian not good"

Me: "fuck off sbonelo" he didn't stop laughing

Nelo: "ok fine im sorry now tell me what's wrong"

Me: "I just got irritated with sitting in the car for that long" he held my hand

Nelo: "I'm sorry ke nana"

Me: "it's ok"

Nelo: "good.... You know nana I'll marry you one day" I giggled

Me: "is it"

Nelo: "yeah as soon as you in varsity"

Me: "that's soon"

Nelo: "the sooner the better, I love you Lelothando"

Me: "I love yo.." I quickly put a hand over my mouth coz I hadn't meant to say it and he laughed

Nelo: "yeah I know"

Me: "arg don't" he gave me that happy care free laughter, the rest of the ride was filled with silly conversations when we got to his place it was already late so we just freshened up and left for his mom's place. Nelo's mom took Melo as soon as we got in the house it was the first time seeing Sethu since Melo was out of the hospital things were weird between the three of us I pulled Nelo outside

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "have you spoke to Sethu since the accident"

Nelo: "no I have nothing to say to her"

Me: "she's your sister"

Nelo: "yeah so"

Me: "we need to apologize it wasn't her fault"

Nelo: "ayi nana I don't have time for that"

Me: "go in there and call her here"

Nelo: "no"

Me: "now sbonelo im not joking"

Nelo: "ok fine!" He went and came out with Sethu we all didn't say anything we just looked at each other awkwardly until I cleared my throat and pinched Nelo

Sethu: "why am I here"

Me: "we want to apologize for how we acted when Melo was in hospital" Nelo mumbled not me and I pinched him again

Nelo: "yeah we sorry"

Sethu: "you hit me Lelo and sbonelo threatened to kill over something that wasn't my fault"

Me: "we really sorry Sethu"

Sethu: "your own sister sbonelo" she started crying

Nelo: "she's my daughter"

Sethu: "I love Melokuhle like she's my own I would never do anything harmful to her"

Nelo: "but you hate lelo"

Sethu; "I don't hate I was just angry she's just a baby herself but she got a chance to have I child while I'm here old n independent but infertile it not fair" she broke down Nelo held her and she sobbed on his chest we sat outside until he came down

Sethu: "I'm sorry Lelo I shouldn't have treated you that way"

Me: "it's ok" we went back in the house Sethu went to wash her face

Nelo: "wow I wasn't expecting that"

Me: "yeah neh" we went to sit down on the same couch I felt a little sleepy so I put my head on his shoulder he kissed my head and put his arm around me, Kwandile came in at that moment with a very pregnant Zama everyone was shocked

Kwandile: "family" his mother stood up and hugged them

N's mom: "why didn't you tell us Zama is pregnant" he shrugged his shoulders uncomfortably

Nelo: "congrats big bro"

Sfundo: "think I should get someone pregnant as well"

N's mom: "do you work?"

Sfundo: "no but .."

N's mom: "than shut up"

Sfundo: "eish" we laughed kwandile sat down on a single couch Zama had no choice but to sit on a single one as well. We had dinner over jokes and light conversations when everyone was done Zama sethup I went to the kitchen to wash the dishes and clean it

Me: "congrats again Zama I know kwandile will be a good father"

Zama: "you should know"

Me: "excuse me"

Zama: "I mean sbonelo and kwandile can't be that different and sbonelo looks like a good father"

Me: "yes he is" I smiled

Sethu: "trust me those two are different just that Lelo changed Nelo a lot"

Me: "I didn't do anything that's all him"

Zama: "maybe kwandile will also change"

Sethu: "kwandile is too childish and his not in love as Nelo is" I dropped a glass at that statement

Me: "hayi Sethu you can't talk like that" she shrugged her shoulders and went back to swiping

Zama: "she's right you know, kwandile is not in love with me his just with me coz I fell pregnant"

Me: "you guys share a baby his bound to love you" she smiled through her tears

Sethu: "don't count on i

Me: "Sethu"

Sethu: "it's the truth"

We continued with what we doing later on we all sat in the lounge just talking. We left really late slept as soon as we got to nelo's house.

### **part 85 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo took us home the following day on Sunday afternoon he had to come in with us because we had lot of stuff with the things he had bought for Melo and he also wanted to talk to mom I don't about what I called kyle and he opened for us, we got in the gate up the drive way he parked just near the door we got out thobeka took Melo and kyle helped Nelo carry melo's things upstairs to her nursery and my bags to my room

Nelo: "I've been wondering what your bedrooms looks like nana" he kissed my head  
kyle shook his head and left the room

Me: "so how is it?"

Nelo: "different from your previous one it looks more grown" my room is big with a large widow that's big enough to be a door it has a white n lavender theme going on my previous one was all pink

Me: "let's go before Mike comes knocking" he chuckled and we left, when we went back downstairs mom and Mike were in the lounge

Mike: "sbonelo" he stood up and they shook hands

Nelo: "mr Williams how are you" Mike chuckled

Mike: "it Mike and I'm good, is that your ride out there?"

Nelo: "yeah"

Mike: "it's nice"

Nelo; "I'm someone's dad n someone's future husband" he looked at me and winked "it has to show" they shared a laugh with Mike

Mike: "with the twins coming I think I might just join you on that suv life but maybe bmw" we sat down and they started talking about cars and rugby mom and I left them in the lounge and went to the kitchen found aunt dolly and Thobeka there aunt dolly was cooking while thobeka played with Melo

Mom: "get me ice cream"



Me: “cool” I knew how she likes her ice cream since she got pregnant so I took out all the things vanilla ice cream, chocolate syrup, cheese cake and ultramel I mixed it all together and gave it to her I watched her in fascination as she indulged

Dolly: “had a good week baby?”

Me: “yeah Melo liked having her dad around” thobeka giggled

Mom: “yeah right” she was sarcastic

Dolly: “you and Sbonelo are good?”

Me: “yes we ok”

Mom: “hope you guys didn’t make another Melo”

Me: “no!! Mom ofcos not hha give me some credit” aunt dolly laughed

Thobeka: “why you getting so defensive”

Me: “I’m not!” They all laughed

Thobeka: “if you say so”

Me: “geese thanks hey” I took grapes from the fridge sat down and started eating

Thobeka: “seems like you two make beautiful babies”

Mom: “yeah but doesn’t mean we need another one at least not in the next 5 years”  
she left her ice cream and started eating my grapes

Dolly: “hope you taking contraceptives Lelo”

Me: “like seriously is there nothing else that we could talk about” they laughed mom was surprisingly cool with me and Nelo it all started when Melo got sick

Thobeka: “but it nice seeing you so uncomfortable” I shot her a dead stare and they laughed we continued talking until aunt dolly finished cook I set up the table and we had dinner Nelo joined us things were still a little awkward between him and kyle. After dinner Nelo asked to have a moment with mom n Mike in private so they all went to talk in the study I was curious I even thought about listening on they conversation but I didnt. I stayed in my room until mom called out for me I ran downstairs.

Me: “mah”

Mom: “walk sbonelo out and make sure the gate is closed”

Me: “ok” we walked out and stood next to his car

Nelo: "I'll miss you"

Me: "what were you n mom talking about"

Nelo: "nothing to worry yourself about nana just needed to sort out some things regarding the nannies"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "have to go, I'll see you guys before I leave Tuesday"

Me: "drive safely will see you then"

Nelo: "I love you" I smiled and nodded he kissed my forehead and left. I went back in prepared for school took a bath and slept.

.

Monday morning Sebastian woke me up I got ready for school mom dropped me off on her way to work I got off and went to our spot I was a little late so all my friends were all there Sebastian met me halfway we shared a long hug

Seb: "missed you so much wish I could just smash my lips on yours hard" he was still hugging me

Me: "I also missed you baby but we in school so let go"

Seb: "I don't want to"

Me: "baby let go" he did sulking

Seb: "i really did miss you"

Me: "so did I baby"

Seb: "lunch after school?"

Me: "yes" we went to the others we all chilled the bell rang we went to assembly than classes soon it was after school I met Sebastian at the parking lot as we drove out I saw Mike's car and remembered I hadn't asked him to not come so I got off the car and went to him

Mike: "hey get in im in a rush"

Me: "actually I came to tell you that I'm going out for lunch with my friends im sorry I should have told you before the school came out"

Mike: "yeah you should have lelo" he looked a little irritated

Me: "sorry dad" I looked down

He came out of his car

Mike: "what did you just call me" I looked at him and smiled at the realization

Me: "dad" he scooped me up in a hug and laughed

Mike: "finally!!" I laughed "yeah go come home early it's a school night"

Me: "cool" I kissed his cheek and left I watched him driving away before I got in the car with Sebastian.

Seb: "what was that about"

Me: "nothing much"

Seb: "pav?"

Me: "pav" he held my neck and we kissed hard before he drove off

Seb: "so how was your week with sbonelo?"

Me: "dull baby same thing everyday and his gf visited a couple of times she loved Melo"  
I lied

Seb: "his gf was there"

Me: "yeah" he smiled

Seb: "cool"

Me: "how was your week"

Seb: "ok baby oh mom wants to meet you"

Me: "no" he laughed

Seb: "why not"

Me: "not now baby n I'm scared" he brushed my thigh lightly pushing my skirt up

Seb: "it's ok I get it" we got to pav had lunch he paid we walked out the restaurant holding hands and took a walk around the mall as we were walking someone called out for Sebastian so we stopped and turned saw this tall guy with broad shoulders in a navy suit and white shirt with a navy tie curly brown hair

Seb: "dad"

S's dad: "hey shouldn't you two be in school" he got closer to us

Seb: "school is out dad" he checked his watch

S's dad: "oh yeah so who is this pretty young lady" Sebastian looked at me and smiled

Seb: "this is Lelothando dad my gf" his dad looked at me and smiled

S's dad: "nice to meet you lellothando"

Me: "likewise"

S's dad: "let me leave you kids to it"

Seb: "what you doing here anyway"

S's dad: "needed to get something at sterns for your mom, I'll see you at home need to get back to the office"

Seb: "see you later"

S's dad: "come for dinner Friday Lelo"

Me: "uhm okay sir" he laughed

S's dad: "sir .... That's nice but try Ethan it sounds better" I laughed uncormfortably

Me: "ok Ethan" he nodded

Ethan: "bye kids" he left

Me: "your dad is not white" Sebastian shrugged his shoulders

Seb: "I don't know what he is coz grandpa is white n grandma is coloured but mom is white"

Me: "oh ok cool"

Seb: "so dinner Friday"

Me: "I guess"

Seb: "it's gona be ok baby I'll be there" I sighed he dropped me off at home.

.

Tuesday after school Nelo came home but we just chilled in the car outside the gate with Melo until late than he left for Mpumalanga. The rest of the week moved quickly.

Soon it was Friday I got home after school changed from my uniform to a simple summer dress Sebastian was going to pick me up at 18:00, I had lunch than watched tv while playing Melo I had already told mom that I'd be having dinner at Kate's house. At 17:00 I took Melo to aunt dolly went to take a bath got lotioned wore a navy dress just by the knees it was tight around the waist then umbrella like from the waist down with

thin straps it was a warm night I did a little bit of make up, wore black heeled pump with a thin strap around the ankle I had my natural hair so I blow dried it Sebastian called while I was busy with my hair so I just let it fall around my neck I took my bag and left Sebastian got off the car when he saw me approaching it

Seb: "how you feeling" he gave me a tight squeeze

Me: "I'm calm" he chuckled

Seb: "yeah?"

Me: "yeah let's go" he opened my door I got in than he got in and started driving towards mhlanga

Seb: "mom will love you she went all out with dinner"

Me: "why? Does she know I'm black" he laughed

Seb: "you the first girl that I will be introducing at home and yeah she's knows your race and that it doesn't define you, come on baby what kind of person do you think my mom is" I shrugged my shoulders and he sighed

Me: "I'm just freaking out a little"

Seb: "tell me baby is this race thing going to be an issue between?"

Me: "what?! Ofcos not"

Seb: "good, now come here" I leaned in he pointed at his cheek I giggled and kissed it

seb: "I love you ok"

Me: "and I love you" the rest of the ride was cool we just had stupid convos while singing along to some music. Eventually we arrived he parked in the garage we got out he gave me a hug and we kissed for a very long time until we a heard a tiny voice I pulled back and looked at this little girl with long blond hair n blue eyes

Seb: "Stacy what?"

Stacy: "mommy says come in already"

Seb: "tell her we coming" she got near us instead of going back in the house

Stacy: "Is this yeyo mommy said you bringing your gf over" Sebastian huffed

Seb: "yes now go!" She stuck her tongue out and ran in the house

Seb: "well that's my little sis" I giggled and covered my face with his chest

Seb: "come lets go in before mom comes out" he took my hand we got in using the garage door walked through the passage to the lounge that was all white with no tv his dad n brother Logan were sitting there we exchanged greetings his mom came in just than and stood at the doorway just medium height slim with blond hair tied in a ponytail

Seb: "mom this is lelo" she looked at me from my toes to my head I moved behind a little hiding behind Sebastian's back she giggled sweetly

Her; "honey don't hide" she came to us took my hand and gave me a hug than held me at my shoulders looking at me

Her: "you very beautiful Lelo"

Me: "thank you ma'am" she giggled again and let go of my shoulders than pulled Sebastian's cheek kissing it

Her: "good work baby"

Seb: "mom" he whined

Her: "what do you drink"

Me: "just juice ma'am"

Her: "you making me feel old im Carmel" I nodded "come this way" she pulled my hand and led us out of the lounge I turned to look at Sebastian who just shrugged his shoulders and mouthed sorry, we went to the dinning room where Jenny Logan's gf was setting the table I helped while Carmel went to get me juice. When we were done we had dinner I sat next to Sebastian and Stacy on my right , we ate dinner over light conversations mainly Carmel embarrassing the boys talking about their childhood incidents and Stacy blubbering away. After dinner they helper cleaned up while we had dessert in the lounge Stacy had gone to sleep I was sitting next to Sebastian I was a little cold and he noticed

Seb: "need a jacket" I nodded "I'll be back" he kissed my head and left when I turned Carmel was staring at us with a smile Sebastian came back with a jean jacket that looked ridiculously big on me. Sebastian took me later on I slept as soon as I got home.

.

Time flew by smoothly Sebastian and I were still happy together. It was June 13 mom and I were in the lounge watching tv Melo was asleep in her nursery kyle was out Mike was in the study aunt dolly n Thobeka were in the pool house. Mom had just finished her ice cream she got up to leave the bowl in the kitchen I think that's when she screamed out loud dropping the bowl

Me: "mom are you ok" she screamed again holding her stomach it didn't register to me that she was in labour until her water broke that's when I stood up and started pacing around the room she was also pacing trying to breath in and out when she screamed again I ran to the study and told Mike mom was in labour he ran out of the study to her Mike: "you ok" she slapped him so hard I felt it on my cheek

Me: "mom!"

Mom: "don't ask meeeee awu a stupid question Mike" she kneeled down

Mike: "get my keys Lelo" I ran to their room got the car keys Mike was holding mom's waist leading her out to the car I shouted for aunt dolly told her to watch Melo. Mom Mike n I got in the car I sat at the back with mom when Mike was out the gate mom asked if he took the bag and we hadn't taken it so Mike reverses I ran to the twins nursery got their bag along with moms. Mike drove to the hospital speeding they took her in and around early hours of the morning we were called in she had given birth to two beautiful babies with blue eyes boy n a girl

Keegan Sivuyo Williams (boy)

Cassandra Sethu Williams (girl)

My little brother and little sister

## **part 86 I am scared of lonely**

My little bro n sis were the most adorable babies after Melo ofcos. Mom was discharged after 2 days, everyone was just head over heels with the two little monsters. We wrote our June exams it all went well Siyabulela was home. Before exams I had to introduce Sebastian at home because his mom wanted me to join them for vacation to Cape Town for two weeks to which mom agreed to after speaking to Carmel and after Mike

persuaded her to allow me to go Mike believed in this whole philosophy “you have to teach the child right from wrong than give them freedom and trust them that they won’t choose the wrong path but if they do a lesson will be learnt from that mistake”. We were to leave Wednesday I didn’t tell Nelo I was going I honestly saw no reason in telling him. Tuesday Sebastian and I went to gateway I needed to get somethings before we leave he picked me up I did my shopping got my hair done just a simple ultra we had late lunch than he took me home. I got home packed in my suitcase and a small travel bag it was a really nice Guess set that siyabulela had gotten for me on my birthday, I slept early coz our plane was at 08:30 I had mixed feelings about the whole thing Sebastian and I had not slept together we hardly chilled in doors and now we had two weeks.

.  
Woke up early around 06:00 took a bath got out lotioned it was a cold winter morning, I got dressed in ink skinny jeans a black vest and black jacket with jordans. Had a quick breakfast than woke siyabulela up he woke up didn’t change his pajamas he took me to Sebastian’s home I called Sebastian when we were at the gate he opened and waited for us at the door we both got off.

Seb: “hey” he gave me a hug and shook Siya’s hand, Siya hated Nelo now they don’t even talk anymore so hearing I was with Sebastian was good news for him even though he didn’t want me dating at least it was some who is my age

Siya: “take care of my sis kid” Sebastian chuckled uncormfortably

Seb: “ofcos we gona have fun”

Siya: “no clubbing” we laughed

Us: “yeah sure”

Siya: “oryt bye” he pulled me in for a hug and kissed my forehead than drove off

Seb: “everyone is ready we were just waiting for you”

Me: “ok”

Seb: “you look pretty by the way” he gave me a soft peck on the lips and I blushed, took my luggage we got in the house Ethan was in the TV room drinking coffee while



watching news

Seb: "she's here dad we can leave now"

Ethan: "cool tell everyone come down" Sebastian left us "how's the family Lelo"

Me: "everyone is good"

Ethan: "the babies?"

Me: "healthy and happy"

Ethan: "good" Stacy came running in the room with her mom behind screaming no running in the house Stacy she got to me and launched her self at me I giggled and picked her up

Stacy: "mommy says you coming with us yeyo"

Me: "do you want me to come" she nodded her hair falling to her face "than im coming"

Stacy: "good girl" I laughed

Carmel: "good to see you hun" I smiled Sebastian took my bags and packed them in the car

Ethan: "let's go, where's logan n Jenny"

Stacy: "kissing in his room" her father frowned at her she giggled covering her face

Ethan: "Logan!!" They came down and we left Ethan's friend was driving us in carmel's dodge suv. We got to the airport went through the whole luggage n check in process than left. We got to the airport Ethan and Logan went to hire cars I rode with Logan Jenny n Sebastian, while Stacy rode with her parents than we left for Clifton. We got to this really beautiful beach house double story with glass walls facing the beach

Seb: "welcome to my home away from home" he wisphered and nibbled my ear

Me: "Is this your home"

Seb: "yeah" we got off waited for his parents to come out the car they came out his dad opened the door we all got in

Carmel: "ok so sleeping arraignments" we all looked at her

Logan: "what's? Well that's new"

Carmel: "no one is sharing a bedroom besides your father and I" Logan and Sebastian spoke at the same time

Them: "no way!"

Carmel: "yes"

Logan: "but mom.."

Carmel: "no buts"

Seb: "dad" he just shook his head and left

Carmel: "freshen up I'll prepare brunch" she left us in the lounge

Jenny: "bubu talk to your mother please she's being unreasonable"

Logan: "just amuse her for now she'll loosen up"

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "baby"

Me: "a minute please" he took my hand and led us outside I took a minute to look at the view

Seb: "it beautiful right?"

Me: "it amazing baby" he held my waist I wrapped my hands around his neck

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "and I you" we kissed slowly our tongues tangled together I fisted my hand in hair he groaned he held me closer

Me: "I love you Sebastian" I mumbled in his mouth I could feel his smile he deepened the kiss grabbing my neck his D poking my thigh I pulled back and he chuckled

Seb: "Im seriously going to love these two weeks" he smirked and I blushed

Me: "so will I"

Seb: "let's get in" I had even forgotten why I asked him for a minute we got in than out the front door we got our bags than went upstairs choose rooms that are close together. I took a quick shower got out wore shorts tank top and flops I took my phone and went downstairs Jenny n Logan were cuddling on the couch I found my way to the kitchen I helped Carmel with brunch we all ate outside spent the rest of the day indoors playing games and watching tv later Carmel and I cooked dinner that woman loves cooking she even went for a full year chef course. We all went to sleep really late, just after midnight I heard a light knock I got up opened Sebastian was leaning on the wall

next to the door

Me: "what's wrong" he put his finger on my lips pushed me in he got in as well and locked the door. He smashed his lips on mine and lifted me up i wrapped my legs around his waist

Me: "baby"

Seb: "hush" he laid me on the bed got on top of me started kissing me all the way from my jaw line to neck I let out a small moan when he started sucking n biting on it he moved from my neck and lifted up my pj top

Seb: "can I?" I nodded and he smiled took off my top went back to kissing my lips while cupping on of my breast pinching the nipple I formed a silent 'ah' he moved from my lips went on to sucking my other breast biting the nipple I tilted my head back he went from my breasts to kissing my stomach all the way down leavin soft pecks he held the waist line of my pj bottom and looked at me as if asking for permission I nodded and lifted my ass up he took them off kissed my inner thighs biting them hard making me scream with every bite

Seb: "ssh baby you will wake up mom" I nodded he kissed me all the way up to my punani he lifted my legs and put them on his shoulders than went in for a kill his tongue going up n down my flesh he used his fingers to open up my clit exposing the sensitive part he slide a finger inside me while his tongue went on n on on my clit I was moaning lightly when he put the second one my moans got louder he went in n out in n out than circles he repeated this until i felt my walls tightening I came with a loud moan he cleaned me up with his tongue than came up to my face

Seb: "hi" he smiled n I covered my face with my hands giggling he laid next to me and lifted my thigh leaving it on top of him I felt his D he was hard I got on top of him kissed him he kept his hands on my ass I loved the taste of me in his mouth his tongue he groaned I bite his ear pulling it than kissed him from his jaw down his throat while my hands went on a searching spree all over his abs he helped me take his pj bottoms off I kept my eyes on his we looked at each other as I slowly shove his dick in my mouth all the way deep in my throat he let out a loud fuck I pulled him out slowly, swirled my

tongue around the tip his precome started oozing out I licked it than pushed him back in my mouth pressed my lips together as tightly as possible he held my head as I went on pushing it in n out of my mouth while grazing it with my teeth sucking really hard I went on and on loving the groans n sexy sounds that came out of his mouth took my hand started playing with his balls gently stretching the line between his ass and balls I felt his dick getting bigger stretching my lips I took out his D spat on it gave him a handjob while sucking on his balls he shot his load all over my hand I kept on going until he finished I stood up went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth washed my hands he followed me did the same after wiping himself we went back to bed I laid my head on his chest with our thighs between each other we slept.

.

We woke up in the morning coz someone was knocking I got off the bed got dressed while Sebastian also got dressed I went to open when we were both decent it was Logan I let him in

Logan: "you better go to your room before mom n dad get up or even Stacy coz you know she will tell on you"

Seb: "yeah I'm leaving"

Logan: "next time keep it down you guys are too loud damn" I looked away feeling embarrassed Sebastian just laughed they got out I locked the door went to bath got out wore a tight fitting maxi dress took my phone I had a missed call from Nelo but I called home first than called Nelo

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey how are you?"

Nelo: "I'm good n you?"

Me: "I'm good, I saw your missed call"

Nelo: "yes why didn't you pick up"

Me: "was bathing"

Nelo: "mmh nice, I'm coming home tomorrow was wondering if you guys could spend the weekend with me" I suddenly felt really nervous and scared

Me: "I'm not at home"

Nelo: "where are you?" He sounded surprised

Me: "uhm.."

Nelo: "where?"

Me: "Cape Town"

Nelo: "with who doing what there"

Me: "visiting with my friends"

Nelo: "don't lie"

Me: "I wouldnt"

Nelo: "fusteki Lelo don't lie"

Me: "fine! With Sebastian and his family" he didn't say anything for awhile

Nelo: "mmh you really testing me neh with this white boy of yours"

Me: "sbonelo!"

Nelo: "I'm coming to get you"

Me: "are you crazy?"

Nelo: "I wish I was"

Me: "you have no right Nelo"

Nelo: "you mine"

Me: "and you have absolutely no claim whatsoever over me"

Nelo: "i'm.coming.to.get.you." He forced each word out of his mouth

Me: "you crazy"

Nelo: "Cape Town is not in another country im coming" he dropped the call I flopped on the bed with a sigh I stared at the ceiling until Sebastian came to call me for breakfast. After breakfast we drove out of town and went horse riding it was my first time so I had to ride with Sebastian he just made the whole experience so sexual, after horse riding we had lunch out in the staples than went home. The following dAy we went hiking it was tiring but fun. Nelo hadn't called even on Saturday mom called saying Nelo was there to take Melo to his parents I said it was ok just after talking to mom on the phone Nelo sent me an sms

\*it seems like I need to find my daughter a mother who won't leave her and neglect her because of her boyfriends\* I felt tears pricking out of my eyes we were all just chilling outside sun bathing I excused my self went to the room I was using locked my self in Sebastian came after me and started knocking

Seb: "baby let me in"

Me: "just give me space please"

Seb: "no open up"

Me: "Sebastian let me be!!"

Seb: "but baby"

Me: "please"

Seb: "I'll sit out here than" I let him be and called Nelo but he didn't pick after calling for the 5th time I gave up switched my phone off and started crying I don't even know why I was catching feelings but u was Sebastian started pounding on the door I opened for him he looked at my tear stained face and pulled me in for a hug

Seb: "what's wrong"

Me: "not now" he just nodded we laid on the bed he was holding as I cried my eyes out eventually I fell asleep when I woke he was asleep I went back to sleep we spent the rest of the afternoon and night in bed he just went out to get us food n came back his mother let him sleep in my room when she saw I wasn't ok

## **part 87 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up the following in Sebastian's arms he was already up just staring at me, I propped myself up balancing with my arms and looked at him

Seb: "morning beautiful" he kissed my nose n I smiled

Me: "morning baby, slept well?"

Seb: "kinda n you"

Me: "I guess" he pulled me to lay on top of him

Seb: "what's wrong baby talk to me"

Me: "I think I should go home"

Seb: "what?!" He sat up making me sit on him "why? I thought we were having fun, did I do something wrong? Or did something happen at home?" His voice was braking and he was panicking

Me: "baby.." I didn't know what to say so I just fisted my hand in his hair pulled him to me and we kissed the kiss got heated up the next thing I was under him we were both naked trying to keep our moans down. A knock brought us back to reality we tried ignoring it but it was persistent

Stacy: "yeyo come on open up ayready"

Seb: "the fuck" he mumbled burying his face on my neck and I laughed

Me: "I'm coming Stacy give me a minute"

Stacy: "ok hurry" I giggled

Me: "come on baby move"

Seb: "no"

Me: "Sebastian move" he moved his waist his erection digging on my thigh

Seb: "feel that baby" I laughed

Me: "yeah but Stacy is outside get off me" he groaned and moved I laughed getting off the bed so I could get dressed

Me: "go on get dressed"

Stacy: "yeyo!!"

Seb: "geese Stacy wait" we quickly got dressed when I opened the door she ran to bed getting on it next to Sebastian

Seb: "what do you want"

Stacy: "wana snuggle" she giggled getting closer to her brother I joined them we stayed in bed until Carmel came to call us for breakfast, it was a cold rainy day so we stayed in watching movies I was on the couch with Sebastian cuddling under the blanket he tried bringing up what happened yesterday but I kept brushing him off until I told him that I just missed Melo.

The rest of the two weeks were just pure fun and Carmel was right when she said it was going to make Sebastian and I grow closer, I didn't talk to Sbonelo for the rest of the

two weeks he didn't bother returning my missed calls n I didn't call him as well. We went back to durban on a Friday schools were opening on Monday, Nelo came to pick up Melo on Saturday morning he didn't even talk to me he just took his daughter from aunt dolly along with her bag and left he brought her back on Sunday he pressed the intercom instead of calling me to open up for him which I found very stupid I opened for him than went to stand outside waiting for them to drive up he parked and got out went to the backseat took Melo out gave her to me than took out her bag, I opened the door for him he got in I stayed outside heard him exchanging greetings with dolly n Thobeka than came out

Nelo: "bye bhabha daddy loves you" he kissed her totally ignoring me than walked around the car to his door

Me: "sbonelo" he stopped and looked at him not saying anything I sighed

Me: "can you please stop this"

Nelo: "stop what exactly"

Me: "stop being childish" I snapped surprising him

Nelo: "childish" he raised his eyebrow biting his lip "mmh" he got in the car and drove off I stood there watching him speed out the gate feeling like shit I walked in took melo's bag left it in her nursery than went to my room.

.

Monday morning I got up prepared for school kyle dropped me off on his way to campus, soon it was after school Mike picked me up the rest of the week was same old dull life the following weak was the same it was the month end weekend Nelo had transferred me money during the week as usual without a word, he started giving me money when Melo was just a month old which I found unnecessary coz he still came home every month end weekend and bought Melo everything she needed. Nelo called Friday after school I was actually surprised at first I didn't answer his call I picked up when he called the 3rd time

Me: "sbonelo"

Nelo: "yerr mani Lelothando"



Me: "what"

Nelo: "fok of Lelo mani I've been calling why weren't you picking up or you underneath that white boy"

Me: "what do you want" he sighed

Nelo: "God give me strength" I couldn't hold in it I just laughed really hard he ended up joining me we laughed "you the most frustrating person ever"

Me: "I could say the same about you"

Nelo: "I'm coming home you know"

Me: "yeah I know"

Nelo: "there's a ritual at my uncles house my cousin's memulo"

Me: "you wana take Melo for the whole weekend I don't know Nelo whose going to watch her while you busy" he chuckled

Nelo: "I actually wanted to ask if could you come I want to go with the both of you"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "yeah"

Me: "you've been an ass this last month"

Nelo: "I know and I'm really sorry"

Me: "why were you acting like that"

Nelo: "I flipped ok when you told me you in Cape Town with that boy and his family I just I was so angry nana I was hurt I felt betrayed and I don't know nana but I should have handled the whole situation better and I'm really sorry nana"

Me: "I should have told you before going"

Nelo: "you should have"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Nelo: "it's ok please come"

Me: "it short notice Nelo"

Nelo: "I know im sorry"

Me: "I won't even know what to wear" he chuckled

Nelo: "I'm driving pass pmb now just pack whatever you and Melo need we'll get you

something to wear when I get that side”

Me: “won’t say no to shopping” he laughed

Nelo: “cool than I’ll see you in 30 minutes” he dropped the call I went to mah’s room asked her and she agreed I packed for Melo first than changed her into something warmer than took a quick shower in Siya’s room got out wore a simple maxi dress n biker with sandlas Nelo called saying his outside I opened the gate for him and packed my clothes when I was done I took the bags downstairs Nelo was talking to Mike he took the bags loaded them than put Melo in her car seat we left drove we started at gateway he wanted us to get matching clothes we did bought clothes ate and left. We started at his parents house left our stuff there than went to his uncles house in mthwalume, when we got there they had already slaughtered the cows I left Melo with her grandma and helped out in the kitchen with Sethu and Zama and some of nelo’s cousins. We left really late slept at nelo’s parents, we woke up Nelo his brothers had left early to help out but he was coming back. We had breakfast and cleaned I gave Melo a bath dressed her up in a navy with white ribbon dress and white shoes she fell asleep than I took a bath got dressed in a tight fitting navy dress just below the knee with a white boyfriend blazer and white heeled pumps with a thin strap around the ankle. Nelo came in as I was doing my make up he took a quick shower than got dressed in navy chinos flooded at the bottom with a navy shirt left the two buttons open a white blazer and navy Nike tekkies. We left got there they were already performing the whole zulu dance thing people giving them money after that there was a formal lunch setting abd later on there was a 21st party we left around 3:00 am nelo’s mom had left with Melo earlier on. Sunday midday we left margate went home.

.

Few weeks went by it was the end of August Nelo came back we went to buy melo’s things he took us back home we didn’t go his house he didn’t ask us to go with him I didn’t bother asking why not. He came to pick Melo up on Saturday he was going to bring her back Sunday. He called Sunday afternoon I opened the gate for him than went outside to wait for them he drove in took Melo out gave me her bag there was a girl in

the front sit

Me; “whose that”

Nelo: “siwe my girlfriend”

Me: “you son of a bitch!”

Nelo: “what’s wrong with you”

Me: “so you gona introduce my daughter to your hoes now”

Nelo: “watch yourself Lelo”

Me: “you watch yourself”

Nelo: “so what I mustnt move on ei while you busy with your white boys”

Me: “I’ve never introduced Melo to him I wouldn’t do that” Melo started crying

Nelo: “well that’s you not me”

Me: “you better say bye to her coz you will never and I mean never see her again” the door opened and Mike got out took a wailing Melo

Mike: “shut up both for you, why the heck are your’ll screaming can’t yourll talk calmly”

I didn’t even realize we were screaming

Me: “leave now! Get the fuck out of my parents house now!”

Nelo: “fine but you not keeping my daughter away from me” he got in his car banged the door and drove off in a speed.

.

Time went by it was now November we were planning Melo’s 1st birthday party, Nelo last saw Melo that day when he brought her with his gf. He tried calling I never answered his calls he would come home everyone begged me to come out with Melo but whenever he was home we stayed in my room. He still sent money and brought Melo’s things I’d send his mother melo’s pics met her in the mall at least once a month. A part of me wanted to invite him to the party but the other part was like fuck you.

## **part 88 I am scared of lonely**

I was in the study printing the quotes that I had received regarding the things I wanted to hire for Melo’s party mom had asked me to print them so she can make the

payments, I felt really torn about inviting Nelo the invites were already out some emailed some printed out. I knew how much nelo loved his daughter how he would lay his world at her feet but I was scared I was so scared I kept thinking what if I invite him and he comes with his gf I wouldn't survive it. It would ruin my day thus ruining Melo's birthday a part of me knew it would be really wrong if I didn't invite him but he knew about the party coz his mom knew I had told her I wanted to do it all the time when we met up she told me how miserable Nelo was she tried begging but like I had told everyone else who tried talking me out of it I told her that she shouldnt get involved. I got out of the study with the intention of going to nap in my room so I could wake up and study but I found myself knocking in the pool house Thobeka opened it was late Thursday night melo's birthday was going to be on a Wednesday than the party on Saturday

Thobeka: "is there something wrong Melo is already asleep"

Me; "uhm ... No there's nothing wrong I wana see aunt dolly" she opened the way for me and I got in

Thobeka: "she's in her room"

Me: "ok thanks" I went to her room and knocked she opened

Dolly: "what wrong?" I didn't say anything I just started crying she held me and pulled us in her room to her bed

Me: "Is it wrong of me mah?"

Dolly: "what you talking about?"

Me; "not letting Nelo see his child" she sighed and I sobbed louder

Me: "Am I such a bad person "

Dolly: "no you not" she held my face and kissed my forehead "you love him and you clearly hurting but using Melo to get back at him for moving on is wrong especially since you also moved on with Sebastian you might be confused and hurting but you not a bad person"

Me: "he hates me mah" I wiped my nose with the back of my hand

Dolly: "you two have a child he could never hate you" she brought me to her chest

rocking me back n forth

Me: "I messed up mah how do I fix things"

Dolly; "let him know about the party that's a start"

Me: "what if he brings his girlfriend" she moved me from her chest wiped my tears with her fingers

Dolly: "than you gona be civil to the both of them and make sure your daughter has a good time"

Me: "I can't I'll just see red"

Dolly: "you can and you will"

Me: "why does it have to be so hard" she chuckled

Dolly: "it will get better" she laid in the bed and pulled me to her than pulled a blanket over us

Me: "I love you mah"

Dolly: "oh baby I love you" she kept brushing my hair until I fell asleep.

.

Woke up Friday morning went to the main house straight to my room I had a missed call from Sebastian so I called him he picked up immediately

Seb: "baby"

Me: "hey hun"

Seb: "wanted to tell you to tell your dad not to pick you up today"

Me; "why not"

Seb: "got plans for us" I giggled

Me: "ok cool"

Seb: "see you in a few I love you"

Me: "love you too" he hung up I went to bath got out prepared for school kyle was already having breakfast when I got in the kitchen

Me: "hey bro"

Kyle: "hey lil sis, slept well?"

Me: "yeah n you" I sat opposite him with my bowl of cereal

Kyle: "yeah"

Me: "so did Ashley say she will make it for the party with her little sis" kyle had been dating Ashley for about 4 months now she came for dinner couple of times

Kyle: "yeah they coming"

Me: "cool"

Kyle: "you and mom handling everything well"

Me: "yep" I took our dishes rinsed them than ran to moms room told Mike to not pick me up Sebastian would bring me home. We left after that kyle dropped me off at school and went to campus, school went by in a breeze soon it was after school.

Sebastian was standing outside my class when I went out he took my bag and put his hand around my neck

Me: "miss me much"

Seb: "you got no idea" I giggled he kissed my cheek

Me: "where to?"

Seb: "home"

Me: "home?"

Seb: "yep just wana be in door with my main" we got to his car he opened the door for me I got in and he also got in

Me: "main meaning im not the only one" he laughed

Seb: "never baby you my main and side wrapped in one" I laughed and hit his shoulder I played music as we drove off towards debonairs we got pizza went to kfc for hot wings than liquor shop for wine drove to his home. We got in there no one was home we went to his room I changed out of my uniform wore his tshirt while he remained in his boxers we watched a movies while eating and drinking. A sex scene came up in the movie he pulled me to him tighter I giggled feeling comfortable and cherished he kissed my forehead I was trialing my finger up n down his chest I looked up at him he was smiling I returned the smile

Me: "what?"

Seb: "having fun hun"

Me: “totally” the woman started moaning on the laptop making me feel hot n wet I quickly got on top of him

Seb: “what you up to?”

Me: “just this” I kissed his neck lightly “and this” I moved to his lips kissing him hard and deep he let out moan in my mouth and I shoved my tongue in his mouth that led to a crazy love making session we were just catching our breath after coming when my phone rang in my blazer I jumped out of bed to answer it and it was Nelo’s mom

Me: “hello mom”

N’s mom: “hey how are you”

Me: “I’m well and you”

N’s mom: “I’m good, look ill be in DBN tomorrow can I see you and Melo”

Me: “yes”

N’s mom: “good, I’ll pick you up tomorrow around midday”

Me; “ok bye

N’s mom: “kiss my baby for me”

Me: “will do” I dropped the call and went to join sebastain in bed we cuddled and continued with the movie. Later on he took me home after we took a shower I wore his sweatpants and tshirt we left. I got home and called Nelo after an hour of debating if I should call or not, he picked up on the 5th ring

Nelo: “nana”

Me: “hi”

Nelo: “how are you”

Me: “I’ve been better how are you”

Nelo: “I’ve been better as well” there was silence for a while “nana im sorry”

Me; “I shouldn’t have reacted that way”

Nelo: “no I get it now you had every right to react that way and im really sorry it was wrong of me to introduce siwe to Melo”

Me: “you love her I get it”

Nelo: “nana” he said as if he was pleading

Me: "no I understand" he sighed

Nelo: "how's my daughter doing"

Me: "she's good, she's walking now even though she can't do it fast"

Nelo: "feel like I missed out on a lot"

Me: "not really but I'm sorry for keeping her away from you it was wrong and selfish of me"

Nelo: "I'm the one who started it so I understand"

Me; "she misses you im sure" he chuckled

Nelo: "I miss her, actually I miss you as well"

Me: "don't say that"

Nelo: "it her birthday Wednesday was thinking of coming home I'd like to spend it with her if you would let me"

Me: "we throwing a party for her Saturday but I guess you could spend Wednesday with her"

Nelo: "really nana you gona let me see her" he sounded excited

Me: "she's your daughter"

Nelo: "yeah ... Yeah she is my daughter" his voice was thick with emotions

Me: "you can come get her Wednesday I'll tell Thobeka to get her ready for you"

Nelo: "oh nana thank you" he sniffed as if his crying

Me: "you can come on Saturday as well"

Nelo: "thank you nana thank you"

Me: "don't"

Nelo: "how's the planning coming "

Me: "everything is going well just need to give mom the quotes she can pay than do grocery friday everything will be delivered on Saturday morning"

Nelo: "give me those qoutes I'll pay than Friday we can go to the shops together"

Me: "mom will pay"

Nelo: "she's my daughter not your mothers"

Me: "yeah but .."



Nelo: "email it to me I'll email you the confirmation of payment" he cutted me off

Me; "ok"

Nelo: "thank you"

Me: "sho"

Nelo: "I really miss you two "

Me: "you will see your daughter on Wednesday"

Nelo: "can't I see the both of you"

Me: "I have school"

Nelo: "I'll pick you up after school"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "please it our daughter's 1st birthday please"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "where is she"

Me; "I think In her nursery"

Nelo: "I miss her voice"

Me: "hold on" I got off the bed went to her nursery she was playing on her playmate while Thobeka was reading a book I sat down next to her

Melo: "dada" she lifted her hands up wanting me to take her but I just laid her down and tickled her she laughed out loud I put the phone on loudspeaker I kept on tickling her until she was in tears than I picked her put switched the phone off loudspeaker carried her out of the nursery

Me; "you heard her"

Nelo: "she sounded so magical" I giggled "I even missed that sound"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "I love you guys never forget that" he dropped the call I emailed him the qoutes he emailed me back confirmation of payments after 30 minutes than called asking if it was all in order and I told him yeah and thanks. I played with Melo later on we had dinner after bathing her we slept.

.

Saturday morning woke up because of Melo's cry she had fallen off the bed I laughed and picked her up

Me: "it's ok baby sorry" she frowned and pointed to the floor

Melo: "nene dada" I took it and gave it to her she smiled revealing her 8 teeth. I walked out the room went to the kitchen put her on the counter than made her food and fed her after feeding her I put her down in front of the TV and opened cartoons while I had breakfast after eating we went to bath I watched her playing with her toys in the bathtub thinking to myself about how blessed I am Melo just gave me inner peace. We got out the bathtub I wrapped a towel around my body dried her off than dressed her in shorts and top and sandlas I called for Thobeka and gave her Melo than I got dressed in jeans a nice lose top with thin strappes and sandlas nelo's mom picked us up she was with Sethu we went to pava just had lunch catched up they bought clothes for Melo later on we went home.

Spent Sunday at home studying exams were about a week away and I had a goal of maintaining my A average.

.

Monday came it was the first break I had to pull sebastain from our friends coz I wanted to talk to him

Me: "I love you, you know that right?" He chuckled

Seb: "I also love you"

Me; "I don't think it a good idea for you to come to the party" sebastain still hadn't met Melo he just saw pics of her

Seb: "why?"

Me: "just that.,"

Seb: "sbonelo is going to be there"

Me; "I just want Melo's party to go on without drama please tell me you understand" he shook his head his eyes filled with hurt

Seb: "I get it" he left me standing there went to our friends took his bag and left I sighed and went over to our friends

Kate: "what was that about?"

Me; "nothing" zee looked at me with pity and mouthed sorry, I had told her before what was happening and she also thought it would be better if sebastain didn't come. 2nd break sebastain didn't say anything at all Shane had caught on during the periods Sebastian told him why he was upset and he gave me a piece of his mind for hurting his friend.

.

Tuesday came Sebastian was still not talking to me shabe suggested that the boys don't go to the party and I agreed coz it wouldn't have felt right if sebastain didn't go while the others came.

.

Wednesday I went to school I was getting fed up with begging sebastain, luckily he came to his senses and apologized for acting like a jerk he told that he didn't like that but he understood. After school I went home had lunch chilled with my daughter than around 18:00 I gave her a bath got her dressed In jeans n jacket than took a bath got out wore leggings with vest knee length boots and a cot it was cold, Nelo called when I was just finishing up with my make up I went downstairs opened the gate for him than ran back to my room finshed with my make up fixed braids into a bun than took my bag and walked downstairs found him playing with his daughter who couldnt stop laughing

Me: "hey" he picked her up and stood up

Nelo: "hey nana" he kissed my forehead

Me: "you well?"

Nelo; "yes n you"

Me: "im good, we should go so we can come back soon I got school tomorrow"

Nelo; "you look beautiful nana" I looked away blushing

Me: "thank you" we walked out after telling Mike he opened the door for me before putting Melo in her seat he got in and we left

Nelo: "can't believe she's one already"

Me: "neh"

Nelo: "seems like just yesterday when I found out you were pregnant"

Me: "time just flew by"

Nelo: "I still say we should give her a baby brother now" I laughed

Me: "ask siwe"

Nelo: "please don't"

Me: "oryt"

Nelo: "I'm moving"

Me: "moving?"

Nelo: "yes I applied for transfer to durban it got approved yesterday so when work opens next year January I'll start here in DBN im done with Mpumalanga"

Me: "oh wow" I didn't know what to say I just felt all kinda of emotions

Nelo: "I'll be closer to you guys we can finally work on us"

Me: "I'm with someone and so are you"

Nelo: "I know but that doesn't change that I have your heart as much as you have mine truth is I love you and you love me"

Me: "I love sebastain"

Nelo: "you like him" I didn't say anything after that coz what he was saying was true.

We got to pava had dinner at spur they sang for Melo even after refusing Nelo still gave her ice cream after dinner we went home.

Thursday and Friday flew by Friday we went to the mall with Nelo bought everything that we needed to buy including melo's dress I didn't ask him if he was bring siwe or not. He told me that he sold his house and was looking for a place around durban but he found a flat in north beach and he was going to move in, in December while looked for a house.

.

Saturday morning we woke up early coz the delivery people were coming in early we hired a jumping castle, slides, swings, a swimming pool coz the swimming pool at home was too deep for children we also hire a face paint person and cotton cady machine.

The people sat up early than the decorating people also came early sat up round tables

for the kids in Mickey mouse theme than sat up a bar for the elders there was a small table with chocolate fountain and marshmallows around the fountain another table for cheese fondue for the corn dogs. We were going to speed braai half of lamb n pork for the grown ups and make hot dogs for the kids. Around 11:00 the whole sat up was done I went to bath Melo dressed her up in her black n red princess dress with a crown, I also took a bath and got dressed in bum shorts and a basketball vests. People started coming in around 13:00 Asa came with her son who was just a month old, Qin was also there with his other kid and his baby mama things were just awkward between him and Asa but Asa promised to behave. My whole family was also there along with my girls and they young siblings the boys really didn't come but Stacy came her mother dropped her off. I was busy trying to wipe Melo's face that was filled with chocolate all over it when I heard a chuckle we both turned to find Nelo, he looked really good in maroon chino short showing his yellow hairy legs and white checked short sleeve shirt with white all stars. Melo ran to him and fell she got up and tried running again I just stayed back and laughed at her Nelo picked her up and came to me"

Nelo: "what you doing to my child?" He brought me close to him and hugged me with one hands

Me: "look at her face" he did and laughed

Nelo: "she's adorable just like her mommy" I giggled and looked away

Me: "you came alone"

Nelo: "no with Sfundo"

Me: "just Sfundo" he looked at me like I was acting weird

Nelo: "yes"

Me: "ok good" he chuckled

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" we looked at each other for a long time until someone cleared their throats

Philisiwe: "my people" she fist pumped Nelo

Me: "oh God" I left them there and went in the house where I found mom and Nelo's

mom talking

Me: “mah” she gave me a hug

N’s mom: “love” she made me turn around “that’s a really short outfit makoti” mom laughed

Me: “aibo mah it not short”

N’s mom: “it short and you got guest go change”

Me: “but Sbonelo doesn’t mind”

N’s mom: “go change love” I looked at mom she just shrugged her shoulders I left them went up to my room and changed to a lose summer maxi dress with no strappes and let my braids lose I went back downstairs they were still in the lounge

N’s mom: “now you look beautiful” I laughed and walked out going to the back I found Nelo with my cousins

Nelo: “you changed”

Me: “your mom made me change” he laughed brought me closer to him

Nelo: “why” he held my waist with one hand while the other held my chin

Me: “she said my outfit is short” he laughed and kissed me I wrapped my hands around his neck and he wrapped his around waist pressing us together as we kissed deeply

## **part 89 I am scared of lonely**

We pulled back after awhile and looked at each other for a long time

Nelo: “you so beautiful nana” he trailed the back of his hand up n down my face “you beautiful in and out I messed us up”

Me: “nelo” he put his finger on my lips

Nelo: “let me finish” I nodded “I’ve never loved anyone the way I love you” he saw doubt all over my face “I know nana but all those girls meant nothing I promise you call it a moment of weakness when I needed something”

Me: “you still cheated beat me up” he looked down

Nelo: “I’ll never stop being sorry for that, nana you gave me the most precious gift in the world my photocopy our beautiful daughter instead of being grateful I treated you

like” he flinched as if his in pain “I was an ass to you nana” I stood on my toes and held his face bringing his face to mine and kissed him he held my back with one hand we kissed for a long time until I heard melo’s voice she was crying we walked towards her found them next to the slide Stacy wiping her tears with her tiny hands I kneeled next to them

Me: “what happened Stacy”

Stacy: “she fell we were playing sorry Melo”

Me: “it ok Stacy” I picked Stacy up coz Nelo already took his daughter

Me: “she just fell” he kept on hushing her kissing her all over her face

Nelo: “she shouldn’t have fell in the first place”

Me: “oh ayike kids fall all the time” we walked to the tables filled chopstick with marshmallows than dipped it in the chocolate fountain I gave Stacy one and one to Melo

Me: “go play, put her down Nelo”

Nelo: “no”

Me: “let her go play”

Nelo: “she’s going to fall again”

Me: “than let her fall there’s grass all over she won’t get hurt”

Nelo: “she wouldn’t have cried if it didn’t hurt”

Me: “do what you want with your child” I took Stacy to the other kids went my friends

Me: “you guys good”

Court; “yeah”

Kate: “we saw that you know”

Me: “saw what ?”

Kate: “you and Nelo kissing”

Me: “oh”

Zee: “you going to hurt Sebastian”

Me; “no I’m not it was a mistake you know with Melo’s birthday we were just talking and we got carried away”

Kate: "it not us you have to explain to it Sebastian"

Me: "telling him will hurt him"

Zee: "than dump him"

Me: "no ways I love him"

Zee: "you shouldn't have done that"

Court: "can we not talk about it now but Lelo you need to leave him if you don't love him we know him we've been friends since grade 9 his too fragile and he really loves you so the longer you string him along the more it will hurt"

Me: "I love Sebastian what you guys saw was a mistake"

Kate: "it didn't look like a mistake you two got unfinished business"

Me; "you guys ate" they laughed

Zee: "no those guys are too hot we'll just fumble" I laughed my cousins and kyle were standing by the speed braii my cousins are good looking the style is always on point

Me: "let's go" we went there I introduced them my girls were just giggling and blushing especially when my cousins started flirting with them

Me: "see your'll later feed my friends" I pointed at Thulani and left them there. Went to check on Asa she was with Ndumo Sthe Philisiwe Mbali Nelo qin and Qin's baby mama

Me: "where's skhalo"

Asa: "aunty dolly took him"

Me: "his so adorable I wouldn't let him out of my sight" we laughed

Asa: "child! I'm a single parent if I can just have 5 minutes without skhalo on my hands I'd be happy to take it" the girls laughed qin just looked uncomfortable Nelo looked at me and shook his head

Sthe: "after exams we going clubbing wear the shortest thing you have we gona find baby skhalo a daddy"

Asa: "baby girl!! That's a must plus my body is so up for it" she spinned around shaking her booty a little Asa didn't even gain weight during her pregnancy only her tummy and boobs were big we laughed

Me: "I'm so going with you"



Nelo: "for what ke coz your child has a father"

Me; "yeah but .."

Nelo: "but what?" He raised his eyebrow and bite his bottom lip he had that look in his eyes

Me: "stop" I said softly and he chuckled

Asa: "moral support Nelo I need my friends skhalo's father decided to be a sperm donor it was all nice when he was grinding and pumping sweating all over me now he bails" I could see qin losing his cool at the corner of my eye

Baby mama: "where is he?" We all looked at each other

Sthe: "sorry uhm what's your name again" honestly speaking even I didn't know her name

Baby mama; "oh Nosipho" she giggled

Asa: "oh well sis Nosipho I have no idea" sthe n I laughed at the sis Nosipho comment she was old she looked like she's in her late 20s or early 30s

Nosipho: "shame im so grateful I have Qiniso his just the best father"

Asa: "is he?" She looked at Qin and smiled "you so lucky sis Nosipho"

Philisiwe: "tjo Asa bru" she hadn't stopped laughing since we started talking

Nelo: "nana a sec please" I went to him "that was unnecessary tell Asa to stop" I laughed

Me: "ok I will but he deserves it" he chuckled

Nelo: "I know I told him not to bring her here just bring his child but he didn't listen"

Me: "it cool he knows what his doing" he tried kissing me again but I moved my face

Nelo: "now what"

Me: "don't do that"

Nelo: "mmh we gona talk about this later"

Me: "you not gona hit me for not wanting to kiss you"

Nelo: "you really think I'm a monster"

Me: "no I think when you don't get your way you use violence"

Nelo: "I'll go for anger management classes if that's what it takes"

Me; “really”

Nelo: “I love you nana I didn’t ask for a transfer at work to not be with you, you and Melo are my family”

Me: “good I hope you commit to those classes”

Nelo: “I will I promise” he kissed my forehead and we went to the others Qin wasn’t there anymore

Nelo: “where did Qin go”

Nosipho: “get something from the car” just than Asa’s phone rang

Asa: “the bastard it skhalo’s dad”

Sthe: “answer”

She did

Asa: “what do you want.... Nah I got nothing to say to you .... Fuck off” she dropped the call it rang again “fuck off bru .... Ok fine!” She dropped the call again

Phil: “and than?”

Asa: “I’ll be right back” she left we all looked at each other

Sthe: “hope they know what they doing”

Nelo: “they old enough”

Nosipho: “who is they”

Sthe: “not your concern”

Me: “sthe!” She rolled her eyes “I’ll go check on the kids”

Nelo: “I’ll come with you nana” we left there was a photographer taking random pics for the whole day we didn’t even see him just heard the camera going off Nelo was walking behind me with his hands around my waist, we both turned to his direction and laughed.

Nelo: “that’s gona be a nice pic”

Me: “that’s the whole point” we checked on the kids than went to the bar we both got juice

Me: “you not drinking”

Nelo: “maybe later” I looked at him and smiled he mouthed I love you

Thobeka: "you got a call" we turned to see her

Me: "who is it"

Thobeka: "your dad"

Me; "oryt, I'll be back" we left Nelo there and went in the house I took the house phone and called dad

Dad: "hello"

Me: "it's me"

Dad: "oh good, come out here with Melo"

Me: "you not coming in"

Dad: "I'm not about to enter that man's house"

Me: "ooh dad"

Dad: "just come out"

Me: "ok will be there now" I hang up went to look for Melo I found her we went out the gate my dad was parked next to it he came out when he saw us he was with his gf, we exchanged greetings he gave Melo her present wished her happy birthday and left. We went back in I left Melo with the kids thobeka was with them I went to Nelo and my friends Asa n Qin were back as well. Around 16:00 we all sang for her my daughter couldn't stop laughing Nelo and I helped her cut the cake after she blew her one candle everyone had a piece after the cake she opened her presents around 18:00 the kids started leaving the others went inside the house stayed in the play room I went to my room to wear a jacket than took my phone. Qiniso went to drop off his baby mama and child at her house in mlazi. We were all sitting together drinking and talking Zee couldn't stop flirting with Thulani she was even sitting on his lap my phone rang it was Sebastian so I stood up to answer it

Me: "hey baby"

Seb: "hun, I'm outside please come out with Stacy"

Me: "cool give me a minute" I hung up than went to take Stacy she was asleep in melo's nursery she opened her eyes when I picked her up

Stacy: "yeyo" she rubbed her eyes

Me: "Sebastian is here for you"

Stacy: "ok" she rested her head on my chest we got out the gate Sebastian opened the back seat of the car I laid her down he closed the door

Seb: "how did the party go"

Me: "really well Stacy is tired they had a busy day" he laughed

Seb: "I can tell" he brought me closer to him and we kissed "God I've missed you" he mumbled in my mouth as his tongue invaded my mouth I let out a slight moan before pulling back

Me: "I've missed you" he looked deeply in my eyes than said he loves me I felt guilt tripping in

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "I .. Uhm you see .. The things is ... That uhm" I wanted to dump him I wanted to tell him how I want to fix things with Nelo but I couldn't call me selfish inconsiderate call me a slut if you may but I loved Sebastian maybe not as much as I loved Sbonelo but I loved him as well I couldn't hurt him I also didn't wana hurt myself I just couldn't leave him

Seb: "what baby"

Me: "I love you soo much" he smiled and grabbed my neck kissing me hard I pressed my hands on his chest his heart was pounding fast he pulled back and pressed our foreheads together

Seb: "I'm so in love with you it insane"

Me: "believe me I understand" he laughed

Seb: "gotta go Stacy needs her bed I'll see you Wednesday baby" we kissed again but briefly

Me: "I love you"

Seb: "love you more" he kissed my forehead "go on wana make sure in before I leave"

Me: "ok bye" I ran into the house straight to the back

Kate: "where you been"

Me: "they came to fetch Stacy"

Nelo: "I can smell him on you" I shifted on my sit next to him

Me: "he just came to take his sister" he stood up went to the bar came back with a bottle of vodka

Philisiwe: "let's get drunk boy!"

Me: "yeah let's get drunk" I took the vodka poured some in my glass and drank it in one go poured again drank it in one go as well when I was about to pour the 3rd double shot Nelo took the bottle

Nelo: "fok off mani lelo"

Me: "what?! You getting drunk right alcohol solves everything right so let me be!" I stood up with an intention of going to get more alcohol but he also stood up and pulled my hand roughly I smashed into his chest he smashed his lips to mine we kissed angrily teeth crashing I bite his lip and he groaned I could taste blood he pulled back leaving me breathless

Nelo: "you the most frustrating person ever"

Me: "so are you"

Nelo: "yet you still love me"

Me: "I know" I said softly

Nelo: "now sit down and don't drink alcohol like it water" I turned to sit down and everyone was staring at us I had even forgotten that we weren't alone

Me: "uhm sorry"

Philisiwe: "tjo" they all started laughing and went back to what they were doing

Kate: "Lelo can we talk"

Me: "sure" we got up went a bit further from the others

Kate: "what was that?"

Me: "I don't know"

Kate: "do you know what you doing"

Me: "no I dont"

Kate: "look you and Sebastian are both my friends I don't want our crew getting ruined because of your relationship with Sebastian"

Me: "it won't"

Kate: "sort it out before our trip"

Me: "I will"

Kate: "good now let's get drunk since we won't be doing it until we done with exams"

Me: "let's get drunk" we hugged and went to the others.

.

I woke up the following day in a strange room in bed naked alone. I sat up touched my punani but it was not hurting which is a good sign listened to my body to see if there's any part that's in pain but all was good. I don't even know what happened after everyone started taking shots the bathroom door opened and Nelo stepped out i let out a huge sigh and flopped on the bed Nelo laughed and got on top of me

Nelo: "what were you thinking"

Me: "that im in some strangers bed where are we"

nelo: "I'd never allow that to happen to you, we at garden court"

Me: "the hotel why"

Nelo: "told you I sold my house and the flat doesn't have furniture yet so I'm staying at my parents house I wasn't about to drive all the way there drunk and you passed out"

Me: "why didn't you leave me at home"

Nelo; "you begged me to not leave you and you know I can't say no to you nana"

Me: "oh God" I covered my eyes with my hand and he laughed

Nelo: "I've missed you you know" he removed my hand

Me: "I know" he got closer to my face "I need to brush my teeth" he chuckled and got off me I stood up took the robe wore it went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth and washed my face took a face clothe to dry it when I looked up at the mirror Nelo was standing behind me our eyes met on the mirror

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "hi" he kissed the back of my ear I giggled it was tickling he moved to my neck sucking on it hard

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "stooop" he didn't instead he opened up my robe he dropped it on the floor and turned me around instantly pressing our lips together he kissed me gently his tongue exploring my mouth his hand going all over my body he took my leg lifting it so that my thigh rested on his hip and started teasing my clit with his thumb I arched my back holding on to the sink me dropping my head gave him full access to my neck than shoved his middle finger in me he moved it around going on circles before shoving another one with the sensation of him tongue on my neck his fingers in me his thumb on my clit I came hard n fast, he picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist walked us back to the bedroom threw me on the bed than his well talented tongue was on my clit he cleaned me up shoving his tongue in me while pinching the sensitive part of my clit that shot me straight to my 2nd bliss he came up to me we kissed I sucked on his tongue loving how I taste loving the smell of me on his face I could feel his tip of my entrance he thrust deep inside I let out a huge moan while burying my nails into his flesh he groaned and didn't move he kept his eyes closed and breathed out than he started moving slowly I met him with every thrust I could feel myself about come to ask "faster daddy" I moaned out he took my hands pinned them above my head and started moving faster pounding me harder possessing me claiming me taking all that I can give I cried out his name as I came he took no time he flipped me over ass up face down and smashed in to me hard I moved my ass up n down bouncing on him his moans giving me all the energy I need he grabbed my braids yanking them hard he called out my name as we both came and collapsed on the bed next to each other

Nelo: "fuck I've missed you nana"

Me: "mmh" he chuckled and brought me to him making me sleep on top of him. We stayed like that in silence until I rembered we didn't use the condom

Me: "sbonelo" I sat up

Nelo: "what nana"

Me: "the condom"

Nelo: "I didn't have one and since when do we use a condom"

Me: "I don't know where you've been or who you've been with"

Nelo: "come on nana you know I've never put your health or my health at risk I don't sleep with anyone without a condom but you"

Me: "so you do sleep with other people" he sighed

Nelo: "please don't start not after we've did that nana don't ruin this moment for me"

Me; "I see"

Nelo: "now come here" he grabbed my neck and kissed we kissed hard roughly I could feel his D twitching under me

Me: "ready to go again"

Nelo: "hell yeah" I lifted my ass up took his D and slowly sank into him while keeping my eyes on him I started moving slowly using my knees to go up n down I gasped in surprise when he grabbed my waist thrusting me harder n deeper into him it didn't take long for the both of us to come

## **part 90 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up when I felt someone shaking me

Me: "mmh"

Nelo: "come on nana get up it getting late" I sat up pulling the sheet to cover my naked body Nelo chuckled

Nelo: "hi" he kissed my head

Me: "hey how long have you been up" he was in clean clothes smelling really nice

Nelo: "over an hour or so"

Me: "why didn't you wake me"

Nelo: "you needed to rest"

Me: "oryt im gona bath"

Nelo: "my toiletries are in the bathroom"

Me: "how did you get your things here"

Nelo: "dad brought them he was coming to durban so I figured he might as well bring them than me having to go back home before leaving"



Me: "when you leaving"

Nelo: "tonight, got work in he morning"

Me: "oryt" I got off the bed tried wrapping the sheet around me but he held it smirking I just stuck my tongue out at him than walked to the bathroom naked putting a little energy while swaying my hips I got in the bathroom and smiled it smelled magical he had already filled the bathtub with hot water and foam I got in immediately closing my eyes letting the water heal my body I felt nelo getting in behind me I didn't open my eyes until he pulled me to him his hard D pressing on my body

Me; "thought you took a bath already" he started massaging my breast lightly pinching my nipple

Nelo: "couldn't sit in there knowing you out here naked touching your self I was going crazy" I moaned and leaned onto him

Me: "I see"

Nelo: "so I thought I could come here and ravish my beautiful girlfriend" he started playing with my punani putting his finger in n out of it

Me: "go on than claim me" after another session of crazy sex he dried us and we went to get lotioned and dressed he had bought me this lose casual high waisted shorts and a vests I got dressed while i was trying to towel dry my braids he came and stood in front of me he took the towel and dropped it on the floor and started kissing on my neck

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "mmh"

Nelo: "let's go again please" I removed myself from his hold and looked at him shocked my punani was still on fire from the session we just had in the bathtub

Me: "I don't have the energy baby"

Nelo: "it's ok I'll do all the work" he started kissing on my neck again his hand going up n down on my thigh while the other was grabbing my ass I let out a small moan but pushed him back

Me: "I'm hungry" he looked at me in disbelief before laughing hard

Nelo: "really"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "oh well let's leave so I can feed you" he adjusted his jeans his hard D was visible I laughed softly I finished up with my hair wore my shoes n jacket he packed my dress and underwear in his bag

Me: "where you taking that" he smirked

Nelo: " keeping it as a reminder" I laughed he grabbed his bag and we walked out went to check out than drove to ocean basket. Our food had just came when I caught Nelo staring at me

Nelo: "I love you, you know that right?"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I want us to work"

Me: "we will"

Nelo: "I dumped siwe after I saw the hurt and anger in your eyes I figured it wasn't worth it"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "and than you wouldn't let me see our child" he chuckled trying to hide a sniff but I still heard it "I hated you so much nana but I still loved and needed you at the same time it was so confusing I missed you and Melo everyday it gave me a little comfort though knowing that you guys are taken care of that you didn't return the money remember that time the first month when I came to your house and you refused to come down with Melo?" I nodded feeling shameful "I wanted to come up there and brake down the down but I had to respect your mother's house, you know after that Friday you had plans with mom on Saturday I begged to come with her but she refused up until I promised to keep my distance coz she didn't want to upset you so I went to gateway just to see my two favorite girls" he frowned before continuing "I saw you nana you seemed happy without me but I was dying than I saw you going to the fitting room I went to mom just so I can kiss Melo I'll let her know I haven't left her that I still loved"

Me: "I'm so selfish" he held my hand on the table squeezing it lightly

Nelo: "no you not I was stupid" he chuckled "I was such a nuisance to mom I called her

everyday asking if you had sent new pictures or not” he quickly wiped away a tear before it fell

Me; “I hate seeing you like this”

Nelo: “you make me weak nana I told you, you my weakest point”

Me: “sorry”

Nelo: “it ok,,, uhm I wana take you somewhere” he started shifting nervously

Me: “where?”

Nelo: “my new flat, hope you like it”

Me; “why wouldn’t I” he shrugged his shoulders

Nelo: “I don’t know”

Me. “Let’s finish up here and go than”

Nelo: “I’m gona miss you, you know that right” I nodded still chewing “I won’t be able to come back this month end but I promise to be back for your birthday”

Me: “it work I understand” we finished up he paid and we left for his new place got there punched in the code greeted the security went up the lift he kept on tapping his fingers on his thigh he does that when his nervous

Me: “relax as long as you love your place im cool” he just nodded as soon as the lift stopped we stepped out walked a little on the passage than stopped in front of the door he opened and we got in he looked at me trying to see my reaction

Nelo: “so?” It was just a simple flat with a kitchen and lounge separated by a counter and two bedrooms with one bathroom

Me; “you love it?”

Nelo: “aah it a roof over my head” I laughed

Me: “yeah but do you like it”

Nelo: “I’d live in”

Me: “how long is you lease”

Nelo: “6 months why”

Me: “can you get out of it”

Nelo: “you don’t like the place”

Me: "no baby it an amazing place for someone who doesn't have a child" he stretched his head

Nelo: "true"

Me: "got a place we could check out I saw it when I went to visit a friend" I had seen apartments that were being put up for rent when we went to drop of shane at ballito

Nelo: "where"

Me: "simbiti eco estate"

Nelo: "oh that should be nice" he kissed me lightly than we left, when we got to simbiti I told the guard we were here to look at the flats it was just our luck coz it was on show we drove in when we got there the estate lady was walking out a bunch of 4 guys

Lady: "hi I'm Tarny Mckenzie" we shook hands

Nelo: "Nelo and Lelo" she looked at us confused

Tarny: "twins"

Nelo: "husband and wife" I nudged Nelo on this stomach we laughed

Tarny; "oh my well come on in" we all went the place was beautiful fully furnished but spacious

Tarny: "ill give you time to look around than you can ask me questions I'll be outside"

Me: "ok thanks" it had 3 bedrooms 2 batrooms open plan lounge kitchen and dining area Nelo pulled me outside the balcony while I was still looking at the bedrooms

Nelo: "look at this" it had a view of the beach

Me: "it amazing" he wrapped his arms around my waist

Nelo: "move in with me"

Me; "mom n dad would never allow that"

Nelo: "I'll ask them"

Me: "if they agree than I will" he kissed deeply until we heard Tarny clearing her throat

Tarny: "sorry" she looked flushe

Nelo; "it ok"

Tarny: "it comes with the furniture"

Me: "what if we don't like some of the things"

Tarny: "we can keep them in the store room"

Nelo: "what would you like to change"

Me: "the lounge"

Tarny: "that's ok"

Me; "we have a daughter so if like to make one of the bedrooms more suitable for her and the master bedroom ofcos" Nelo looked at me with a smug on his face

Tarny: "I know someone who can child proof the place for you" she opened her file took out card and gave it to Nelo

Me: "so" I turned to look at Nelo he lifted my chin with his index finger we just stared at each for a while before he planted a soft peck on my lips

Nelo: "we'll take it"

Tarny: "great!" Nelo and her went I stayed outside looking at the view after an hour or so I felt Nelo wrapping his arms around me

Nelo: "hey"

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "I'm done we can go" we left "so when are we getting the things nana"

Me: "when you come but I was thinking we should use the things that Melo had at your house" he nodded "I love your place baby" he looked at me briefly

Nelo: "our place" I squeezed his thigh "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you more" we drove in silence for awhile just listening to music

Nelo: "you do know that you need to leave him right coz I'm not sharing you with that boy" I didn't say anything just looked out the window "nana!"

Me: "I heard you" I said softly

Nelo: "what's with the attitude"

Me; "I said I heard you what do you want from me"

Nelo: "you leaving him that's what I want"

Me: "you can't expect me to just change my life as you please sbonelo" he pressed the breaks on the car so fast and hard that I moved forward if I wasn't wearing a seatbelt I would have gotten hurt me

Me: "the hell Nelo you almost hurt me"

Nelo: "you will leave that boy Lelo so help me go he will meet his maker and your child will have a jail bird as a father" the card behind us started hooting

Me: "I said I'll leave theres no need to even argue about this I know where my heart and I'll leave him"

Nelo: "thank you"

Me; "can you move this car already before we get in an accident" he started the car and drove off

Nelo: "sorry"

Me: "when did you say you will start anger management"

Nelo: "I said I was sorry"

Me: "yeah I heard you but you still didn't answer me"

Nelo: "I'll go January when I'm back here fully"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "I love you ok"

Me: "yeah so do I" the rest of the ride was silent until we reached home he parked outside

Me: "you not coming in"

Nelo: "it late nana I got a long drive plus I got work in the morning "

Me: "ok cool"

Nelo: "kiss Melo for me and tell her daddy loves her"

Me: "will do" we kissed I got off he waited for me to get in the gate before hooting and driving of. Everyone was in the lounge watching tv when I got in Melo was sitting down on a sponge eating the tv remote

Me: "fam"

Them: "hey"

Kyle: "and she returns" I took kegs from mom played with him a little he'd just open his mouth smiling I threw him up and caught him a couple of times his big blue eyes would pop up when I threw him up

Me: “whose the most adorable baby boy in the world” I said kissing his nose he would just grab my face with his tiny hands “yes you are baby yes you are”

Mike: “he certainly is”

Me: “true kyle and Siya got nothing on him”

Kyle: “speak for yourself im a known panty dropper little sis”

Mom: “you better not bring any babies while panty dropping”

Kyle: “never! I know how to handle my business”

Mike: “Mr business you better be talking about a condom and you lelo where you coming from?”

Me: “at Kate’s house”

Mom: “I don’t rembere raising a liar” she gave me a dead stare

Me: “ok was with Sebastian”

Kyle: “hope you used a condom we all know you fertile”

Me: “shut up”

Kyle: “make me”

Me: “bite me”

Kyle: “you taste sour”

Me: “ass”

Mike: “enough!”

Mom: “shouldn’t you be studying for Wednesday”

Me: “eish yeah” I took my daughter from the floor whispered to her that daddy said he loves her she just giggled my lips were tickling her ears I took her to her nursery we played we played for a while before she got sleepy than I took her to my room my phone was on my bed when I laid Melo down it had lot of missed calls from Sebastian as well as text. I laid on the bed with a huge sigh my heart felt heavy deep down I knew that I need to let Sebastian go but I couldn’t I loved him and I needed him I couldn’t bare the thought of going back to being single I hated how I was when I was single I felt unloved, unattractive, worthless I craved affection I hated the uncertainty that being with Nelo brought I wasn’t sure how long we were going to last this time before we hurt

each other again I needed Sebastian coz I knew he wouldn't hurt me I knew he would never leave me he gave me assurance consistently of his love and commitment I couldn't just let go of that. I ended up sleeping instead of studying woke up at 02:00 when my alarm rang quickly switched it off before it woke Melo up I went to wash my face and rinse my mouth. Went to the kitchen for cold water and wine gums came back sat on my desk and studied until 06:00 I took a break checked my phone Sebastian was online

Me: "hey baby"

Seb: "my God hun where have you been I've been worried sick"

Me: "sorry I made you worry it been a crazy day baby with the cleaning helping out the people who came to collect they things as soon as everything was settled I slept I had no time to check on my phone"

Seb: "you should have at least texted"

Me: "I know I suck im sorry baby"

Seb: "you do suck" he sent a sad face

Me: "forgive me"

Seb: "you make me sad"

Me: "now I feel really bad baby I'm sorry it truly wasn't my intention baby I love you"

Seb: "I love you too, why you up"

Me: "studying"

Seb: "me to"

Me: "I miss you"

Seb: "can I come pick you up tomorrow we'll study together"

Me: "I'll have to ask for permission first"

Seb: "yeah I get it just let me know what your mom says"

Me: "cool let me go back to my books call me around 13:00"

Seb: "shot" I logged off studied until 10:00 than slept. Woke up when my phone was ringing Sebastian was calling it was 13:00 Melo wasn't in my bed. I asked mom she agreed I took a bath got dressed packed my backpack ate than Sebastian picked me up



Seb: "hey hun" we kissed briefly

Me: "baby"

Seb: "I really missed you"

Me: "so did I"

Seb: "what do you need for studying"

Me: "just water n wine gums"

Seb: "cool thought you might need something from the shops"

Me: "just that"

Seb: "so tell me what happened Saturday"

Me: "nothing unusual"

Seb: "you sure there's nothing you want to tell me"

Me: "nope"

Seb: "mmh" he didn't say anything after that until we got to his home he parked the car in the garage got off opened my door than took my bag from the back sit we went on straight to his room he was home alone

Seb: "you sure there's nothing you want to tell me" his tone was accusing I started feeling guilty but I maintained my cool

Me: "there's nothing"

Seb: "I don't want you lying to me"

Me: "ok he kissed baby but i stopped him"

Seb: "what!"

Me: "it will never happen again I can assure he knows it you that I want and love he knows that I'm in love with you that what he and I shared is in the past"

Seb: "didn't he know that before he shoved his tongue down your throat"

Me: "now he understands"

Seb: "I don't like this Lelo I don't like it at all" I got closer to him held the color of his jacket before kissing him hard and deeply

Me: "it you that I want and need I love you baby" I murmured on his lips

Seb: "I love you so much it hurts Lelo"

Me: "I understand I feel the same way"

Seb: "I'm scared of him taking you away from me"

Me: "I won't let him I love you" we kissed again he took off my jacket and sneakers after taking his off we got under the covers and slept with our bodies wrapped around each other. We woke up later and studied I ended sleeping over after Carmel called mom assuring her that we would study and we did study he took me home following day afternoon just so I can rest and recap.

2 weeks later we were done with exams everyone was excited we were going to Jhb we rented out a guest house in sandton going to be staying there for a week Sebastian was going to drive as well as Ryna Kate's bf Sebastian's father gave him his Range Rover coz it bigger than the polo that he uses. It was Thursday we were leaving Friday midday I still hadn't told Nelo I was going I took a deep breath before calling him he answered quickly

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey daddy" he chuckled

Nelo: "what do you want"

Me: "I love you so much do you know that"

Nelo: "yes I know nana so what do you want"

Me: "I need you to let me talk and finish before you bite my head off"

Nelo: "ok I'm listening"

Me: "so my friends and I have been planning this trip way before we got back together we going to jhb just for a week and o need you to be cool with it"

Nelo: "yeah I'm cool do you need cash"

Me: "the boys will be there as well it not just us the girls"

Nelo: "no ways!!" He screamed I had to remove my phone from my ear

Me: "Nelo please" I tried using my soothing tone

Nelo: "no!"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "no"

Me: "don't you trust me"

Nelo; "don't try to manipulate me" I sighed

Me: "I broke up with him"

Nelo: "I don't care it bad enough that you friends with him and now you wana stay a full week with him hha you must think I'm crazy"

Me: "it not just him daddy my other friends will be there"

Nelo: "still"

Me: "if you love me you need to trust me and know that I'm smart enough to not do anything that will ruin us"

Nelo: "nana I do love n trust but I just can't please don't go"

Me: "i want to the exams have been so stressful I need this"

Nelo: "one condition"

Me: "yes"

Nelo: "I'll come pick you up from jhb you gona spend the weekend with me than go back to your friends on Sunday when are you leaving anyway"

Me: "tomorrow but I can't spend the weekend" what was I going to say to Sebastian

Nelo: "that's my condition nana if you can't take it than don't even bother packing"

Me: "but Nelo why you gotta be so unreasonable"

Nelo: "unreasonable hha unreasonable nana tell how you would feel if I told I'll be spending a week with my ex"

Me: "I get it guess I'll see you tomorrow night"

Nelo: "just let me know when you in jhb"

Me: "I will"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "love you more" I dropped the call than burried myself on my pillow and screamed out my frustration

**part 91 I am scared of lonely**

Woke up in the middle of the night because of a sting I felt on my cheek I opened my eyes to find Melo staring at me she was about to slap me again

Me: "hey wena bhabha"

Melo: "nene" she pointed to her bottle it was empty

Me: "so you thought it best you just slap me" I started tickling her "You Ngcobo people better stop hitting me" she was laughing so hard that she was in tears. I got off the bed took her with me when to the kitchen took her bottle from the fridge warmed it got myself a glass of milk as well then we went back to my room she couldn't fall asleep so I took my laptop and we watched cartoons id catch Melo staring at me instead of watching cartoons a couple of times she would just smile looking more like her dad than ever I ended up switching the laptop off laying her on my stomach I played with her Afro while she sucked on her thumb until she fell asleep I laid her on the bed and just watched her eventually I fell asleep.

Woke up again because my phone was ringing I sat up before answering it got a chance to look out the window and it was raining heavily

Me: "hello"

Nelo: "nana were you still asleep"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "you know it almost 11:00"

Me: "your daughter woke me up with a slap in the middle of night" he chuckled

Nelo: "eish sorry nana, why?"

Me: "she wanted her bottle"

Nelo: "I'll take her to anger management with me" we laughed

Me: "please do don't leave her behind"

Nelo: "I miss you guys"

Me: "we miss you too at least I'll get to see you in a few hours"

Nelo: "yeah nana about that I just got back from a meeting I have to go to Limpopo today for the whole week"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "I'm sorry was looking forward to seeing you"

Me: "me too but it work I understand" I tried sounding disappointed but I was actually relieved

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana"

Me: "it ok baby really I get it"

Nelo: "I love you ok"

Me: "I love you more"

Nelo: "please behave nana please"

Me: "I will trust me"

Nelo: "don't even touch alcohol I don't want that boy taking advantage of you" I chuckled

Me: "I won't drink Nelo I know you don't feel comfortable with me drinking unless im with you"

Nelo: "can't believe you started drinking because of me" I got a flashback of the New Years eve that I had my first drink I had locked myself in Nelo's room with a bottle of vodka because of what pinky had told me

Me: "it wasn't your fault I was just too forward"

Nelo: "I have to go nana where's my daughter" I looked around my bed but couldn't see her even under the covers

Me: "she's not in bed I think someone came and took her while I was asleep"

Nelo: "don't want my daughter falling of the staircase"

Me: "she won't there's gates remember"

Nelo: "yeah but.."

Me: "Nelo theres 3 kids in this house so this house is child proofed I can assure that where ever Melo is she won't get hurt"

Nelo: "I still can't believe you mom refused to let you guys move in with me"

Me: "I told you she wasn't going to agree"

Nelo: "remember that time I came to talk to her and Mike"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I asked her if I could propose to you she said no" I didn't say anything I was shocked and speechless "nana"

Me: "I'm just a child Nelo im still in high school how can you just assume I'd marry you or that my parents would be ok with that"

Nelo: "I love you nana whether I marry you now or 5 years later it won't make a difference with the shit we've been through"

Me: "than wait for those bloody 5 years!"

Nelo: "don't raise your voice at me"

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "I love you nana you more than just my woman you my daughters mother my best friend you own my heart nana you the love of my life is it wrong of me to want to wake up next to you every morning and fall asleep with you on top of me every night"

Me: "no it not"

Nelo: "I love you nana you own me heart and soul"

Me: "I love you and you own me as well heart n soul Sbonelo"

Nelo: "see we love each other we can't be apart so why not get married you being in high school doesn't change how we feel ill take care of you and Melo"

Me: "id love to be Mrs you one day but not now when the time is right" he sighed

Nelo: "I guess it not like your parents would ever let us get married now"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I have to go I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

Nelo: "call me when you leave"

Me: "I will bye" he hang up I laid on the bed started chatting to my friends on the group chat we were all meeting at pavilion at 14:00 so that gave me more than enough time to pack eat and bath. I got off the bed made it went to wash my face and rinse my mouth charged my phone and went downstairs Thobeka was feeding Melo in the kitchen while aunt dolly was preparing breakfast

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning"

Me: "hey there little ma'Ngcobo" I pulled her cheek she made that brrr sound spitting all the butternut that was in her mouth out all over thobeka's face

Thobeka: "aah Melokuhle" I laughed

Me: "sorry neh"

Thobeka: "your child though" I laughed and helped aunt dolly with breakfast while Thobeka tried getting herself and Melo cleaned. When we were done we sat up the table I went to call mom Mike and kyle we all had breakfast together. After breakfast I went to bath Melo dressed her up warmly her afro was huge i had no idea what to do with it I just put a hat on her head knowing very well it won't even last an hour on her when I was done with her she fell asleep immediately I put her down on her cot took the monitor left her door open than went to my room I started packing while packing I received a bank notification Nelo had transferred me money I took my phone and called him

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hey I just got the money what is it for"

Nelo: "you"

Me: "why coz I don't need your money sbonelo"

Nelo: "I know you don't we've had that conversation before but it doesn't mean I won't give it to you"

Me: "I don't want you giving me money unless it for Melo"

Nelo: "I love you nana and have fun on your trip with your friends"

Me: "sbonelo"

Nelo: "it not that much just a couple of thousands stop reacting"

Me: "don't do this"

Nelo: "say thank you and go have fun"

Me: "thank you" I felt defeated

Nelo: "you welcome nana please behave"

Me: "I will bye" I hang up out my phone back on the charger finished up packing took a

bath got out lotioned wore my underwear did my make up got dressed in sweatpants vests all stars fixed my short braids. I took my phone and melo's monitor to the lounge I watched tv until Sebastian called asking me to open the gate for him I did than went up to get my luggage and wore my biker when I went back downstairs he was already in the house with Trey talking to Kyle and Mike

Trey: "woah Lelo we only going for a week what's with the bags"

Me: "hey I need options"

Kyle: "one suitcase should have been enough"

Trey: "yeah"

Seb: "just let her be come on baby" he took my bags after kissing my forehead

Mike: "take care of my daughter Sebastian"

Seb: "I will sir I promise"

Mike: "don't share a bedroom with her" Trey n kyle laughed

Kyle: "as if"

Me: "shut up kyle"

Kyle: "what dad should be saying is that don't forget to use a condom Sebastian"

Me: "dad"

Mike: "kyle stop but his right though if you guys are having sex use a condom please"

Me: "dad come on" Sebastian's face was turning red I could tell he was uncomfortable

Me: "we not even having sex give us a break" Kyle gasped

Kyle: "don't tell us you a virgin little sis" he covered his mouth with his hand acting shocked

Me: "shut up kyle!" Trey was in stitches

Seb: "we should go"

Mike: "drive safely and have fun" he kissed both my cheeks and pulled me in for a hug

Me: "Melo is still asleep" I gave Mike the monitor

Kyle: "bye" he gave me a hug and whispered condom I pushed him off me giving him a punch he chuckled Mike walked us out I waited by the door while Sebastian was packing my bags it was still raining Trey ran to the car and got in the front seat



Seb: "no ways Trey get off that lelo's sit it a long drive I don't wana be looking at your face the whole time"

Trey: "dude you gona be looking at the road and Lelo will distract you"

Seb: "dude move"

Trey: "you so whipped" he got off and I ran for the door got in the car Sebastian got in as well after closing my door

Me: "ooh baby" I removed hair from his face his hair was wet

Seb: "I missed you" I held his face and we kissed slowly and passionately

Trey: "fuck off this is why I didn't want her sitting in the front" I pulled back laughing but Sebastian held my chin bringing my face to his and we kissed again but shortly we stared at each other just smiling within kissing distance

Seb: "I love you" he gave me a soft peck and started driving I had my hand on his thigh

Trey: "I really hope this trip won't turn into a romantic gateway for you two coz this is about is having fun as friends"

Me: "you should have brought your gf you wouldn't be feeling this way"

Trey: "nah I need a break from her ever since I broke her virginity she's such a nag"

Me: "she wasn't a nag before but now that you got what you wanted she's a nag"

Seb: "I still don't understand why would you date a child in grade 8"

Trey: "I also don't understand she can't even give a good head"

Me: "Trey!" They laughed

Trey: "what it the truth"

Me: "maybe but you can't talk about those kind of things with us keep it between you and your gf"

Trey: "what you think Sebastian doesn't talk about the sexual part of your relationship"

Me: "baby what is he talking about" Sebastian cleared his throat and kept his eyes on the road "Sebastian!"

Seb: "don't mind Trey hun he talks too much ofcos I don't talk about how amazing our sexual life is" Trey was laughing

Trey: "yeah he doesn't Lelo" he was sarcastic

Me: "you are so not getting any this week" Trey laughed harder

Seb: "but I don't talk about it"

Me: "I don't even wana hear it"

Seb: "but baby you can't punish me for what Trey said"

Me: "I don't care"

Seb: "you see Trey you and your stupid big mouth"

Trey: "don't involve me"

Seb: "ass" I laughed and turned up the volume on the radio we got to pava met up with the others at wimpy we all sat down and ate

Seb: "so who is riding with me" shane Mzo n Trey talked at the same time saying me

Ryan: "guess im with the girls"

Seb: "lelo" I turned to look at him "you not driving with me" I shook my head "oh" he looked disappointed

Mzo: "now our ride is going to be boring Sebastian is going to be all emotional the whole way"

Seb: "fuck off Mzo"

Mzo: "it true"

Seb: "Lelo can I talk to you for a minute" he stood up I followed him we went outside "are you mad at me baby did I do something wrong"

Me: "why would you tell the boys about our sexual life" he looked taken back

Seb: "baby I .." He ran his hand through his hair "I'm sorry" he looked down I started walking back to the restaurant but he pulled my hand

Seb: "But baby why you mad"

Me: "you don't get it Sebastian you can't be talking about what we do with the boys they my friends as well how do you think it gona make me feel chilling with them while they know what we get up to" he ran his hand through his hair again

Seb: "I'm sorry baby I didn't think of it that way please forgive me" he sulked

Me: "it fine but please don't do it again" he nodded

Seb: "I wont I promise so you gona ride with me right"

Me: “no” I said it so fast without even thinking about it he pulled me to his chest and gave me hot crazy kiss with tongue before pulling back and gazing in my eyes

Seb: “please love it a long drive”

Me: “ok”

Seb: “cool” we kissed again before going back to join the others kate gave me a questioning look as we sat down and I gave her a nod n a smile. After eating we paid left went to pick n pay for snacks than left the mall I was riding with the boys. The drive was nice even though I slept most of it when I was up the boys kept me entertained we stopped at montrose we were ahead of Ryan so we had to wait for them we chilled a bit there used the bathroom ate filled up the petrol and it was back to the road we got to sandton at night we parked I helped Sebastian with our bags while the others were also busy with their bags we took our bags to the room we were going to use than went back downstairs everyone was sitting around the lounge I excused myself stepped outside to call Nelo after saying our goodbyes we went back inside the house

Shane: “I get that Sebastian n Lelo will share a room as well as kate n Ryan but please keep it down hey”

Seb: “shut up shane”

Zee: “I’m hungry”

Trey: “yeah me too but I don’t wana go out”

Mzo: “pizza n beer than”

Seb: “cool”

Me: “won’t be able to get alcohol at this time”

Seb: “you right”

Ryan: “I’ll call n order pizza with juice than” we took his phone and ordered

Mzo; “it funny how we didn’t discuss what we going to be eating this while week we can’t survive on take away and going out”

Courtney: “you will cook than”

Shane: “the girls will cook”

Kate: “you crazy”

Seb: "baby" I looked at him he was sitting on the couch with his head on my thighs "you won't let me starve ryt you promised mom" he whispered

Me: "don't worry I wont" I whispered back than lowered my head and we kissed, we got wrapped up in our own conversation while they argued about food and cooking responsibility later on pizza came we ate in front of the tv straight out of the boxes.

Later on we all went to our bedrooms everyone was tired Sebastian and I took a shower I wore his pj top n he wore the bottom we got in bed and slept with our bodies entwined.

Woke up in the morning got ready the sun was out it was a beautiful morning we went to the mall had breakfast did grocery we caught a movie than went back to the house later on we all dressed up went to news cafe for dinner n drinks than went back home. The following day we drove out of central jhb went to the carnival spent the whole day there by the time we went back to the house it was late night we just went to sleep. We spent the following day in doors it was raining the boys made breakfast we cleaned up after breakfast Sebastian and I spent the day in bed watching movies on his laptop and cuddling we kissed in the middle of the movie I could feel his D getting hard so I pulled back and burried my face on his chest I felt it rising and falling with a huge sigh

Seb: "hun" I ignored him "honey"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing"

Seb: "you not in the mood"

Me: "yeah" he kissed my head and held me closer

Seb: "I get it"

Me: "sorry"

Seb: "don't be it cool, I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

Seb: "wait a minute" he got off the bed put his flops on went out I took my phone and called home checking on Melo Sebastian came back with his guitar while I was on the

call I said my goodbyes

Me: "you brought it"

Seb: "yep" he got on the bed I rest my head on his shoulder "wana learn"

Me: "if you want to teach me yeah"

Seb: "I will but first I want to sing to you" I smiled and we kissed briefly

Me: "ok baby"

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "and I you hun" he started playing slowly Ed Sheeran- Kiss me

Seb: "settle down with me cover me up cuddle me in, lie down with me and hold me in your arms, And your heart's against my chest, your lips pressed to my neck

I'm falling for your eyes, but they don't know me yet

And with a feeling I'll forget, I'm in love now kiss me like you wanna be loved Kiss me like you wanna be loved

You wanna be loved

You wanna be loved this feels like falling in love falling in love We're falling in love Settle down with me and I'll be your safety You'll be my lady I was made to keep your body warm but I'm cold as the wind blows so hold me in your arms oh no my heart's against your chest, your lips pressed to my neck

I'm falling for your eyes, but they don't know me yet

And with this feeling I'll forget, I'm in love now Kiss me like you wanna be loved

You wanna be loved

You wanna be loved

This feels like falling in love

Falling in love were falling in love yeah I've been feeling everything from hate to love from love to lust from lust to truth i guess that's how I know you

So I hold you close to help you give it up, kiss me like you wana be loved" by the time he finished I was in tears he put his guitar down

Me: "honey!" He lifted me up sat me on top of him wiping my tears

Seb: "liked it"

Me: "it was beautiful baby" he held my face and we kissed passionately

Me: "I love you so much baby" he deepened the kiss slowly slipping his tongue in my mouth I let out a small moan getting wet instantly he laid is on the bed got on top of me we continued kissing he took my leggings off along with my panty than came up kissing my neck I could feel my clit throbbing he took of my tshirt exposing my breast I wasn't wearing a bra he sucked on my breast before going down on me after coming he cleaned me up went to wash his face and rinse his mouth we cuddled eventually falling asleep woke up late kate and I cooked after dinner Courtney n Zee washed the dishes cleaned up the kitchen we watched tv later on went to smile.

The following day Sebastian dropped the girls and I at the mall we went shopping while the boys did they own thing we had late lunch than Sebastian picked us up. Later on Sebastian and I took a shower got out I got dressed in a short v neck navy dress and pumped heels Sebastian and I were going out for dinner I fixedy hair and did my make up while he got dressed in maroon slim cut chinos and white lose overlapping tshirt with a maroon blazer flooded up sleeves I finshed up took my clutch bag he took his car keys n wallet we left. We had a nice dinner at at the Hilton hotel by the time we went back to the house after dinner we caught a late movie, everyone was asleep we went straight to the bedroom I sat on the bed he took my shoes off

Me: "thank you baby"

Seb: "let's take a shower so we can sleep"

Me: "oryt help me out of this dress" it had a zip all the way from the bottom to the top at the back he unzipped me I took of my clothes than went to shower he joined me started kissing on my neck

Me: "let's clean up quickly I don't want stay in the water" he turned me to look at him

Seb: "ok come out with it"

Me: "what"

Seb: "what's wrong every time I initiate sex you shut me down"

Me: "that's not true" I rinsed the foam of me

Seb: "it is and you know it" I quickly stepped out the shower dried myself but he was

right there next to me I went to the bedroom took my pjs but he grabbed them from my hand

Me: "what the hell is wrong with you"

Seb: "no Lelo tell me what did I do wrong or are you just not sexually attracted to me anymore"

Me: "ofcos I am" I tried to not sound defensive

Seb: "than what is it"

Me: "I'm just not in the mood"

Seb: "you haven't been in the mood since melo's birthday" I stared at him not saying anything "Oh my God I'm so stupid you slept with him didn't you"

Me: "don't you dare! Sebastian give me some fuckn credit you really think that low of me"

Seb: "no ofcos not it just that" he ran his hand through his hair

Me: "it just what Sebastian"

Seb: "sorry ok it just that I don't understand"

Me; "I'm just not in the mood that's all"

Seb: "don't give me that crap" his tone turned cold

Me: "nayi imhlola boh ibhandi lami"

Seb: "no fuck that!! You not doing that Lelo you will not start saying things I don't understand you know very well I don't speak zulu so don't fuckn test me Lelothando" I flooded my hands over my chest

Me: "it my body my virgina I don't wana have sex so deal with it now can I have my pjs"

he threw my pjs on the floor he got in his pjs I picked mine up wore them I got under the covers leaving him standing there next to the closer after a while I felt him getting on the bed behind me he pulled me to him wrapped his arms around me

Seb: "sorry" I didn't say anything "Lelo" I still didn't say anything he let out a sigh

**part 92 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up in the middle of the night I was pressed I went to the bathroom to pee when I was done went back to bed Sebastian was up I got in bed and gave him my back

Seb: "baby"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "I'm sorry ok"

Me: "ok I'm also sorry I guess it not fair of me to just act like that"

Seb: "please turn let me see your eyes" I turned but kept my eyes closed he chuckled "hun"

Me: "mmh"

Seb: "open your eyes" I opened them "hi"

Me: "hi"

Seb: "I'm sorry hun"

Me: "I'm such an ass"

Seb: "is that so"

Me: "yeah I have the most amazing bf ever but here I am messing it up" he smirked

Seb: "go on how are you messing it up"

Me: "just being selfish and moody" he raised his eyebrow "and withholding sex" he laughed out loud

Seb: "why are you withholding it anyway"

Me: "I don't know baby I guess I'm just really no in the mood"

Seb: "you sure it not me"

Me: "yeah I'm sure baby you hot n sexy have you seen yourself"

Seb: "I don't know baby"

Me: "you sex on sticks" he chuckled and got on top of me I opened my legs he got in them

Seb: "I love you ok and I get that you don't want me to make love to you it's ok I'm cool im a little sexually furstratated but I'm cool" I laughed

Me: "sexually frustrated?"

Seb: "totally" he bite bottom lip "it been awhile but I'll survive"



Me: "you will survive"

Seb: "I'm a survivor im gona make it I will survive" he sang and I let out a loud laugh he quickly shut me up with his lips he kissed me hard our tongues dancing together before he pulled back going on my neck sucking on it I let out a huge moan when he bite it I could feel myself getting wetter n wetter with every passing moment he lifted my pj top started sucking on my breast while playing with the other one I couldnt stop moaning he pulled back and rolled off me I just laid there trying to figure out what's going on

Seb; "let's sleep hun"

Me: "Sebastian" he turned me to face him so our faces are leveled

Seb: "you not in the mood baby"

Me: "really now"

Seb: "yeah"

Me: "but honey" my punani was in need of some D

Seb: "it late let's sleep" he pullede closer and we slept.

.

Woke up the following day Sebastian was still sleeping I went to the bathroom waged my face and rinsed my mouth than went to the kitchen to get started on breakfast I was busying looking for beacon in the freezer when I heard someone whistling I turned quickly to see who it is and it was Ryan

Me: "oh it you"

Ryan: "who you thought it is"

Me: "Sebastian"

Ryan: "nope just me"

Me: "cool"

Ryan: "nice ass by the way"

Me: "uhm ok thanks I guess" I moved the pan from the stove went up to our room got dressed in sweatpants over my pj shorts when I got back in the kitchen Ryan was sitting on the high chair drinking coffee he chuckled when he saw me

Ryan: "you didn't have to change"

Me: "I wanted to" I carried on making breakfast I could feel his eyes on me with every move I took it was starting to make me feel uncomfortable I went to wake up Sebastian

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "come sit with me while I make breakfast baby please"

Seb: "why"

Me: "just miss having you near me" he groaned before getting up we went to the kitchen I gave him a cup of coffee than finished up with breakfast while he talked to Ryan, when I was done Ryan went to wake up everyone we had breakfast. After breakfast they cleaned we were spending the day at the house the boys went to get meat n alcohol Zee invited Thulani my cousin he was in jhb visiting his mom in midrand they've been dating since Melo's party Zee was happy but I warned her about Thulani my cousin is a player can never stick to one girl and it doesn't hurt that the girls love him. I was in my room wearing my peach n white bikini with lose bum shorts the boys had gone out the girls were around the house doing they own thing I was on the phone with Nelo he kept on complaining about how busy n hard work is he was beyond annoyed with the workers he was managing it was either they were complaining about not being able to do what they supposed to do he ended up doing the work or they were just too slow, so here I was trying to calm him down while he was explaining what they doing after emailing him a video mom had emailed me of Melo singing something that didn't make sense on her karaoke machine he was in tears with laughter all troubles forgotten for few minutes. After talking to Nelo I went out the room looking for the girls they were swimming in the pool Thulani and Zee were busy making out in a corner I took my bum short off and joined kate n Courtney in the water while swimming we heard the boys as they were coming out to the pool

Seb: "honey" I swam to him he held out a towel for me I got out the pool he wrapped it around me

Me: "thank you but why am I getting out"

Seb: "we need to talk"

Me: "oh ok" I took my shirt from the floor wore it then we went up to our room

Seb: "baby did something happen between you and Ryna"

Me: "what? No ofcos not what did he say"

Seb: "are you sure"

Me: "what did he say"

Seb: "he just made some stupid comment"

Me: "what comment"

Seb: "never mind baby"

Me: "I do mind"

Seb: "we were talking about our girls and he was like if he had you he wouldn't let go"

Me: "the fuck"

Seb: "so you sure nothing happened between you two"

Me: "yes ... No ... I mean he just said I got a nice ass"

Seb: "that fucker where did he see your ass" I told him what happened in the morning  
"we leaving"

Me: "excuse me"

Seb: "tonight we leaving"

Me: "but it only Wednesday we supposed to leave Saturday"

Seb: "I know but dad needs me at home"

Me: "needs you for what"

Seb: "we working on something for mom it their anniversary soon and he needs me to  
help out since him n logan are busy at work"

Me: "what about the boys"

Seb: "they said they gona fly only Trey is leaving with us"

Me: "oryt than" we kissed

Seb: "do me a favor"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "plz change your shorts"

Me: "no ways"

Seb: "please it will give me piece of mind"

Me: "but baby we swimming why must I wear jeans just coz Ryan is being a perve"

Seb: "don't change than if you feel that way" we left the girls and I prepared salads and rolls while the boys did the meat outside it was a cool Sebastian and I were not drinking everyone else was drinking while we were busy Thulani came in

Thulani: "cuz I hear you and Sebastian are going home"

Me: "yeah"

Thulani: "give us a lift I left my car at home"

Me: "whose us and a lift where"

Thulani: "lift back to durban Zee and I" I looked at zee

Me; "didn't know you were leaving Zee"

Zee: "I also didn't know but I guess we leaving" I just shook my head

Me: "oryt im sure Sebastian is cool"

Thulani: "ok I'll go drop of mom's car get a cab back with my bag"

Me: "eat first"

Thulani: "cool" he went back to the others we finished before the boys finished so I took my shorts off went back to swimming Sebastian joined me we swam towards a corner

Seb: "I feel like killing him but I don't have it in me to be violent"

Me: "what happened"

Seb: "he hasn't stopped staring at you"

Me; "his just a perve baby don't mind him" we kissed hard and roughly his lips moved to my jaw line down to my neck I dropped my head he started teasing my clit over my bikini I moaned he moved from me immediately after me moaning

Me: "you such a tease hun!" He laughed and swam away "fuckn teaser!" I screamed after him he swam to me fast picked my up and threw me on the water my whole body went in I came back up gasping for air

Me: "Sebastian my hair!" He splashed me with water

Seb: "I'll take you to the salon tomorrow baby"

Me: "you idiot"

Seb: "come on it ruined already lets swim" I got on his back we swam he would go

under the water with me

Seb: "I love you" I got of his back

Me: "I'm in love with you" he gave me the most gorgeous smile ever

Seb; "so am I my love" he picked me up again and threw me over the water

Me: "baby!!"

Ryan: "we about to eat love birds"

Seb: "let's get out baby" we swam towards the other Ryan held out the towel that

Sebastian had used to dry me Sebastian took it from him with force

Seb: "baby" I went to him he dried me up I wore my shorts and wrapped the towel

around me the water dripping from Sebastian's hair falling to his chest made him look so sexy I found my hand going up n down his stomach while the other played with his hair

Me: "you look so sexy honey" he smirked

Seb: "do I"

Me: "totally"

Seb: "Still not in the mood" I brought his face to mine kissing him hard while I fist my hand in his hair grabbing it hard his D got hard instantly

Me: "does that answer your question" he smiled shaking his head before me picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he hurried us to our bedroom he threw me on

the bed went to lock the door got condoms from his bag threw it on the bed than came back to me we kissed again as they say the rest is history after bapsing we took a

shower got out we both wore jeans and tank tops with flops went back outside

everyone was done eating we ate Thulani was also back from his mother's place later on

Sebastian was loading our bags in the car while i was wearing my uggs we left I sat in

the front with Sebastian zee and i slept most of the way when we got to montrose

Thulani and zee took the front seats I slept on Sebastian's lap in the back seat got up

when we got to Morning side at Thulani's home Thulani and zee got off we went to

Sebastian's home Trey was gona go in the morning I was staying for the rest of the week

we slept as soon as our heads hit the pillow.

Following day Carmel woke us up for breakfast after breakfast Trey took a cab home Sebastian and I went back to sleeping we woke later took a bath had lunch Sebastian left he needed to go to his father's architectural firm I stayed with Carmel and Stacy we baked and talked later on she asked me to help her prepare dinner Sebastian's favorite dish when Sebastian came back we were cooking

Seb: "smells amazing mom" he kissed her cheek before coming to give me a wet one on my lips

Carmel: "Lelo is cooking for you"

Seb: "really" he looked at me devilishly

Me: "I'm just helping out"

Seb: "come here" he took my hand and led me to his room

Me: "what's this" there were papers all over his bed

Seb: "the project we working on with dad n logan for mom, it's a restaurant in la lucia she's been wanting to open one but with her boutique and kfc she's been putting it on hold so dad thought it a good idea to get it built for her"

Me: "that's nice im sure she will love it"

Seb: "you gona be here for their dinner on Sunday right"

Me: "if you want me here"

Seb: "I do"

Me: "than I'll be here"

Seb: "great you will meet the rest of the family"

Me: "cool" he looked at me with that I wana eat you now look

Seb: "come closer" I went to him he kissed me slowly grabbing my ass I pushed him back

Seb: "not in the mood" I laughed

Me: "we in your parents house your mom is just downstairs in the kitchen"

Seb: "yeah so"

Me: "Sebastian no"

Seb: "let's go to the hotel we'll come back in the morning" I laughed

Me: "don't be crazy"

Seb: "we can always do it in the car better yet in the shower she won't hear a thing"

Me: "control yourself" I gave him a soft peck I left him standing there went back to the kitchen Carmel was almost done

Carmel: "you and Sebastian are still good"

Me: "yes we good"

Carmel: "hope you guys are being careful with everything"

Me: "we are"

Carmel: "where is he"

Me: "in his room" we waited for Ethan to come back from work with Logan then had dinner after dinner Sebastian and I went to his room watched tv until we fell asleep. The following day we were alone we spent the whole day bapsing. The following day Saturday Sebastian took me to the salon he waited for me while I got my hair done then we went to his home got bags he took me home. Sunday I spent the day with Melo late I got ready for dinner at Sebastian's he picked me up his whole family was there from the uncles to the aunts the cousins and the grandparents everyone was nice the dinner was amazing Carmel cried when Ethan gave her, her gift she couldn't stop thanking him along with her sons. After dinner Sebastian took me home, it was a few days before my birthday I was torn as to what to do I didn't want a party Nelo wanted me to spend it with him and Melo Kate let it slip that Sebastian was planning something for me. I knew that sooner or later I had to let one of them go but I didn't want to, they both amazing but with Nelo comes a lot of drama while with Sebastian everything is smooth. It's better to be with someone who loves you than being with someone you love but doesn't treat you well

## **part 92 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up in the middle of the night I was pressed I went to the bathroom to pee when I was done went back to bed Sebastian was up I got in bed and gave him my back

Seb: "baby"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "I'm sorry ok"

Me: "ok I'm also sorry I guess it not fair of me to just act like that"

Seb: "please turn let me see your eyes" I turned but kept my eyes closed he chuckled  
"hun"

Me: "mmh"

Seb: "open your eyes" I opened them "hi"

Me: "hi"

Seb: "I'm sorry hun"

Me: "I'm such an ass"

Seb: "is that so"

Me: "yeah I have the most amazing bf ever but here I am messing it up" he smirked

Seb: "go on how are you messing it up"

Me: "just being selfish and moody" he raised his eyebrow "and withholding sex" he  
laughed out loud

Seb: "why are you withholding it anyway"

Me: "I don't know baby I guess I'm just really no in the mood"

Seb: "you sure it not me"

Me: "yeah I'm sure baby you hot n sexy have you seen yourself"

Seb: "I don't know baby"

Me: "you sex on sticks" he chuckled and got on top of me I opened my legs he got in  
them

Seb: "I love you ok and I get that you don't want me to make love to you it's ok I'm cool  
im a little sexually furstratated but I'm cool" I laughed

Me: "sexually frustrated?"

Seb: "totally" he bite bottom lip "it been awhile but I'll survive"

Me: "you will survive"

Seb: "I'm a survivor im gona make it I will survive" he sang and I let out a loud laugh he  
quickly shut me up with his lips he kissed me hard our tongues dancing together before



he pulled back going on my neck sucking on it I let out a huge moan when he bite it I could feel myself getting wetter n wetter with every passing moment he lifted my pj top started sucking on my breast while playing with the other one I couldnt stop moaning he pulled back and rolled off me I just laid there trying to figure out what's going on Seb; "let's sleep hun"

Me: "Sebastian" he turned me to face him so our faces are leveled

Seb: "you not in the mood baby"

Me: "really now"

Seb: "yeah"

Me: "but honey" my punani was in need of some D

Seb: "it late let's sleep" he pulled closer and we slept.

.  
Woke up the following day Sebastian was still sleeping I went to the bathroom washed my face and rinsed my mouth than went to the kitchen to get started on breakfast I was busying looking for beacon in the freezer when I heard someone whistling I turned quickly to see who it is and it was Ryan

Me: "oh it you"

Ryan: "who you thought it is"

Me: "Sebastian"

Ryan: "nope just me"

Me: "cool"

Ryan: "nice ass by the way"

Me: "uhm ok thanks I guess" I moved the pan from the stove went up to our room got dressed in sweatpants over my pj shorts when I got back in the kitchen Ryan was sitting on the high chair drinking coffee he chuckled when he saw me

Ryan: "you didn't have to change"

Me: "I wanted to" I carried on making breakfast I could feel his eyes on me with every move I took it was starting to make me feel uncomfortable I went to wake up Sebastian

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "come sit with me while I make breakfast baby please"

Seb: "why"

Me: "just miss having you near me" he groaned before getting up we went to the kitchen I gave him a cup of coffee than finished up with breakfast while he talked to Ryan, when I was done Ryan went to wake up everyone we had breakfast. After breakfast they cleaned we were spending the day at the house the boys went to get meat n alcohol Zee invited Thulani my cousin he was in jhb visiting his mom in midrand they've been dating since Melo's party Zee was happy but I warned her about Thulani my cousin is a player can never stick to one girl and it doesn't hurt that the girls love him. I was in my room wearing my peach n white bikini with lose bum shorts the boys had gone out the girls were around the house doing they own thing I was on the phone with Nelo he kept on complaining about how busy n hard work is he was beyond annoyed with the workers he was managing it was either they were complaining about not being able to do what they supposed to do he ended up doing the work or they were just too slow, so here I was trying to calm him down while he was explaining what they doing after emailing him a video mom had emailed me of Melo singing something that didn't make sense on her karaoke machine he was in tears with laughter all troubles forgotten for few minutes. After talking to Nelo I went out the room looking for the girls they were swimming in the pool Thulani and Zee were busy making out in a corner I took my bum short off and joined kate n Courtney in the water while swimming we heard the boys as they were coming out to the pool

Seb: "honey" I swam to him he held out a towel for me I got out the pool he wrapped it around me

Me: "thank you but why am I getting out"

Seb: "we need to talk"

Me: "oh ok" I took my shirt from the floor wore it then we went up to our room

Seb: "baby did something happen between you and Ryna"

Me: "what? No ofcos not what did he say"

Seb: "are you sure"

Me: "what did he say"

Seb: "he just made some stupid comment"

Me: "what comment"

Seb: "never mind baby"

Me: "I do mind"

Seb: "we were talking about our girls and he was like if he had you he wouldn't let go"

Me: "the fuck"

Seb: "so you sure nothing happened between you two"

Me: "yes ... No ... I mean he just said I got a nice ass"

Seb: "that fucker where did he see your ass" I told him what happened in the morning  
"we leaving"

Me: "excuse me"

Seb: "tonight we leaving"

Me: "but it only Wednesday we supposed to leave Saturday"

Seb: "I know but dad needs me at home"

Me: "needs you for what"

Seb: "we working on something for mom it their anniversary soon and he needs me to help out since him n logan are busy at work"

Me: "what about the boys"

Seb: "they said they gona fly only Trey is leaving with us"

Me: "oryt than" we kissed

Seb: "do me a favor"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "plz change your shorts"

Me: "no ways"

Seb: "please it will give me piece of mind"

Me: "but baby we swimming why must I wear jeans just coz Ryan is being a perve"

Seb: "don't change than if you feel that way" we left the girls and I prepared salads and rolls while the boys did the meat outside it was a cool Sebastian and I were not drinking

everyone else was drinking while we were busy Thulani came in

Thulani: "cuz I hear you and Sebastian are going home"

Me: "yeah"

Thulani: "give us a lift I left my car at home"

Me: "whose us and a lift where"

Thulani: "lift back to durban Zee and I" I looked at zee

Me; "didn't know you were leaving Zee"

Zee: "I also didn't know but I guess we leaving" I just shook my head

Me: "oryt im sure Sebastian is cool"

Thulani: "ok I'll go drop of mom's car get a cab back with my bag"

Me: "eat first"

Thulani: "cool" he went back to the others we finished before the boys finished so I took my shorts off went back to swimming Sebastian joined me we swam towards a corner

Seb: "I feel like killing him but I don't have it in me to be violent"

Me: "what happened"

Seb: "he hasn't stopped staring at you"

Me; "his just a perve baby don't mind him" we kissed hard and roughly his lips moved to my jaw line down to my neck I dropped my head he started teasing my clit over my bikini I moaned he moved from me immediately after me moaning

Me: "you such a tease hun!" He laughed and swam away "fuckn teaser!" I screamed after him he swam to me fast picked my up and threw me on the water my whole body went in I came back up gasping for air

Me: "Sebastian my hair!" He splashed me with water

Seb: "I'll take you to the salon tomorrow baby"

Me: "you idiot"

Seb: "come on it ruined already lets swim" I got on his back we swam he would go under the water with me

Seb: "I love you" I got of his back

Me: "I'm in love with you" he gave me the most gorgeous smile ever

Seb; “so am I my love” he picked me up again and threw me over the water

Me: “baby!!”

Ryan: “we about to eat love birds”

Seb: “let’s get out baby” we swam towards the other Ryan held out the towel that Sebastian had used to dry me Sebastian took it from him with force

Seb: “baby” I went to him he dried me up I wore my shorts and wrapped the towel around me the water dripping from Sebastian’s hair falling to his chest made him look so sexy I found my hand going up n down his stomach while the other played with his hair

Me: “you look so sexy honey” he smirked

Seb: “do I”

Me: “totally”

Seb: “Still not in the mood” I brought his face to mine kissing him hard while I fist my hand in his hair grabbing it hard his D got hard instantly

Me: “does that answer your question” he smiled shaking his head before me picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he hurried us to our bedroom he threw me on the bed went to lock the door got condoms from his bag threw it on the bed than came back to me we kissed again as they say the rest is history after bapsing we took a shower got out we both wore jeans and tank tops with flops went back outside everyone was done eating we ate Thulani was also back from his mother’s place later on Sebastian was loading our bags in the car while i was wearing my uggs we left I sat in the front with Sebastian zee and i slept most of the way when we got to montrose Thulani and zee took the front seats I slept on Sebastian’s lap in the back seat got up when we got to Morning side at Thulani’s home Thulani and zee got off we went to Sebastian’s home Trey was gona go in the morning I was staying for the rest of the week we slept as soon as our heads hit the pillow.

Following day Carmel woke us up for breakfast after breakfast Trey took a cab home Sebastian and I went back to sleeping we woke later took a bath had lunch Sebastian left he needed to go to his father’s architectural firm I stayed with Carmel and Stacy we

baked and talked later on she asked me to help her prepare dinner Sebastian's favorite dish when Sebastian came back we were cooking

Seb: "smells amazing mom" he kissed her cheek before coming to give me a wet one on my lips

Carmel: "Lelo is cooking for you"

Seb: "really" he looked at me devilishly

Me: "I'm just helping out"

Seb: "come here" he took my hand and led me to his room

Me: "what's this" there were papers all over his bed

Seb: "the project we working on with dad n logan for mom, it's a restaurant in la lucia she's been wanting to open one but with her boutique and kfc she's been putting it on hold so dad thought it a good idea to get it built for her"

Me: "that's nice im sure she will love it"

Seb: "you gona be here for their dinner on Sunday right"

Me: "if you want me here"

Seb: "I do"

Me: "than I'll be here"

Seb: "great you will meet the rest of the family"

Me: "cool" he looked at me with that I wana eat you now look

Seb: "come closer" I went to him he kissed me slowly grabbing my ass I pushed him back

Seb: "not in the mood" I laughed

Me: "we in your parents house your mom is just downstairs in the kitchen"

Seb: "yeah so"

Me: "Sebastian no"

Seb: "let's go to the hotel we'll come back in the morning" I laughed

Me: "don't be crazy"

Seb: "we can always do it in the car better yet in the shower she won't hear a thing"

Me: "control yourself" I gave him a soft peck I left him standing there went back to the

kitchen Carmel was almost done

Carmel: "you and Sebastian are still good"

Me: "yes we good"

Carmel: "hope you guys are being careful with everything"

Me: "we are"

Carmel: "where is he"

Me: "in his room" we waited for Ethan to come back from work with Logan then had dinner after dinner Sebastian and I went to his room watched tv until we fell asleep. The following day we were alone we spent the whole day bapsing. The following day Saturday Sebastian took me to the salon he waited for me while I got my hair done then we went to his home got bags he took me home. Sunday I spent the day with Melo late I got ready for dinner at Sebastian's he picked me up his whole family was there from the uncles to the aunts the cousins and the grandparents everyone was nice the dinner was amazing Carmel cried when Ethan gave her, her gift she couldn't stop thanking him along with her sons. After dinner Sebastian took me home, it was a few days before my birthday I was torn as to what to do I didn't want a party Nelo wanted me to spend it with him and Melo Kate let it slip that Sebastian was planning something for me. I knew that sooner or later I had to let one of them go but I didn't want to, they both amazing but with Nelo comes a lot of drama while with Sebastian everything is smooth. It's better to be with someone who loves you than being with someone you love but doesn't treat you well

### **part 93 I am scared of lonely**

It was the 13th of December was just sitting at home with my family Philisiwe and Sthe were visiting ofcos Siyabulela was back from varsity bigbro was going to graduate the following year mom n dad were so proud, my results were also out and I was going to be in matric class of 2011. Melo was spending sometime with Nelo's family I was chatting with Sebastian I asked him to come see me told him we needed to talk he said he will call when he's outside the gate I carried on chatting for awhile before going to my room

rinsed my mouth put on a hoody over my tshirt wore my uggs he called saying his  
outside I went to the gate he came out the car when he saw me approaching we hugged  
and kissed briefly

Seb: "what's wrong hun"

Me: "nothing" I didn't even know where to start

Seb: "talk to me" he held my chin making me look at him

Me: "we friends right"

Seb: "right"

Me: "we were friends before we started dating" he chuckled

Seb: "yeah baby what's going on"

Me: "I love you Sebastian" he brought his face closer to mine and gave me a soft peck  
on my lips

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "I don't wana hurt you Sebastian" I looked away

Seb: "what's going on lelo"

Me: "I ... I ca..nt Sebastian" my voice was braking I was trying to hold my tears

Seb: "look at me" I shook my head "please look at me" I looked at him "what's going  
on" the fear in his eyes became I undoing I started crying he held me until my sobs  
stopped

Seb: "now talk to me"

Me: "I'm sorry Sebastian but I can't anymore I ju..." He cut me off

Seb: "you dumping me"

Me: "no I just need a break I need space"

Seb: "that's bull and you know it I don't smother you im not on your face i don't nag you  
so this space you talking about aint happening so come out with it tell me the truth" I  
looked away "no! You will look at me Lelo and be honest you owe me that much"

Me: "please don't make me say it"

Seb: "no go on say it tell me"

Me: "Sebastian" tears started falling again



Seb: "are you dumping me yes or no"

Me: "yes" he gasped

Seb: "why"

Me: "I just can't anymore"

Seb: "you fixed things with Sbonelo" he ran his hands through his hair "I'm so stupid"

Me: "no you not"

Seb: "yes I am God I'm a bloody idiot I should have seen it coming since melo's party I knew but I was just in denial"

Me: "I'm sorry but I'm not back together with sbonelo"

Seb: "did you even love me or you were just using me"

Me: "Sebastian we've been together since February ofcos I love you"

Seb: "you just love him more"

Me: "no I dont I was with you this whole time not him"

Seb: "arg don't patronize me" I tried hold his face but he pushed my hands away

Me: "I love you" I left him standing there with his head burried on his car when I was punching in the code on the gate he called my name I turned to look at him

Seb: "come here" I went to him he brought me closer to him and we hugged for the longest time he was in tears I could feel his chest raising and falling when he was done crying he pulled back his eyes were red n puffy his whole face was turning pinkish

Seb: "you say you love me Lelo but you leaving me if you love me don't leave me"

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "no you promised to not let him come between us you promised me Lelo"

Me: "his not coming between us im not going back to him"

Seb: "than why are you leaving me"

Me: "just need to focus me and my daughter"

Seb: "a daughter you didn't even give me a chance to meet coz you knew we weren't going to last right"

Me: "that's not true"

Seb: "than tell me what's the truth"

Me: "I love that's the truth"

Seb: "stay with me"

Me: "I'm not in love with you anymore" he started crying again

Seb: "I see" he couldn't even hide his hurt

Me: "please don't" I wiped his tears ignoring my own he brought his face to mine and kissed me at first I didn't kiss him back when he didn't stop kissing me I kissed him back he picked me up and sat me down on the car boot I wrapped my legs around him we kissed hard his breaths came in hot rush his hands went under my hoody n tshirt the feel of his hands on my skin sent electric shots all over me I fisted my hands on his head we broke the kiss when car lights shined on us I pushed him back quickly and jumped off the car Mike stopped right next to us the passenger window rolled down

Mom: "kids"

Me: "mom" Sebastian looked down

Mom: "Sebastian"

Seb: "yes ma'am"

Mom: "how are you" He looked at me before replying

Seb: "I'm good and you"

Mom: "I'm ok, we brought food come in for dinner"

Seb: "I'd like to ma'am but I'm in a rush I promised mom I'll be home for dinner"

Mom: "come on im sure Carmel won't mind"

Me: "mom" I gave her that don't push it look she looked at the both of us

Mom: "ok than bye"

Seb: "bye" they drove in "I should go"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "still coming on the 16th"

Me: "if you want me to"

Seb: "we still friends Lelo we can't just stop being friends it gona take long for me to get used to this but I'm not bitter we were friends before so it is what it is I can't make you be in love with me so yeah come to the opening I'll pick you up as planned"

Me: "ok" he kissed my forehead

Seb: "go in than I'll go" I walked to the gate got in he drove off in a speed as soon as the gate closed. I walked up the driveway I sighed before getting in I had the biggest smile when I got in I laughed the most during dinner I made conversations and joked as we cleaned up the dinning room and the kitchen but as soon as I locked the door in my bedroom I slide down using the door for support and let it out I brought my knees up buried my head on them and cried silently sobbing I hated the love I have for sbonelo he had hurt me time over time yet I was letting the one and only guy who had loved me without ever hurting me besides Tyson both they love were pure with no drama yet I left them for heartache n tears I wanted to hurt myself I derserved the physical pain for hurting Sebastian but even that would have been selfish of me I prefered physical pain over emotional pain I used physical pain as an escape root but I couldn't cut myself I wanted to cut myself so bad but I just couldnt I didn't wana run away from the emotional pain I was feeling I could hear my phone ringing but I didn't wana talk to anyone.

Woke up in the middle of the night I was freezing my widow was open and I was sleeping on tiles. I stood up went to close the widow I took my phone I had missed calls from Shane and Nelo I threw it on the bed changed to my pjs got in bed and slept. When I woke up in the morning my head was pounding I went to knock in mom's room but nobody responded so I just went in straight to the medical cabinet in the bathroom took 3 still pain pills than went back to sleeping. Woke up again coz my phone was ringing it was Nelo

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "nana what's wrong"

Me: "nothing why"

Nelo: "you didn't answer when I called last night and you didn't get back to me in the morning"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "wait were you still sleeping"

Me: "yes"

Nelo: "hha nana it almost 14:00 mos"

Me: "I'm tired sbonelo"

Nelo: "did you have breakfast"

Me: "no"

Nelo; "what's wrong nana talk to daddy are you sick"

Me: "no im just tired"

Nelo: "maybe you pregnant"

Me: "mxm" I dropped the call he called again but I switched my phone off just as I was about to doze off again there was a knock on my door I went to open

Phili: "shit cuz you look bad what's wrong"

Me: "nothing just a headache what do you want"

Phili: "Nelo called on the house phone he wants to talk to you"

Me: "tell him I'm sleeping"

Phili: "are you guys fighting"

Me: "no im just tired"

Phili: "are you sure"

Me: "yes now pl excuse me"

Phili: "I'll make you food n bring it up"

Me: "I'm not hungry"

Phili: "sorry Nelo's order he said I should make sure you eat if you don't wana take his call"

Me: "I'm fine"

Phili: "just a snack at least" I was getting irritated now

Me: "why don't you and that stupid Nelo leave me alone ok"

Phili: "geese don't bite my head off it cool bye" I closed the door "he said you were going to do this"

Me: "fuck off Philisiwe" she laughed

Phili: "you so predictable cuz"

Me: "leave my predictable ass alone than"

Phili: "I'll be back with food"

Me: "whatever"

Phili: "sho" I went back to bed and switched my phone on sent Nelo a text

\*im ok\*

\*oryt nana but please eat and bath than you can go back to sleeping I'll call you after work\*

\*oryt\*

\*i love you nana\*

\*love you to taka Melo\*

I unlocked the door and went to bath when I came back from bathing there was food on my desk with a note on top of the sandwich \*nelo says to tell you that you loves you even when you stubborn\* I just smiled shaking my head, I got dressed opened the window made my bed took my laptop started a movie than ate after eating I took my plate n glass to the kitchen rinsed it took some snack went to my room siyabulela stopped me as I was passing the lounge

Siya: "we driving today?" Siyabulela was giving me driving lesson I already had my learners got it before exams

Me: "yeah at 17:00"

Siya: "cool, you and Sebastian are good"

Me: "yeah we cool"

Siya: "mmh" I went up to my room with my snacks and I started chatting to my friends they were talking about the opening

Trey: "are we supposed to dress up"

Zee: "obviously it not an opening at McD's"

Me: "lol I'm sure Trey was thinking shorts n flops"

Shane: "woah Lelo thought you lost your phone"

Kate: "why"

Me: "yeah why"

Shane: "you didn't answer my calls last night"

Me: "had an early night sorry"

Court: "let's meet up tomorrow get some shopping done we can help Trey out"

Zee: "lol yeah should"

Kate: "so shopping tomorrow is everyone cool with it"

Seb: "count me out"

Me: "why Sebastian"

Seb: "I'm busy"

Shane: "I knew this was going to happen"

Seb: "shut up shane"

Kate: "what's going on"

Shane: "they broke up" Sebastian and my text came in the same time

Us: "shut up shane"

Zee: "my God! What happened thought things were good between your'll"

Me: "we fine!"

Shane: "maybe you fine Sebastian isn't"

Seb: "ok I'm done!" He logged out immediately

Me: "you such an ass Shane"

Shane: "that's all your doing"

Kate: "stay out of it shane"

Court: "you shouldn't have done that shane"

Trey: "yeah that's not cool shane"

Shane: "it her fault she knows how sensitive Sebastian is yet she was stringing him along"

Me: "fuck you Shane bra this has nothing to do with you"

Court: "so shopping tomorrow just the girls"

kate: "I'm in"

Zee: "yep just the girls"

Me: "I'm in"

Court: "Gateway at 13:00"

Me: "cool, later" I logged out focused on my movie until Nelo called

Me: "baby" he chuckled

Nelo: "you ok now nana"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "good im on my way back to the house"

Me: "how was work"

Nelo: "tiring and the thought of packing up that house kills me"

Me: "shame, how you gona manage with the cars"

Nelo: "Kwandile will fly in to help"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "did I tell you my dad n uncle went to pay lobola for Zama and they having a traditional wedding on the 27th"

Me: "kwandile is getting married"

Nelo: "yep bigbro is getting his life on track"

Me: "oh wow that's nice"

Nelo: "they won't last though even mom thinks his wasting money"

Me: "why would you say that"

Nelo: "he doesn't love her I think his just scared of getting old alone and you know how we were raised you can't have kids from different people it a disgrace so his stuck with her"

Me: "shame man I guess you also stuck with me" he laughed

Nelo: "and I love being stuck with you"

Me: "really Mr Ngcobo"

Nelo: "totally Ms Tolo" I giggled "Plz come help me pack up we'll drive down together"

Me: "I doubt mom will be cool with that"

Nelo: "she still hates me"

Me: "nah I think she's just confused as to what's happening between us"

Nelo: "mmh"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "love you more, when are you fetching Melo"

Me: "I don't know soon though"

Nelo: "mom n Sethu love having her around"

Me: "neh"

Nelo: "I miss you"

Me: "I know the feeling" Siya came in my room

Siya: "let's go"

Me: "don't you knock" he laughed

Siya: "ain't got time for that"

Nelo: "where you going"

Me: "driving lessons gotta go"

Nelo: "sho bye" he dropped the call. Siyabulela and I went driving for almost two hours by the time we got back at home Philisiwe was setting up the table aunt dolly had finished cooking we had dinner after dinner I went to room watched movies I missed my daughter hearing her screams on the phone didn't make it better it just made me miss her more.

.

Woke up the following day went downstairs after washing my face and rinsing my mouth everyone was still asleep I decided to start on breakfast Thobeka came in as I was busy

Thobeka: "you up early"

Me: "not really"

Thobeka: "slept well"

Me: "I guess and you"

Thobeka: "are you ok"

Me: "yeah I'm good sorry"

Thobeka: "let me help you out"

Me: "thank you" she helped me out



Thobeka: "do you mind me asking"

Me: "asking what"

Thobeka: "about you and sbonelo" I stopped and looked at her for a second

Me: "what do you wana know"

Thobeka: "are you guys together"

Me: "yes"

Thobeka: "mmh ok"

Me: "why"

Thobeka: "no nothing"

Me: "ok" I put everything in it separate dishes then dished up for myself went to my room something about Thobeka just didn't make me comfortable. while having my breakfast Carmel called me I debated with myself if I should answer or not I didn't answer but she called again and I answered

Me: "Carmel hi"

Carmel: "Lelo hun how are you"

Me: "I'm well and you"

Carmel: "I'm good just so excited about tomorrow"

Me: "it gona be a beautiful night"

Carmel: "I don't know if Sebastian mentioned this to you but we having a private tasting tonight I'd like you there"

Me: "did you talk to Sebastian about me being there tonight"

Carmel: "no I didn't is everything ok between you two" I didnt say anything "Lelo"

Me: "maybe you should talk to him first"

Carmel: "are you two fighting"

Me: "I'd love to come Carmel but please talk to him first" she sighed

Carmel: "I will I hope you two work out your differences Lelo I like seeing my son happy"

Me: "as any mother would"

Carmel: "true hopefully I'll see you later bye"

Me: "bye" I flopped on the bed this while shit of introducing your gf or bf at home is

fucked up like seriously after calming myself down I continued eating after eating I went to leave my plate n cup in the kitchen I heard my phone ringing as I was coming up stairs I ran to my room and answered

Me: "hello"

Seb: "hey you good"

Me: "yeah and you"

Seb: "yeah I'm good look im sorry about shane he doesn't know when to shut up"

Me: "it cool I know him"

Seb: "so do you want to come tonight"

Me: "do you want me there"

Seb: "yeah please come"

Me: "I'd love to come"

Seb: "I'll pick you up at 19:00"

Me: "ok will see you than"

Seb: "oh and thank you for not telling mom about our break up I don't need her fussing over me right now"

Me: "it not my place to tell"

Seb: "see you later" I hung up went to bath got out lotioned wore shorts n tank top with all stars did my make up than went to chill with my cousins

Sthe: "where you off too"

Me: "gateway"

Sthe: "can I come"

Me: "if you want to"

Sthe: "you don't ever have time for us it always these white friends of yours when last did you even see Asa n Ndumo"

Me: "don't start with your shit Sthe"

Sthe: "no seriously"

Me: "you want to come and go shopping with me and my so called white friends than come but don't start with your shit it to early"

Sthe: "I know where I'm not wanted"

Phili: "you can be such a bitch sometimes Sthe"

Sthe: "mxm I'll go bath im going to gateway with you and your white friends" we laughed at her as she went upstairs

Phili: "Sthe and drama"

Me: "she's always like this"

Phili: "yeah can I also come"

Me: "yeah but don't hit on my friends" she laughed

Phili: "I'm not into white girls"

Me: "good" I took my phone told my friends my cousins were joining us they were cool with it. We left at 12:30 Philisiwe took Siya's car since he wasn't going anywhere we got to gateway the girls were there already we shopped and had late lunch which turned into drinks I had to ask kyle to come pick me up coz they weren't ready to leave and I still had to get ready by the time I got home it was 18:30 I took a quick shower in Siyabulela's room by the time I got out the shower Sebastian was already waiting for me in the lounge I got dressed in high waist jeans a formal medium sleeve shirt tucked in and heels fixed my yanky into a messy bun did my make up went downstairs.

Me: "sorry I kept you waiting"

Seb: "it cool Siya and kyle kept me entertained"

Me: "we can go" he stood up took my hand before letting it go

Seb: "sorry force of habit"

Me: "it cool" he opened my door and I got in he went to his side and drove off

Seb: "I told you the time what happened"

Me: "came back late from gateway sorry"

Seb: "we late everyone is already"

Me: "ok" He was speeding "you don't have to drive so fast Sebastian" I held my seatbelt tighter he didn't slow down "Sebastian slow down or drop me off I'll go back home"

Seb: "sorry" he slowed down a little we reached a robot we were supposed to stop before turning left but he didn't stop a car was coming straight to us I found myself in

tears as he took left in a speed

Me: "what the hell is wrong with you"

Seb: "I'm sorry but calm down I know how to drive" I sniffed trying to wipe away my tears

Me: "I wana go home"

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "please Sebastian" he pulled over he took my hand and I looked at him he wiped my tears

Seb: "I'm sorry baby ok" I nodded "I'll drive slow I promise"

Me: "ok" he kissed my forehead and started driving again he took my hand put it on his lap

Seb: "I always liked it when you did this"

Me: "did what"

Seb: "leave your hand on my thigh while I drive"

Me: "oh"

Seb: "it a simple gesture but I loved it I still love it" I giggled

Me: "I'm glad"

Seb: "press play on the stereo" I did and Justin beiber- baby started playing I laughed out loud

Seb: "that's a really nice song"

Me: "you so white"

Seb: "you wound me baby"

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "remember the first time I took you home"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "I played you this song and you laughed at me saying I'm so white"

Me: "don't do that Sebastian don't do this to me or to yourself"

Seb: "sorry" we got to his mother's restaurant it was absolutely beautiful

Me: "it beautiful" he took my hand

Seb: "let's get in" as soon as we got in Stacy came running to us she hugged my legs

Stacy: "pick me up pick me up yeyo"

Seb: "go Stacy" I laughed and picked her up we walked to the table his whole family was there already eating

Carmel: "Lelo good to see you" she stood up and kissed my cheek

Me: "it good to see you too sorry we late"

Carmel: "it ok hun sit down" I sat down next to Sebastian Stacy got off my lap went to her grandma the dinner was amazing after everyone was done eating we just mingled around I was talking to Jenny and Amy Sebastian's cousins when Carmel came to us

Carmel: "Lelo hun let's talk"

Me: "oh ok" we walked away from the others

Carmel: "what's going on between you and Sebastian"

Me: "I'd rather not talk about it" she sighed

Carmel: "are you guys fighting"

Me: "Carmel"

Carmel: "just tell me you don't have to tell me why"

Me: "we just going through a rough patch please talk to him about it coz it doesn't make me comfortable"

Carmel: "ok I get it im sorry"

Me: "it ok I understand"

Carmel: "ok"

Me: "let me find Sebastian" I went to Sebastian

Seb: "still good?"

Me: "yeah please take me home it late"

Seb: "ok lets go say bye to my parents" we went to them "I'm taking Lelo home"

Carmel: "oh thought you were sleeping over"

Me: "I didn't tell my parents"

Carmel: "nonsense I'll call Nosihle"

Me: "I didn't even bring my clothes"

Carmel: “mmh ok goodnight than we’ll see you tomorrow” we hugged and left.

Sebastian dropped me off at home I slept as soon as I got in my pjs.

Woke up the following day I took a bath Siyabulela and I went to fetch Melo my baby didn’t even stay a week there but she looked older we didn’t stay long soon we were back at home I spent the rest of the day with my daughter playing in her nursery Sthe Philisiwe Siya and kyle went out. I started getting ready an hour before the time Sebastian said he was going to pick me up I got out of the bathtub lotioned got in my underwear did my make up than tied my hair into a lose bun got dressed in a tight fitting black dress just below my knee with a slit all the way up to my mid thigh with short sleeves wore caramel gladiator heels when I was done I laid on my bed waiting for Sebastian I didn’t wait long before mom shouted for me to come downstairs I took my bag and left Sebastian smiled as I got down the stairs

Seb: “you look beautiful as always” he took my hand and kissed my cheek

Me: “thank you”

Seb: “it was good seeing you again ma’am”

Mom: “have fun” we left. The opening was fun Carmel was happy so was Ethan, I was glad that my brake up with Sebastian didn’t put our friendship in an awkward situation things were good between all of us after shane apologized to both Sebastian and I.

## **part 94 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up the following day after the 16th it was just me mike mom n Melo at breakfast the others didn’t come back the previous night we had just finished breakfast I took melo gave her a bath after bathing her I took a bath and we laid on the bed watching a movie on my laptop she kept on blabbering her own ish we spent the whole day in my room only got out to get something to eat it was late we had just finished dinner I gave her a bath we were skyping with Nelo she kept on touching and licking the screen

Me: “what’s up with your daughter” he chuckled

Nelo: “oh she’s mine alone now nana”

Me: "when she starts acting like this yeah"

Nelo: "be like that all the time nana"

Me: "always"

Nelo: "have you decided what you wana do for your birthday nana"

Me: "will you be back"

Nelo: "it during the week and I have work"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "sorry"

Me: "just that it gona be my first birthday that we won't be together since we started dating"

Nelo: "sorry nana"

Me: "it ok I understand"

Nelo: "you and Melo can come here"

Me: "you gona be at work the whole day Nelo"

Nelo: "I'll come back early"

Me: "it won't be the same"

Nelo: "I'm trying here nana please you know I can't just leave work and come that side for one day"

Me: "I said I understand Nelo" he sighed

Nelo: "please think about coming here ok"

Me: "I will"

Nelo: "we'll drive down together"

Me: "ok" I looked down I don't know why but I just started feeling all sad I could feel my tears about to come down

Nelo: "nana don't do this"

Me: "just that I miss you sbonelo I haven't seen you since melo's party I just thought you would come home" tears were now falling freely

Nelo: "it ok please don't cry I'll fly in after work than leave in the morning but please stop crying nana" I nodded wiping my tears away "I love you nana"

Melo: "nana" I looked at her she was smiling at me I started giggling

Nelo: "oh wow" she clapped her hands while moving her head from side to side I picked her kissed her than started tickling her

Me: "come on say it again bhabha" she couldn't stop laughing

Nelo: "you killing my daughter nana"

Me: "you heard ryt"

Nelo: "yeah" he looked a little sad

Me: "what's wrong"

Nelo: "when do you think she's going to be able to say daddy" I laughed

Me: "Sbonelo are you jealous"

Nelo: "phss what? Me jealous of you? Nah I'm cool"

Me: "if you say so daddy"

Nelo: "I love you guy"

Me: "we love you too right Melo we love daddy" she just touched the screen

Melo: "nana" we laughed

Me: "I'll talk to mom about coming that side"

Nelo: "really nana"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "great"

Me: "goodnight"

Nelo: "goodnight girls"

Me: "let's kiss daddy" we kissed the screen and logged out. I switched the laptop and lights off we slept.

.

The following day it was the 18 Melo got up early as usual I took her with me to the kitchen made her food than fed her

Dolly: "hey baby"

Me: "hey mah" I kissed her cheek

Dolly: "slept well"



Me: "yeah and you"

Dolly: "I did too"

Me: "where's thobeka"

Thobeka: "I'm here do you need something" she was just getting in the kitchen

Me: "nope"

Thobeka: "ok"

Me: "mah did mom tell you when you guys are leaving"

Dolly: "yeah on the 23rd"

Me: "oryt"

Dolly: "what are you doing for your birthday"

Me: "going to Nelo"

Thobeka: "really"

Me: "yeah"

Thobeka: "Is he coming here or"

Me: "why you so interested"

Thobeka: "oh sorry" aunt dolly looked at me and I shrugged my shoulders carried on with feeding Melo Thobeka walked out the kitchen

Dolly: "what's wrong with you"

Me: "nothing"

Dolly: "don't be so rude to the poor child"

Me: "she needs to learn to mind her own business"

Dolly: "tjo" something about Thobeka brushed me the wrong way

Me: "I'll go bath Melo"

Dolly: "your parents are still asleep"

Me: "yeah"

Dolly: "I'll start on breakfast"

Me: "ok"

Dolly: "ask Thobeka to check on the twins"

Me: "will do, come bhabha" I took Melo Thobeka was in the lounge cleaning

Me: "aunt dolly says check on the twins"

Thobeka: "ok" I started walking up the stairs "Lelo wait" I turned to look at her "look im sorry ok I heard you and aunt dolly talking im sorry"

Me: "it cool" I used my inner voice to tell her to stay in her lane, I went melo's room got her things than went to my room we took a bath together my baby loves water though. We got out I dressed her up before getting dressed she fell asleep I went down for breakfast mom n Mike had breakfast in their room so it was just me n everyone else

Me: "I see your'll remembered home"

Phili: "it was epic!!"

Me: "I can tell"

Siya: "the girls were amazing" all 3 of them high fived

Kyle: "I think my dick if gona fall off" we all laughed

Me: "I'm soo telling Ashley"

Kyle: "you wouldn't dare or I'll have a little chat with Sebastian"

Me: "you don't know how to play"

Kyle: "ooh lil sis"

Siya: "you and Sebastian fighting"

Me: "rather not talk about it"

Phili: "you playing with fire cuz sbonelo will murder someone"

Siya: "I know you didn't go back to him" I didn't say anything he banged the table "damit Lelothando why you gotta be so stupid"

Kyle: "calm down Siyabulela"

Siya: "no bra you so stupid God! When he beats you up again don't call me crying"

Kyle: "he hits you lelo"

Me: "who am I supposed to call Siya"

Kyle: "why would you back to him"

Me: "coz I'm stupid clearly" I stood up left them in the dinning room

Siya: "you better come back here and sit down im not done talking to you"

Me: "you not my dad siyabulela"

Siya: "should I call him eh should I call dad and tell him how you went back to Nelo after he beat you up and I know it wasn't the first time"

Me: "what's wrong with you Siya I thought you loved me"

Siya: "it because I love you stupid shit"

Me: "than let me make my mistakes"

Siya: "no!"

Me; "whatever" I ran to my room and cried myself to sleep I mean it ain't like I wasn't there when everything that I went through with Nelo was happening I was there when he first slapped me after we had lost our first baby I was there when he pulled a disappearing act while I was heavily pregnant he was busy cheating I was still there when he beat me up for sleeping with Loyiso hell I was there when he hit me coz he thought I was having an affair with Kwandile but I don't my brother telling me his wrong for me.

Melo woke me up with a slap hha I felt like slapping her right back but when she started giggling I couldn't help but smile

Me: "your uncle and dad will give me a heart attach at 17 bhabha"

Melo: "nana"

Me: "yeah baby" I got off the wore my sleepers than took her with me to the lounge only aunt dolly was there

Me: "where's everyone"

Dolly: "they went out"

Me: "oh and they left me behind"

Dolly: "I guess" I gave her Melo

Me: "is mom in"

Dolly: "she's in the twins's nursery"

Me: "ok I need to talk her" I went to the nursery she had Cassie with her Kegs was sleeping

Me: "hey mom"

Mom: "hey Lelo wam what's up"

Me: "you know my birthday is coming up right?"

Mom: "yeah do you wana do something"

Me: "would love to spend it with Melo and Nelo" she laughed

Mom: "Melo and Nelo I can never get over that" I chuckled

Me: "yeah well that's your son's doing he named Melo"

Mom: "so Nelo is in dbn"

Me: "actually his not he wants us to go to him"

Mom: "he wants"

Me: "I want"

Mom: "Lelo what's going on between you and Nelo"

Me: "we melo's parents"

Mom: "just that? So Sebastian is comfortable with you spending so much time with Nelo especially in doors"

Me: "well... Well Sebastian and I broke up"

Mom: "what? Why? His good for you"

Me: "it wasn't working out mom"

Mom: "you went back to Nelo didn't you"

Me: "no I didnt"

Mom: "we don't lie to each other Lelo"

Me: "mom"

Mom: "I'm not gona tell you who to be with or who to not be with but Sebastian is a good kid comes from a good family his well groomed Nelo is just a hooligan thank him for Melo but his a hooligan who acts like the world rises n falls on his ass he loves you no doubt about it and he makes you happy"

Me: "don't hate him" she chuckled

Mom: "I don't hate him baby his melo's father which makes him family his not someone I would like you to be with but I don't hate him"

Me: "wish you could give him a chance" she laughed

Mom: "you will realize this when Melo starts dating"

Me: "oh God I can't even think about that Nelo will flip" we laughed

Mom: "give him a taste of his medicine hopefully she won't get someone like him"

Me: "as much as I love him I hope so too"

Mom: "see it not so nice when you think of your daughter dating someone like him"

Me: "I guess I get your point"

Mom: "we don't choose who we love baby I loved your father from the first day I met him I stayed with him through everything the cheating even when he landed me in hospital a couple of time because of his insecurities I still stayed I loved him up until the day he moved in with his gf our relationship was a roller coaster" she started tearing

Me: "mom"

Mom: "no it's ok hey I have Mike now and he's the best, I won't stand in your way Lelo just be careful with Nelo ok" I nodded "I'll book your flight go on" I kissed her cheek

Me: "I love you mommy"

Mom: "I love you too baby"

Me: "tomorrow afternoon"

Mom: "ok now go I'm trying to put her to sleep" I kissed Cassie and left. Called Nelo told him we were coming tomorrow he was excited.

## **part 95 I am scared of lonely**

I spent the rest of the day with my daughter in my room, when it was time for dinner Philisiwe came to call me I went to the dining area dished up my plate without talking to anyone and left them there went to eat with Melo when I was done I took my plate to the kitchen siyabulela came in as I was rinsing my plate

Siya: "Lelo ka mama" I didn't say anything "Lelo" I still didn't say anything "look I'm sorry ok" I nodded and left him standing there Melo and I slept after talking to her dad.

.

The following day I woke up first decided to start packing our flight was at 18:20 that gave Sbonelo more than enough time to drive to JHB and pick us up. After packing I took

a bath wore leggings n vests Melo was still asleep I had to wake her up it was way past her eating time she fell asleep with food in her mouth I opened her mouth took out the food went to put her back to bed. She slept through out the whole day I was really worried about her I even asked mom to check on her and she said there's nothing wrong with her. I had to wake her up around 16:00 I fed her I had to keep playing with her so she won't fall asleep Philisiwe was in the kitchen with me

Phili: "she looks drowsy"

Me: "neh"

Phili: "why don't you let her sleep"

Me: "I can't she needs to eat so I can bath her"

Phili: "you can do that later"

Me: "I can't we leaving soon" Siya walked in the kitchen

Siya: "where you goin" I didn't say anything "silent treatment really Lisa grow up"

Me: "don't call me that"

Siya: "it still your name, so since you can talk to me tell me where you going"

Me: "can I just fed my daughter in peace please"

Siya: "I said I was sorry Lelo"

Me: "I know I heard you"

Siya: "so where are you going"

Me: "to Nelo" he chuckled I turned to give me that don't fuck with me look since I had my back on him he put his hands up

Siya: "I'm not saying anything but his going to hurt you again"

Phili: "cut it out Siya"

Siya: "I'll be here when he messes up again that's all im saying"

Me: "I know but he won't mess up have a little faith" he walked to me and gave me a hug

Siya: "I hope so to coz id hate to fight him again" Philisiwe laughed

Phili: "you fought with Nelo"

Siya: "more like I hit him and he let me"

Phili: "I'm sure he let you coz I've seen that guy throw a punch he would have done some serious damage to your pretty face" siya touched his face

Siya: "tell me about it this face right here is a panty wetter I'd hate to see it damaged" we laughed when I turned to look at Melo she had fallen back to sleep I sighed

Siya: "what's wrong with her"

Me: "I really don't know but mom says it nothing"

Phili: "maybe you pregnant again and she can sense it"

Me: "don't be crazy"

Siya: "if you fall pregnant again you would need some serious psychiatric evaluation coz you can't be that stupid"

Me: "I'm not pregnant ok!"

Siya: "let's hope so" I took Melo up at least she had eaten more than half of her sweet potato mash, as soon as I put her in the bathtub she opened her eyes I gave her bath dressed her up in jeans and hoody with all stars I also changed into the same outfit mom took us to the airport the flight was quick and peaceful we got off Nelo was already waiting for us the smile on his face when he saw us just made everything worth it he gave his daughter a baby kiss before giving me a deep kiss filled with lust

Nelo: "oh nana I can't believe you are here" he kissed my forehead and gave us a hug

Me: "better believe it"

Nelo: "I'm so happy I love you nana"

Me: "as much as I love you too can we leave Melo is heavy" he chuckled

Nelo: "sorry" he took our bags we went to the car he buckled Melo in her car seat put our luggage in the car we drove off

Nelo: "how is she"

Me: "I don't know baby she still won't stay up for more than 5 minutes"

Nelo: "maybe we should take her to see a doctor"

Me: "mom said there's nothing wrong with her"

Nelo: "I know but I still think we should consult a doctor"

Me: "mom is a pediatrician Nelo but if that's what you want we'll go tomorrow when

you come back from work”

Nelo: “it will give me a peace of mind”

Me: “ok”

Nelo: “you hungry”

Me: “not really but I just wana shower and rest”

Nelo: “so what did you do on the 16th I know how you and your siblings like going out”

Me: “actually spent it with my friends Sebastian’s mom had an opening for her new restaurant”

Nelo: “would it be wrong of me if I asked you to have new friends”

Me: “no it wouldn’t but I know you know better than to ask me to change my friends”

Nelo: “oryt”

Me: “how was work”

Nelo: “just tiring nana but nothing I can’t handle”

Me: “wake me up when we get there” he chuckled

Nelo: “hha seriously nana you not even gona keep me company”

Me: “nope”

Nelo: “oh wow so much for being loved”

Me: “you know I got made love for you”

Nelo: “don’t sleep than”

Me: “ok” I tried staying up but eventually nature won and I dozed off he woke me up when he had parked at his place

Nelo: “so much for staying up” I shrugged my shoulders and he laughed I took Melo while he took our bags we went in

Nelo: “remember last time you were here we slept in different rooms” I laughed

Me: “yeah well things have changed now hope you gona be walking around half naked again coz this time I won’t feel guilty for staring at you and wanting you” he smirked

Nelo: “I’ve always been yours nana”

Me: “is that so”

Nelo: “ever since the first day I saw that afternoon there was never a time where I



wasn't yours"

Me: "good to know" he took Melo

Nelo: "I'll put her down in my room you can take a shower"

Me: "cool" I followed him to his room took my clothes off wrapped a towel around my body went to take a shower. He got in the bathroom opened the shower door

Me: "what's up?"

Nelo: "I'm going to get food anything specific"

Me: "just fried chicken with lots of fries and a cheese burger" he looked shocked

Nelo: "you sure"

Me: "yeah" he chuckled

Nelo: "ok I'll be back soon" he closed the door and walked I finished showering got out lotioned wore Nelo's tshirt. I sat down in the lounge watched tv he came back after awhile with takeaway from kfc I didn't even dish up I ate from the takeaways Nelo was just staring at me

Me: "what's wrong"

Nelo: "oh nothing"

Me: "cool"?

Nelo: "you must have been really hungry"

Me: "you have no idea"

Nelo: "mmh" he went to his bedroom came back with Melo she was up

Me: "I didnt hear her"

Nelo: "she wasn't crying"

Me: "oh let me feed her before she goes back to her"

Nelo: "eat I got her" Melo looked at me her eyes were bloody red and half closed

Me: "Sbonelo what's wrong with her"

Nelo: "ei I don't know nana but I'll take yourll to the doctor during lunch time tomorrow" I put my food down and took her

Me: "she's burning up Nelo"

Nelo: "I know let me call your mom" he went to the room and called mom, she wasn't

even crying that made me panic more

Nelo: "she says cover her with a cold towel I'll go see if I can't find panado at Xolani's house"

Me: "it gona make her sleep nelo I don't want her to sleep" he sat down and covered his face with his hands

Nelo: "what am I supposed to do nana"

Me: "get me the towel I'll undress her" he stood up I took off her clothes Nelo came back with a towel and I wrapped her in it I tried feeding her but she just threw up the whole mood just changed in the house we went from being happy that we were together to being sad n stressed mom kept calling she wanted us on the next plane to dbn. We went to sleep early if you can call it sleeping I kept waking up checking on her even though she was next to me. I think I fell asleep again coz Nelo woke me up in a panic

Me: "what?" He was getting dressed he threw sweatpants at me

Nelo: "she's not breathing nana!" I checked her and she really wasn't breathing she was ice cold I couldn't even move from the bed I think my brain sorta left my body for a minute I just froze and watched Nelo move around the room in slow motion until he started shaking me

Nelo: "snap out of it Lelo" I could hear him but he sounded far "fok off mani Lelo snap out of it" he pinched me and I flinched

Me: "she's dead sbonelo my daughter is dead"

Nelo: "she's not I can feel her pulse please get dressed" I jumped of the bed got dressed while Nelo was giving her cpr he picked her up threw the car keys at me I looked at him shocked

Me: "I ... I can't drive Nelo"

Nelo: "you gona have to nana coz I need to keep doing this at least 3 minutes apart" he was walking out the bedroom as he said this I ran after him

Me: "but ,."

Nelo: "not now Lelo" he got in the backseat I locked the door got in the drivers seat I

said a short prayer believe me fear will have you doing things you didn't think you were capable of I drove straight to the hospital Nelo kept on giving me directions he got in the emergency way he had called while we were in the car they rushed Melo in we stayed in the waiting room Nelo was pacing up n down I just felt tired

Me: "please sit down you making me dizzy"

Nelo: "sorry" he sat down

Me: "I don't feel so good" he kneeled in front of me

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "wate.." I didn't even finish saying water I threw up all over his tshirt "sorry" I threw up again he kept on brushing my hair until I was done "I'm so sorry Nelo"

Nelo: "it ok nana" he stood up took of his tshirt "I'll go ask someone to clean this up got sit on another chair" I nodded he walked out with his tshirt while he was out a cleaning lady came and cleaned up Nelo came back after awhile with bottled water I drank the water he sat next to me brushed my back

Nelo: "feeling better" I nodded

Me: "sorry I messed you up"

Nelo: "it ok I cleaned myself up in the bathroom and threw the tshirt in the bin"

Me: "don't you have a hoody or something in your car you can't be top less in the hospital"

Nelo: "I have nothing I took out my gym bag coz I needed to do my washing" I didn't say anything he started pacing up n down again "what's taking them so long"

Me: "sit down please"

Nelo: "I can't just sit down and not do anything nana it driving me crazy"

Me: "ok but you making me dizzy" he sighed and sat down

Nelo: "how you feeling"

Me: "sleepy"

Nelo: "come here" I went to him and he made me sit on him resting my head on his chest he wrapped his hands around me and I dozed right off. I jumped up when the door opened got off Nelo the doctor walked in

Me: "how is she"

Doc: "she ok" she brushed her hair looking at Nelo's abs I just rolled my eyes "uhm she's ok we still trying to figure out what's wrong with her we just waiting for test she's breathing on her own, honestly speaking she looks fine just tired but fine we brought down her fever"

Nelo: "can we see her"

Doc: "yeah" Nelo took my hand

Nelo: "come nana" he kissed my forehead and we followed the doctor to melo's room my poor baby looked so weak with an oxygen mark and a drip

Doc: "I'll give you some time"

Nelo: "thank you"

Doc: "I'm doctor letau by the way" she offered Nelo her hand he shook it

Nelo: "sbonelo Ngcobo and this is my wife lelothando Ngcobo"

Doc: "oh ok than I'll be back soon" the bitch couldn't even hide her sadness. We stayed at the hospital until early hours of morning the doc came in before her shift was ove just to check on Melo. Nelo called in at work coz it was clear he wasn't going in. Around 09:00 a new doctor came in the tests were back Melo was fine they couldn't figure out what's wrong with her but they were keeping her in for observation she was going to go home the following day if there were no changes we thanked him and he left

Me: "go freshen up baby you need to get dressed it cold" it was cold and raining

Nelo: "I'm not leaving you here"

Me: "we can't leave her alone go and I'll go when you back"

Nelo: "but nana"

Me: "please"

Nelo: "no lets go" I sighed and we left after Nelo gave a nurse that was helping with Melo his number. We got home took a quick shower got dressed in sweatpants and hoodies with all stars I packed a bag for Melo we left went pass wimpy for take aways. I ate in the car while Nelo drove I was starving Nelo looked at me and chuckled

Nelo: "you gona throw up again"

Me: "no I wont"

Nelo: "finish chewing before talking" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "can't believe you threw up all over me" I laughed

Me: "sorry baby but at least I made Dr letau's night"

Nelo: "what you talking"

Me: "don't act like you didn't notice she was looking at you like you a huge cheese burger from Murphy's" he laughed out loud banging the steering wheel

Nelo: "like what nana"

Me: "you know what I'm talking about" he laughed shaking his head

Nelo: "I didn't notice though" I rolled my eyes and he chuckled "I brought an extra tshirt and hoody just in case nana" he was still laughing

Me: "fuck off"

Nelo: "what you want me to go top less again" he teased

Me: "sbonelo!!" He laughed

Nelo: "ok sorry"

Me: "whatever"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "love you more" I kissed his cheek. We spent the day at the hospital Melo was awake, we left at night. Came back the following day it was my birthday Sebastian woke me up with a call he told me he has my gift waiting, mom also called everyone else called even Sebastian's parents with Stacy they sang to me I kept on getting bank notifications the whole morning, Melo got discharged Nelo went back to work after dropping us off at home Melo and I slept as soon as we got under the cover I woke a bit later coz Melo was crying at least she could cry now I gave her bottle we stayed in the lounge under a blanket Mpumalanga can be cold tjo we watched cartoons I think what I watch on tv changed when Melo started watching tv now I'm all about the cartoon we were focused on spy girls when Nelo called

Me: "daddy"

Nelo: "hey nana is she ok"

Me: "yeah we watching spy girls" he chuckled

Nelo: "good, should I get a baby sitter for tonight so I can take you out"

Me: "I'd rather stay indoors baby"

Nelo: "are you sure"

Me: "I'm not up for going out or even leaving her behind she just got back from the hospital"

Nelo: "cool kiss her for me"

Me: "will do"

Nelo: "love you see you later"

Me: "love you too" I dropped the phone got up made Melo some chicken nuggets my baby was eating well again when she was done eating I made my sandwich. Guess I fell asleep coz I woke up when I felt something cold on my cheek I opened my eyes to find Nelo kissing Melo

Me: "hey baby"

Nelo: "hey nana" he took Melo "she's good"

Me: "yeah she's also eating"

Nelo: "that's good I got you cake" I smiled

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "I totally had a day planned out but ke" I got up kissed his cheek

Me: "thank you baby but there's no place I'd rather be at" I went to the bathroom brushed my teeth I didn't like the smell of cheese in my mouth when I got back in the lounge Nelo had a cake with 17 candles he was sing with Melo on his arm she was just blabbering away she kept on clapping her hands saying nana

Nelo: "happy birthday nana"

Melo: "nana"

Me: "aah baby thank you" I gave Melo a soft peck before kissing Nelo

Nelo: "I got you something but blow here first"

Me: "blow where daddy" I said seductively biting my lip he laughed

Nelo: "don't be nasty nana im talking about the candles"

Me: "oh well I'd love to blow something else later though" he winked

Nelo: "later" I blew the candles with melo's help he put Melo and the cake down

Nelo: "wait here" he went to his room came back 3 gifts he gave me the first one

Nelo: "this is from Melo and me"

Me: "is that so" he nodded I opened it, it was a picture frame with two pictures one from melo's party the one the camera guy took when we weren't noticing the other one was a picture of the 3 of us the day I gave birth

Me: "I love it baby thank you" I kissed his cheek he gave me the 2nd it was a small box with 3 charms

Nelo: "it for your bracelet you still have it right" I nodded

Me: "they beautiful baby"

Nelo: "not more than my girls though" I giggled he gave me the 3rd one I opened it and it was 3 piece gold watch from fossil it was small two bracelet attached to it

Nelo: "wana try it on" I nodded he put it on my wrist I gave him a long hug we hugged until Melo started pulling my leg Nelo picked her up the 3 of us shared a hug no words were said but the love between the 3 of us was obvious Nelo pulled back and kissed my forehead

Nelo: "don't cry" he wiped my tears

Me: "just that I really love you guys"

Nelo: "we love you two nana"

Me: "thank you for loving me for giving me melo and everything in between I love you sbonelo"

Nelo: "I love you more nana and thank you for letting me father your child" I giggled

Me: "like I had a choice"

Nelo: "I love you never doubt that" he kissed my forehead

Me: "never!"

Melo: "nana" I looked at her she just smiled

Nelo: "I'm starving I brought dinner"

Me: "I'll dish up"

Nelo: "let me shower first"

Me: "we'll shower later" he smirked

Nelo: "later"

Me: "take your daughter and sit down"

Nelo: "yes ma'am" he sat down I dished up we ate after eating I gave Melo a bath while Nelo did the dishes after dressing her up I gave her medicine she fell asleep Nelo took her cot from her room put it in his room I laid her down. Nelo was standing there leaning on the wall looking all sexy and manly in his work clothes I walked to him with that I want you smile on my face

Me: "how about some birthday sex"

Nelo: "ain't got ask me twice" he took off his shirt by the time he got to me his jeans were off he picked me threw me on the bed I giggled he shut me up with his lips after our basping I was thoroughly fucked "baby" I said trying to catch my breath

Nelo: "I'm not done you promised me a shower" he got off the bed pulled me by my leg and picked me up to shower he put me down in it and opened the water he kissed hard his hands playing with my hair bringing me closer to him I pulled back and dropped to the floor and blew my candle after a session in the shower we dried ourselves we walked out the bathroom got lotioned I took his tshirt to get dressed

Nelo: "what you doing" he walked to me with his shaft bouncing I couldn't help but laugh he spanked me hard grabbing my ass

Me: "I'm getting dressed"

Nelo: "I still need to give you your birthday present"

Me: "another one"

Nelo: "yep let me love m cherish your body" I raised my eyebrow he kissed me slowly and passionately I let out a small moan he picked me I wrapped my legs around his waist he walked to the bed and by the time we were done every part of my body had felt his touch and his lips

Nelo: "happy birthday my love" he kissed my head



Me: "mmh" I dozed off on top of him.

.

I woke up in the morning because Nelo was moving me from him

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "go back to sleep nana I need to get ready for work"

Me: "ok" he got in the bathroom a minute later I heard the shower I got off the bed wore his tshirt went in the bathroom rinsed my mouth washed my face went back to the bedroom took out his clothes ironed them he got out when I was almost finished with ironing he lotioned while he was getting dressed I made him breakfast I watched him eating while having a light conversation when he was done he took his backpack phone car keys I walked him to the door

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "love you too" we kissed "have a good day at work baby"

Nelo: "you know you can take the car if you want to get out the house"

Me: "I'd rather not risk it"

Nelo: "ok nana" we kissed again he held my waist bringing me closer to him I got lost in his lips before he pulled back chuckling

Nelo: "if I keep up with you I won't go to work"

Me: "go so you can bring home the beacon" he laughed spanked me

Nelo: "cook me dinner woman" we laughed

Me: "will do now go make money" he gave me a soft peck before he went to his car he hooted and I watched him drive off I went back to sleep. Woke up to Melo's cry I took her fed her before give her, her bottle she was busy with her bottle in front of the TV while I cleaned, I gave her a bath than her medicine put her back in front of the tv made breakfast for myself she fell asleep on the couch I took her laid her in her cot than went to bath. The rest of the day was boring, when Nelo was about to come home I started on dinner lasagna and green salad. Later on we had dinner watched animated movie after the movie Nelo did the dishes while I prepared Melo for bed when Melo was asleep we cuddled on the couch watching a romcom after it we went to sleep.

I woke up the following day when I felt Nelo's tongue on my clit after a morning glory he went to shower while I ironed his clothes it was pretty much the same thing as the previous day. I went to sleep when he left I got up before Melo cleaned it was Friday the 23rd we had to pack up coz we were leaving the following day. Nelo came back we drove to jhb to pick up kwandile I regretted going with him the drive to jhb and back made me tired we still had to pack up at least it was just nelo's clothes and melo's things since he had rented the house fully furnished

Kwandile: "I didnt not sign up for this when I said I'll come help with the cars"

Nelo: "bru I didn't realise Melo had so many things" it took us over an hour to take down everything in melo's room and pack it up

Me: "I'm hungry"

Kwandile: "you just ate like less than an hour ago"

Me: "yeah so it my stomach not yours" they laughed

Kwandile: "you sure can eat nana ka Nelo"

Nelo: "let her be Kwandile" I rolled my eyes "get Melo ready we can go have dinner"

Me: "you get her ready im tired"

Nelo: "but.."

Me: "hayi she's your daughter to"

Nelo: "yoh ok I'll get ready" he stood up and took Melo left us in the lounge Kwandile was staring at me

Me: "what"

Kwandile: "are you happy" I looked at him puzzled

Me: "what"

Kwandile: "with Nelo and your life in general"

Me: "yeah I'm happy I love him"

Kwandile: "ok good"

Me: "congrats on your marriage"

Kwandile: "yeah well thank you"

Me: "I'll freshen up" I stood up went to the bathroom washed my face put on fresh

make up after toning and lotioning my face we left when I was done had dinner at spur which turned into a drinking spree for Kwandile and Nelo by the time we left the restaurant was empty we got home and slept Nelo kept on irritating me want sex like I was about to have sex with him when his drunk Nelo takes hours to come if he had alcohol.

.

I woke up first the following morning decided to be brave since we had packed up all the kitchen things I took the car keys and drove to wimpy got breakfast than went to chicken lickn for hot wings went pass the liquor store got half pack of beer drove back home when I got to the garage Nelo was sitting on the grass next to it he stood up came to open my door smashing his lips on mine we kissed roughly by the time he pulled back I was breathless

Nelo: "you scared me"

Me: "what why"

Nelo: "don't ever take a car and drive alone"

Me: "I thought you were cool with it"

Nelo: "I was joking that day nana you not familiar with this place the drivers here are reckless and you left your phone behind"

Me: "sorry I had you worried"

Nelo: "don't do that ok" we kissed again but shortly

Me: "I brought food and beer"

Nelo: "where is it"

Me: "passenger seat" he went to the other side and smiled when he saw everything he took the hot wings and beer sat down on the grass started eating

Me: "what about Kwandile"

Nelo: "his still asleep"

Me: "you gona leave him some" he shrugged his shoulders "sbonelo" he chuckled

Nelo: "if he gets up in time"

Kwandile: "I'm here" he was walking out the door "you ass" he grabbed a beer sat down

joining his brother I left them there to check on Melo. We left around midday spent the night at Nelo's new place we slept with Melo in our bed I woke up in the middle of the night Melo was shaking like she's having a seizure and white foam was coming up of her mouth

Me: "Nelo!!!" I screamed from the bottom of my voice

## **part 96 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo jumped off the bed the same time Kwandile came running into the bedroom

Nelo: "what do we do" he picked her up

Kwandile: "get a spoon" I ran to the kitchen got a spoon they got to the kitchen as I was rinsing Kwandile took it put in her mouth he took car keys from the counter

Kwandile: "what's the closest hospital?"

Nelo: "I don't know call your mom" I got my phone and called mom on our way to underground parking she wasn't answering I kept trying until we drove off the gate I ended up calling Mike he answered immediately he told me the hospital and that they will meet us there Kwandile was driving Melo had stopped shaking by the time we got to the hospital she was ok just that her eyes were bloodshot and she looked exhausted we got to the hospital Mike had called before we arrived they took her in Nelo explained what was going on and how she was in hospital few days back

Kwandile: "Lelo"

Me: "mmh"

Kwandile: "here" he took of his hoody I was wearing pjs and I just had to choose the shortest one for that night I felt like an idiot I took it and put it on it stood mid thigh it covered my pj shorts completely at least they were wearing sweatpants and vests

Nelo: "should have gotten you something to wear"

Me: "no one thought of it" I started crying silently the thought that I might actually lose Melo scared the living shit out of me Nelo sat next to me on the couch and picked me up I crawled to his lap burried my face on his chest whispering silently he kept on brushing my hair and kissing my head we stayed like that until the door opened my eyes

shoot up to see if it the doctor but it was mom n Mike I jumped off Nelo launced my self to mom she held me tightly

Mom: "it's gona be ok ssh don't cry"

Me: "what's wrong with her mom she was fine when we went to sleep and now she's in hospital" Mike brushed my back

Mike: "I'll go see if I can find out something" he walked out

Me: "I'm scared mom" she held my face making me look at her

Mom: "hey she's going to be just fine I promise you she's a little fighter ok believe me" she wiped my tears I just noddod

Mom: "sbonelo have you called your parents"

Nelo: "not yet and I didn't bring my phone" I gave him my phone

Mom: "I spoke to them yesterday but I think you should call them"

Nelo: "please excuse me" he stepped out Kwandile followed him

Mom: "come sit down" we sat down I covered my face with my hands we stayed in silence until Mike came back

Mom: "what are they saying" Mike answered in some medical terms

Me: "dad simple english" he chuckled lightly

Mike: "sorry they ran some tests they had to call the hospital in mpumalanga but they can't find anything she's up and laughing like nothing happened they not even admitting her for the night"

Me: "but I saw her dad she was having a seizure white foam was coming out of her mouth just a few days back she stopped breathing"

Mike: "I'm also confused" Nelo came in

Nelo: "dad says we should come home"

Me: "how is that gona help"

Nelo: "he thinks Melo needs to be introduced to the ancestors"

Me: "now that's bull!"

Mom: "Lelothando"

Me: "sorry but what does that have to do with my child being sick"

Mom: "these things happen"

Me: "we've never had to be introduced to no ancestors"

Mom: "beliefs differ Lelo obviously the Ngcobos believe in it"

Me: "what if she gets worse"

Nelo: "she won't"

Me: "where were these ancestors all along coz Melo is not a new born"

Mom: "don't be rude"

Me: "I think I'm being realistic"

Nelo: "no you being disrespectful"

Me: "well that's your slice of cake" he shook his head

Nelo: "nc nc nc" he walked to the door turned to look at me "I'm going to get my daughter they said we can take her home are you coming or not" I just looked at him with my eyebrow raised he walked out

Mom: "that wasn't necessary"

Me: "don't start"

Mike: "Lelo" I sighed

Me: "sorry it just that ... I can't I just can't" I started crying again I don't know why but I had all these emotions going on I was also confused Mike held me

Mike: "you know I also don't understand this whole situation but medically it seems like nothing can be done to stop these episodes they can't even figure out what's wrong just have an open mind and give this a try"

Me: "I've seen the documentaries dad they gona cut melo's face" mom started laughing we both looked at her

Mom: "sorry but is that what you think"

Me: "won't they"

Mom: "ofcos not Lelo that documentary was of a different ritual"

Me: "oh" mom held my shoulders

Mom: "baby I wouldn't allow them to do it if it was going to be harmful to her in any kinda way ok "

Me: "ok"

Mom: "now stop being silly and go apologize to sbonelo" I giggled lightly

Me: "I guess I should"

Mom: "let's go" we walked out the waiting room met up with Nelo as he was coming to the waiting room he had Melo with him

Me: "how is she"

Nelo: "she's good but asleep we should go"

Mom: "will talk to you guys tomorrow sbonelo I'll call your mom in the morning"

Nelo: "ok and thank you for being here"

Mike: "we wouldn't be anywhere else" we walked out the hospital exchanged goodbyes and hugs than went our separate ways Kwandile was in the drivers seat Nelo and I got in the back he drove off Nelo had Melo on his lap

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "not now nana" he dismissed

Me: "oh" I felt a little sad I looked out the window we got home everyone went to sleep I kept tossing and turning Melo was on top of Nelo sleeping with her thumb in her mouth I got off the bed took a throw from the floor went to the lounge sat on the couch covered myself with the throw and watched tv.

.

When I woke up the following day it was the 24th I was in bed alone I got out the bed went to take a shower when I got out the bathroom Nelo was making the bed

Me: "morning"

Nelo: "morning"

Me: "you ok"

Nelo: "I'm fine" he walked out I lotioned and got dressed I walked out going to the lounge as I was walking on the passage I noticed that the bedroom next to Nelo was made up he had removed the things that were in it and changed it to Melo's room and she was sleeping there peacefully I stood next to her cot brushing her cheeks with the back of my finger

Nelo: "she ate and I gave her a bath" I turned Nelo was standing by the door

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "your food is in the kitchen"

Me: "thank you" he turned to walk away "Nelo" he looked at me "I'm really sorry about what I said"

Nelo: "ok"

Me: "sbonelo"

Nelo: "what do you want me to say"

Me: "I said I was sorry"

Nelo: "I get that but you really need to work on yourself coz this stubbornness and disrespect is starting to piss me off"

Me; "I see"

Nelo: "come eat it late"

Me: "what's the time"

Nelo: "13:30"

Me: "oh don't remember the last time I slept this late"

Nelo: "mmh" we walked out melo's room got to the lounge Kwandile was watching soccer

Me: "morning Kwa"

Kwandile: "hey you up"

Me: "yeah" I sat down in the counter and ate

Kwandile: "bru how am I getting home Zama wants me home"

Nelo: "we going home as soon as nana is dobe eating we'll drop you off at your house"

Me: "we are?"

Nelo: "yes we are"

Me: "you didn't think telling me would be a good idea" he gave me that don't piss me off look

Nelo: "don't start"

Me: "ok just so we have it out there im not spending Christmas away from home"



Nelo: "that should be the least of your concern"

Me: "mmh" I finished eating packed a bag for Melo and myself Nelo got in the bedroom I was sitting on the floor with my hands around my knees and my face on my knees I was crying silently he kneeled in front of me removed my face from my knees he wiped my tears kissed my eyes

Nelo: "what's wrong nana" I sniffed

Me: "nothing im just being stupid"

Nelo: "talk to me"

Me: "there's nothing to say Nelo"

Nelo: "is it me im sorry nana I'll bring you guys back tonight I promise"

Me: "it not that"

Nelo: "than why you crying talk to me nana"

Me: "just give me a minute I'll fine"

Nelo: "no tell me what's wrong"

Me: "there's nothing wrong let's go hear what your parents have to say"

Nelo: "ok" he stood up and reached for my hand helping me stand up

Nelo: "come here" we shared a slow kiss the kind of kiss that says I got you im giving myself to you there was no lust no hunger just passion and love he held my waist pressing our bodies together

Me: "I love you so much sbonelo" I murmured in his mouth I could feel his lips curving into a smile he pulled back and pressed his forehead on mine

Nelo: "you really do love me don't you"

Me: "you would be a fool to doubt my love for you" he chuckled

Nelo: "yeah I would, I love you too nana so much it hurts" we kissed again he pushed me back lightly while he kissed until I fell on the bed he picked me up making me lay in the middle of the bed and got on top of me I opened my legs allowing him to get between them we kissed again he moved from my lips to my jaw line down to my neck

Nelo: "why are you wearing jeans" I giggled "from now on no jeans" he said as he undid my button and zipping down my jeans

Me: "no jeans" he came back to my face we kissed again I took off his tshirt I went on a searching spree running my hands all over his back

Me: "baby the door" he got off me locked the door quickly and came back to me his lips finding mine

Nelo: "I'm so crazy about you" he bit my neck and I let out a moan "I'm insanely in love with you nana I want you body n soul" he came back to my lips we kissed a slow sensual kiss it felt like he was pouring all his love out with the kiss he slid his hand underneath my tshirt removing it from my body followed by my bra we maintained eye contact he trailed his fingertips over my neck down to my breast waking up all my senses my entire body tingled as his lips met my breast I closed my eyes allowing the pleasure of his tongue on my skin to take over

Nelo: "keep them open nana" I opened them he was staring at me "I love you nana" I held his face bringing it to mine we kissed again

Me: "I love you more" he took off my jeans and trailed his fingertip over my inner thigh I gasped and shuddered under his touch "daddy" he kissed me from my legs all up my thigh "nana" I let out a loud moan he lightly bite my inner thigh right next to my punani "aah" my skin lost his touch as he took off his jeans along with his boxers before taking off my panties he came back to my face we stared at each other smiling "I love you nana" I gave him a soft peck "I love you more baby" he kissed me again softly his kiss was slow filled with passion while his hand started playing with my punani teasing my clit with pinches I could contain my moans in his mouth I sucked in a sharp breath when I felt him entering me from the feel of pain combined with pleasure he let out a small moan as his mouth formed a silent o we looked deeply into each other as he started moving slowly I wrapped my legs around him making him go deeper until he was all in I arched my back "oh God nana" he went on to kissing my neck softly he sighed in my ear as I met him with every thrust he took my hands into his spreading them on either sides of our bodies there was nothing but love and joy in his eyes as our bodies moved together rhythmically after a few strokes he held my waist and flipped us putting me on top of him I moved my waist slowly in circles he kept his hands on my breasts it felt

magical as I moaned lightly while he was groaning and flexing his hips “come lie next to me nana” I laid next to him giving him my back he lifted my thigh up and entered me from the back “oh God daddy” he sucked on my neck biting it while moving his other hand playing with my clit “oh aah oh God don’t stop daaddy” he moaned louder as I felt my walls tightening around his dick he thrust deeper and harder my climax sent him straight to his he continued pumping until we finished he pulled out picked me up making me lay on top of him “I love you so much nana” we kissed again I felt his dick twitching under me I broke the kiss and giggled

Me: “let’s shower so we can leave it already late” he lifted me to the shower we had another session in the shower got out lotioned and got dressed I changed into a maxi dress and a black biker

Me: “I need to get my hair done”

Nelo: “we’ll go maybe on the 26th I don’t know it Christmas tomorrow and it kwandile’s wedding on the 27th so I don’t know” I sighed

Me: “we’ll find time” he kissed my forehead we walked out the bedroom Kwandile was in the lounge watching cartoons with Melo

Nelo: “oh she’s up”

Kwa: “yep and next time please have the decency to play music when yall have visitors”

Nelo laughed and hit him playfully on his shoulders

Nelo: “next time have to decency to plugged your earphones on”

Kwa: “ass” I looked at Nelo he had a huge smug grin on his face

Nelo: “let’s go” I took Melo Nelo took the bag we left dropped off Kwandile at his house we went to his parents house. Nelo got in the gate and parked outside the garage his mom was already waiting by the door we got off the car I took Melo and we went to her N’s mom: “how is she”

Me: “she’s ok for now” we got in Sethu her dad and Sfundu were sitting in the lounge we exchanged greetings

N’s mom: “what’s happening” Nelo told them what’s happening his dad said we need to do imbeleko for her since it was Christmas the following day and they still need to

prepare for it plus it kwandile's wedding on the 27th he said it was going to be done on the 29th but they burnt imphepho for her just to calm her down. We left after dinner Nelo took us home he went back to his parents house.

The following day was Christmas we were having Christmas lunch at home I woke up early help Melo and the twins with they presents Nelo had given me melo's present the day before. When all they presents were opened Sthe n Philisiwe helped me feed them after feeding them I took Melo to give her a bath while Philisiwe and Sthe were bathing the twins after that we had breakfast that siya and kyle prepared my aunts n uncles n cousins started coming in around 12:00 mom n the aunts prepared the lunch while the kids played and we stayed in the lounge talking and having snacks while music played softly in the background later on we had lunch after lunch the girls and I cleaned up in the kitchen and the dinning area than we all stayed in the lounge sharing stories it was coldy n rainy everyone left at night besides Thulani and Mbali we were going clubbing we all freshened up changed and left we had to use 2 cars we took Thulani and kyle's car I drove with Thulani we picked up Zee and painted durban by the time we got home it was around 05:00 I didn't even get that much sleep Nelo called around 10:00 saying he was picking us up at 12:00 I got up got Melo ready at least mom had fed her I also took a bath got dressed and had breakfast. Nelo picked us up I had to pack coz we were only going to come back on the 30th

Nelo: "you look tired" he said as he drove out the gate

Me: "went out last night"

Nelo: "out where"

Me: "club by morning side"

Nelo: "is that why you were so hell bent on spending Christmas with your family"

Me: "no ofcos not"

Nelo: "why didn't you tell me you going clubbing"

Me: "you didn't ask"

Nelo: "I didn't know that with every conversation we have I need to ask if you gona go

clubbing or not”

Me: “why you making this more of a deal than it is”

Nelo: “am I”

Me: “yeah”

Nelo: “who did you go with”

Me: “my brothers and cousins”

Nelo: “I see, so do you still need to do your hair”

Me: “yes”

Nelo: “I’ll leave at the saloon, have your changed your dress size”

Me: “no” he chuckled “what”

Nelo: “you just a little heavier I was just wondering”

Me: “are you saying I’m fat”

Nelo: “no im not im just saying you a little heavier nana”

Me: “ok” I looked away he chuckled

Nelo: “I was just saying don’t be upset”

Me: “I’m not upset”

Nelo: “was just thinking of getting us something to wear tomorrow but I think I’ll wait for you to finish it best if you fit it first”

Me: “fuck of sbonelo” he laughed

Nelo: “what did I do”

Me: “just fuck of ok”

Nelo: “ok” he couldn’t stop grinning, we got to pava he left me at the saloon I got my hair done 14 inch straight hairpiece with a line on the side I told him I was done he came back

Nelo: “where should I pay”

Me: “already paid”

Nelo: “why”

Me: “what you mean why”

Nelo: “I was going to pay”

Me: "can we not talk about this" we left the saloon

Nelo: "I bought some clothes for Melo"

Me: "that's nice im starving" he chuckled "can you just stop ok!"

Nelo: "hey what did I say and don't raise your voice at me"

Me: "arg can we just go"

Nelo: "we'll eat first than look for something to wear tomorrow than we can go"

Me: "you such an idiot" he came closer to me pressing our bodies together and looked down on me

Nelo: "Im your idiot though" I giggled and rolled my eyes he kissed my head

Nelo: "let's go feed you" he pushed melo's stroller we went to mugg n bean I ate while he fed Melo he just had juice when we were done he paid and we went to cotton on I got this black turtle neck dress mid leg in a size 32 coz I was a 32 he was just looking at me

Me: "what"

Nelo: "don't you wana take a 34 at least"

Me: "no im good" I went to the fitting room the dress didn't come down it stayed on my thighs I huffed and took it off got dressed walked out the fitting room they were standing next to it

Nelo: "and" I threw the dress at him he laughed and put it down I took a 34 went to the cashier he followed me and paid he kept on looking at me and laughing I was so irritated

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "don't say a word"

Nelo: "I love you and I think you perfect"

Me: "neh"

Nelo: "yep"

Me: "I also love you"

Nelo: "let's get you shoes" we went to buy shoes I bought a navy heeled ankle boot we left for his parents house it was so busy we slept late.

.

Woke up early the following day got busy went to the venue the whole venue was decorated in traditional zulu theme the floor was covered in grass the whole ceremony went by smoothly by the end of the day I was in flops we slept late again. The following day was a bit better in terms of being busy at night they started they slaughtered goat for Melo the whole thing went on until the next day we left on the 30th we left Melo with her grandparents and went to nelo's house. We were cuddling naked after an amazing basping session I could feel myself drifting off to sleep but I was curious about his birthday

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "mmh"

Me: "what are we doing tomorrow for your birthday or you gona have you party like all the other years"

Nelo: "was thinking we can just spend the day alone than go clubbing at night with my friends and they gfs"

Me: "ok cool" he kissed my forehead while playing with my hair I slowly went to a deep sleep

## **part 97 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up when I felt Nelo's tongue on my punani I kept my eyes closed pushed his head deeper in me urging him to go deeper he chuckled and kept going until I came than came up to my face

Nelo: "hey" the grin on his face was priceless

Me: "hey daddy" we kissed briefly

Nelo: "you good"

Me: "I'm great" he looked at me like he was trying to finger out why I'm great than started giving me his panty wetter smile while he raised his eye brow

Nelo: "great hey"

Me: "great" I whispered

Nelo: "good lets go do some grocery and I think it time we changed this bedroom"

Me: "isn't it late"

Nelo: "it only 15:00 nana" he gave me a soft peck got off the bed lifted me up to his shoulder "let's get you cleaned up" he spanked my ass and I giggled we took a shower got out dressed up in shorts tank tops and flip flops than went to gate way we went to have lunch first

Nelo: "nana" I stopped chewing and looked at him

Me: "mmh"

Nelo: "what would you do if you found out you were pregnant" I swallowed my food

Me: "have an abortion" I told him with a straight face

Nelo: "not if it my baby I'd kill you" I raised my eyebrows

Me: "mmh" I shrugged my shoulders carried on eating

Nelo: "do you think it weird that it my 2nd birthday tomorrow since Melo was born but I haven't celebrated it with her" I raised my finger up cautioning him to wait I finshed eating

Me: "I guess it but than you still have many more to come"

Nelo: "I guess" he looked bothered

Me: "ok what's wrong"

Nelo: "nothing"

Me: "I thought we promised each other to be open with one another and no lies" he sighed

Nelo: "I know nana just that sometime I feel so guilty"

Me: "guilty about"

Nelo: "you know how I was when you were pregnant"

Me: "baby ... That's all in the past I forgave you now you have to forgive yourself daddy and move on" I held his hand on the table he smiled and got closer to me giving me a soft peck

Nelo: "I feel like I don't deserve you sometimes"

Me: "well I deserve you" I told him with a smirk and he chuckled

Nelo: "Is that so"



Me: "I love you Sbonelo nobody else just you"

Nelo: "I love you more nana" I rolled my eyes he pinched my hand

Me: "hey!" I pressed my lips together brought my eyebrows together

Nelo: "I'll lick your face right now if you don't stop doing that" I tried suppressing my smile he licked my face right from my chin to my forehead and across my cheeks

Me: "oh God stop" I couldn't stop laughing

Nelo: "I warned you"

Me: "you lucky im not wearing any makeup"

Nelo: "I prefer you without it anyway"

Me: "I know"

Nelo: "you look amazingly beautiful with or without it"

Me: "aah thank you baby" I held his cheek and pecked his lips

Nelo: "finish up nana"

Me: "your plate is more than half full"

Nelo: "I can't eat anymore im full"

Me: "ok" I finished eating he paid and we left. We started at pick n pay Nelo kept on filling the trolley with frozen food and junk

Me: "do you ever cook"

Nelo: "sometimes"

Me: "what about the other times" he pushed the trolley towards the kitchen and bought grilled pork chops which he started eating in the store

Nelo: "ok nana you buy what you think I should eat or what you need coz honestly this is what I live on and take aways ofcos"

Me: "I think I should" we went to the toiletry section bought both our toiletries when I got a pack of tampons he looked at me with a smug grin

Me: "what"

Nelo: "nix nana" he kissed my forehead and whistled

Me: "sbonelo Ngcobo"

Nelo: "do you have any idea how it turns me on when you say my full name" he got

closer to my side pressing his body on mine took my hand making me feel his D it was hard I quickly removed my hand

Me: "eewu man we in a public store"

Nelo: "yeah so"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "mmh" he shrugged his shoulders and carried on pushing the trolley by the time we got to the cashiers the trolley was full the pork chops were finished he didn't even share them he paid we went to leave the plastics in the car than went back inside the mall. We went to boardmans looked around

Nelo: "what are you looking for nana"

Me: "we'll see when we find it"

Nelo: "yoh!!"

Me: "any colour theme in mind"

Nelo: "all black you won't even see when the sheet is dirty nana" I raised my eyebrow tilting my head "when i make you come nana which is going to be happing everyday ofcos"

Me: "ok white it is"

Nelo: "but" I shook my head "just white though nana"

Me: "maybe with a touch of turquoise"

Nelo: "what colour is that" I laughed

Me: "come you will see" I pulled his hand the sales lady helped us out we got a white bedding with a turquoise throw and curtains, got a white carpet for our bedroom and a pink one for Melo's room bought two extra beddings for our bedroom and the guest room Nelo paid we left.

Nelo: "I need to get something from the pharmacy" I thought this was my chance

Me: "I'll meet you at the car I also need to go get something for tomorrow"

Nelo: "what's that"

Me: "just something it a surprise"

Nelo: "I'm coming with you"

Me: "no!"

Nelo: "nana" I kissed him but pulled back quickly

Me: "I'll be fast" I started walking away

Nelo: "nana!"

Me: "I love you" I left him standing there went to the lingerie shop got what I needed went to Foschin got shoes I put the lingerie plastic inside the one from Foschin than left when I got to the car he was already in it waiting for me he dropped a call when he heard me opening the door I put the plastic in the back seat

Me: "what's wrong" he looked shaken up

Nelo: "nothing nana" he kissed my forehead "are you done can we go"

Me: "yeah I'm done" I did my seatbelt and he drove off

Nelo: "look can we get the lounge things and the bed some other time"

Me: "yeah sure"

Nelo: "cool"

Me: "what's wrong"

Nelo: "promise me one thing"

Me: "I'm listening"

Nelo: "you never going to leave me nana you and melo are my life" he looked at me shortly before turning his eyes back on the road

Me: "what's happening"

Nelo: "just promise me nana no matter what you staying with me"

Me: "I promise"

Nelo: "no matter what"

Me: "no matter what" he pointed to his cheek and I kissed it

Me: "I love you Nelo and I'm not going anywhere"

Nelo: "I hope you mean those words coz I'll hold you to them"

Me: "I mean them believe me"

Nelo: "I love you more nana" we arrived at his place I took out my plastic first went to hide it in the guest bedroom than went back to help him with the others we unpacked

the grocery than went to do the bedroom by the time we were done I was tired he cooked we ate later on in front of the tv after eating I did the dishes cleaned up in the kitchen than we cuddled on the couch watching reality shows when it was later we took a long hot bubble bath got out went to the bedroom walking on the passage naked joys of being alone in the house I was sitting on the bed chatting to Siya about they plans for news Eve they were all going to marget Jr was having a party Nelo threw something at me

Me: "what's this" I picked it up it was two different home pregnancy tests

Nelo: "take it"

Me: "no"

Nelo: "why not"

Me: "I'm not pregnant"

Nelo: "you cant be sure of that we haven't been using a condom I come in you all the time"

Me: "yeah and I'm also on an injection"

Nelo: "what injection"

Me: "contraception"

Nelo: "how come I didn't know that"

Me: "you never asked and when I started it we weren't together"

Nelo: "you should have told me!"

Me: "hayi don't yell at me it my body at the end of the day"

Nelo: "but we a couple Lelo we should talk about these things"

Me: "it not a big deal"

Nelo: "like hell it not"

Me: "Nelo im 17 only gona start grade 12 the following year I already have a 1 year old child come on bru"

Nelo: "but ... The vomiting the weight gain nana the eating"

Me: "I also don't know why but I can assure you I'm not pregnant"

Nelo: "put me out of my misery nana just do it"

Me: "no coz regardless of the results one of us is going to be upset and im not about to do that"

Nelo: "I think you should stop taking the injection"

Me: "what ... No absolutely not"

Nelo: "why not nana"

Me: "last thing I want is to be pregnant again"

Nelo: "what's wrong with that"

Me: "is easy for you to say Nelo you have everything a person your age needs you got this place your cars your job your business im still a learner heck not even a student I can't afford to be pregnant I also want to be independent"

Nelo: "you don't have to be independent nana im here all of this it ours"

Me: "no it all yours Nelo and you being really selfish right now"

Nelo: "no im not"

Me: "we have Melo why are we even talking about this"

Nelo: "I know there's no way you would leave me if we had another kid"

Me: "oh wow" I stood up got dressed in my winter pjs got under the cover looked away from his side

Nelo: "fuck!" I heard him kicking something before he got under the cover he grabbed my body bringing me closer to him

Me: "I'd never leave you mina Nelo I really don't know what else you want from me" I said softly while sniffing I couldn't stop the tears from my eyes he sighed and turned me to face him

Nelo: "I know nana im sorry for being selfish and insensitive" I nodded and he wiped my tears "I love you nana I just wana hold on to what we have im scared you might realise im not good enough one day and walk away"

Me: "so you think having another child with you would prevent that from happening" he nodded "I see" fresh tears started coming out

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "people with 4 or 6 kids get divorced Nelo you just have to trust and believe in the

love we share”

Nelo: “I will just promise me something”

Me: “what”

Nelo: “you gona stop taking the injection”

Me: “but Nelo”

Nelo: “promise me” I sighed

Me: “ok I’ll stop”

Nelo: “thank you nana” we kissed a long and slow kiss he got on top of me I oped my legs giving him access

Nelo: “we burning this pjs tomorrow” I giggled

Me: “no way these pjs mean business” he chuckled and took them off we made love and fell asleep.

.

Woke up the following day it was nelo’s birthday he was still asleep I got off the bed wore his tshirt went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth and washed my face than went to the the lounge opened the TV turned to trace started on breakfast while singing along and dancing there and there when I was done with breakfast went to wake Nelo up with a blowjob he got up gasping for air after coming I threw him the towel went to rinse my mouth he flowed me to the bathroom all naked and stood behind me looking at the mirror he kept on making those weirdly sexy looks and smiles while his eyes were half closed I looked at him thinking how I managed to get him and actually madly in love with him

Nelo: “stop staring”

Me: “you sexy babe” he kissed my neck

Nelo: “thank you nana, shall I bend you over the sink and burry myself in you”

Me: “later breakfast is getting cold”

Nelo: “that’s what a microwave is for”

Me: “as fascinating as that sound later sounds better” I turned to look at him he stood up straight staring down at me pressing his body closer to mine

Me: "happy birthday my love" I stood on my toes he brought his face closer to mine we kissed I could feel his D on my stomach getting harder and harder so I pulled back

Me: "later" he chuckled I pressed my hand on his chest initiating him to move back and he moved aside

Me: "come let's have a breakfast" I moved from the sink he washed his face and rinsed his mouth we got to the bedroom he wore his sweatpants we had breakfast on the kitchen counter

Me: "clean up here"

Nelo: "you making me work even on my birthday nana hha so not fair" I kissed his cheek and stood up

Me: "stop being a baby" I felt him there went to the guest bedroom took the plastic went to our bedroom locked the door I went to the bathroom took like a two minutes shower got out lotioned put on my make up than got dressed in my red lace lingerie made up of silk nylons with a lace on top a corset that's lacey all the way from the top up until my belly button I hooked the straps on the nylon fixed my hair put on a little fragrance than got in my red pencil heels I took my phone created a playlist filled with panty dropping songs put in on repeat than pressed play I guess Nelo heard the noise coz he started knocking

Nelo: "nana why is this door locked open up"

Me: "give me a minute" I pulled a chair from the desk put it in the middle of the bedroom than went to open the door his jaw dropped

Me: "happy birthday daddy" just than usher's hey daddy song started playing

Nelo: "what the fuckn Jesus" he looked up the roof "thank you lord" I giggled

Me: "come on in" I pulled his sweatpants he swallowed hard and followed me "sit" he sat on the chair I took the handcuffs from the bed pulled his hands to the back of the chair and tied it up

Nelo: "nana" I pressed my finger on his lips and shook my head lightly I turned around giving him a view of my exposed ass since I was wearing a thong than started moving my ass in circles in a slow motion

Nelo: "nana" I turned to look at him

Me: "should I cover your mouth daddy" he shook his head "than behave"

Nelo: "you not being fair" I sat on top of him dry humping him he kept on making sexy groans

Me: "oh my are you hard daddy"

Nelo: "I..." He breathed out "I've been hard since you opened that door let me touch nana please" I shook my head and ran my nail down his chest to his packs his chest was rising and fall like his out of breath I stood up started dancing again I dropped to the floor and started grinding on it he cried out his eyes red and half closed I kept my eyes on his the entire time I crawled on the floor going to him while biting my bottom lip I got to him stood up and gave him a lap dance I stopped when I felt my ass getting wet I stood up and looked at him his sweatpants were wet around where his D was

Me: "daddy did you just come"

Nelo: "nana please at least untie me" I walked to the bed swaying my hips with the hugest grin ever took a blindfold

Me: "this will make you behave" he sucked in air when he saw it I put it around his eyes and took of his sweatpants he was so hard with veins popping all around his D my mouth wasn't big enough I felt it straching it even hurts as I shoved him in he let out a loud moan I kept going until he was about to come and stopped

Nelo: "oh please nana please don't stop" I put my legs on either side is his moved my thong aside and sank on him hard we both cried out I kept on working him I came first I wrapped my hands around his neck as I went harder and faster he called out my name and shot all his load deep in me I took the blindfold off he blinked a couple of time

Me: "hey" I smashed my lips on his still moving my waist in circles I could feel him getting hard again I stood up took the handcuffs off he wasted no time he lifted me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he put me on the desk tore off my thong and rammed into me going harder and harder with every pound while sucking and biting my neck the sensation of him going hard in me his teeth on my neck and his fingers pressing hard on my thigh I let it all out I came like I've never before it went on and on by the



time I was done my body was trembling he picked me up and threw me on the bed like I was nothing he went all in feeling me up in a second I couldn't even keep my eyes open as he pounded me with my legs on his neck he kept on going as he was emptying himself in me than fell on top of me

Nelo: "the fuck was that" we tried catching our breaths he got off me and pulled me on top of him

Nelo: "that was fuckn unbelievable"

Me: "unbelievable good or unbelievable bad"

Nelo: "you fuckn kidding me nana unbelievable amazing"

Me: "liked it"

Nelo: "heck yeah!!" He kissed my head

Me: "I'm glad"

Nelo: "thank you nana" his voice was surprisingly softer

Me: "happy birthday daddy" I could feel my self dozing off as he said he loved me.

I woke up when I felt him move under me

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "wake up nana the guys are coming over for pre drinks"

Me: "ok" I sat up and streched

Nelo: "you tired"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "should I tell them to not come"

Me: "no it nothing a shower can't fix" he picked me walked us to the bathroom

Nelo: "let me help you out this sexy thing" I giggled I was still sleepy "actually I remember you promising to let me bend you over this sink"

Me: "Nelo" I whined and true to his promise he turned me around made me bend over the sink when we were done fucking I almost fell my knees were all wobbly he laughed and sat me on the sink took off my lingerie we ended up taking a bath instead of a shower my legs weren't strong enough we got out lotioned

Me: "I need to go home get something to wear"

Nelo: "you have clothes here mos"

Me: "yeah but not for going to the club"

Nelo: "nana im sure you can find something in the closet"

Me: "nope id rather go home" he sighed

Nelo: "ok wear whatever now we'll go pass there before going to the club"

Me: "cool" I got dressed in a simple maxi dress and flops while he got dress in dark navy skinny jeans floded at the bottom navy Nike air and a white long sleeve lose hoody tshirt overlapping long at the back short in front his hair was starting to grow back

Me: "baby how come your hair is a little curly I've even noticed with your other siblings" he chuckled

Nelo: "mom is coloured"

Me: "but I've met your grandparents from your mom's side"

Nelo: "yeah she was adopted"

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "yep" his phone rang and he answered "yeah... Sure" he went out the bedroom I made the bed cleaned up putting out dirty clothes in the laundry basket the handcuffs n blindfold in his closet

Nelo: "the guys are here" he came closer to me

Me: "that's nice"

Nelo: "asa is also here" I laughed

Me: "you lie" he chuckled

Nelo: "I guess she and qin sorted out their business"

Me: "after everything he has done to her"

Nelo: "yeah well you still with me" I chuckled

Me: "you better than him but than it none of our business"

Nelo: "yes it not"

Me: "she's gona come to me crying again"

Nelo: "and you going to comfort her without judging"

Me: "not like I'll have a choice"

Nelo: "I love you" I stood on my toes

Me: "let me kiss you" he shook his head "Nelo come closer"

Nelo: "who said you must be short"

Me: "mxm" he chuckled and held my waist we kissed but I pulled back when he was deepening the kiss

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "hayi you didn't want to kiss me before" I walked away he spanked my ass I giggled walked to the lounge qin finoli Zwe lizwi Samke akhona asa and promise was there

Me: "hey guys"

Them: "nana ka Nelo"

Me: "eshee!!" They laughed

Asa: "dude your fridge is full where are we supposed to put this alcohol"

Nelo: "this is not a bar that fridge is for food why didn't yall bring cooler boxes"

Lizwi: "I have one in my car"

Qin: "me too"

Nelo: "go get it than go and buy ice while you at it"

Lizwi: "I'll go buy the ice"

Me: "I'll come with you"

Nelo: "I'd rather you didn't"

Me: "I need to get something at the shops"

Nelo: "than I'll go get the ice"

Me: "we can't leave them here just like that"

Nelo: "they not kids"

Lizwi: "I'm not gona do anything to lelo"

Nelo; "yeah I know but we'll go get the ice make yourself at home our bedroom is off limit"

Me: "sbonelo" he looked at me and smiled

Nelo: "please get me my wallet and car keys nana" I shook my head and went to get it

Me: "should we bring food"

Samke: "yeah I'm starving"

Me: "anything in particular"

Asa: "pizza"

Zwe: "and hot wings"

Me: "ok" we left

Nelo: "you upset"

Me: "no but that was uncalled for"

Nelo: "that's what you think"

Me: "what is that supposed to mean"

Nelo: "just that" we went to get the food than went home for my clothes no one was there I got my clothes and left we went to get ice went back to the house by 20:00 everyone was getting tipsy we were about to leave so I went to change into high waist black jean bum shorts and a black leather bra top with my navy ankle heel boot Nelo came in as I was doing my make up

Nelo: "you look hella sexy nana" he bit his bottom lip and came closer to me he had that I want you and I want you now look

Me: "stop right there Mr we not having sex"

Nelo: "exactly nana we gona make love" he grabbed my ass

Me: "Nelo no!"

Nelo: "just 5 minutes nana and I'll be done" I laughed

Me: "no!"

Nelo: "fine but don't beg me later on"

Me: "I wont"

Nelo: "good and those shorts are showing your ass change them"

Me: "I'll put on something to cover"

Nelo: "cool" he kissed my head and walked I finished with my make up wore my navy bf blazer took my bag we left got to Florida went to cubana they had reserved a table the boys went to buy alcohol and came back we sat drinking everyone got up to dance every now and then I could tell Nelo was getting drunk he kept on shoving his tongue in

me at every chance he got asa and I were on the dance floor dancing when her eyes popped out

Asa: "shit"

Me: "what"

Asa; "Loyiso is here"

Me: "where" just than I felt hands touching my waist

Asa: "behind you touching you" she chuckled

Me: "Loyiso let go"

Loyiso: "why" he breathed on my neck

Me: "Nelo is here"

Loyiso: "I don't care"

Nelo: "you should care" his hands moved from my waist when I turned around Nelo was holding his neck taking him out of the club to a dark corner

Me: "sbonelo stop" he threw him on the floor Loyiso quickly got up

Nelo: "did I not tell you to not even breath the same air as her" he threw a punch ryt on his jaw line Loyiso stumbled back a little but Qin pushed him back to Nelo another punch landed on loyiso's nose blood came out the same time

Loyiso: "it not my fault she choose to sleep with me" Nelo chuckled sarcastically

Nelo: "the nerve" a couple of punches landed Loyiso on the floor

Me: "Nelo stop!"

Nelo: "stand up boy" he grabbed his tshirt making him stand up than brought his face down loyiso's chin met Nelo's knee he coughed out blood

Me: "Qiniso make him stop"

Qin: "no ways" out of nowhere Nelo pulled a gun from his back I tried going to him but Lizwi held me

Lizwi: "don't get involved"

Me: "please make him stop"

Nelo: "open bru I thought you didn't care" he pressed his cheeks together Loyiso opened his mouth Nelo shoved the gun in his mouth

Nelo: "still don't care"

Loyiso: "I'm so sorry bru please"

Nelo: "I'll fuckn kill you bra and I won't even blink stay the fuck away from her" Loyiso nodded "are we clear" he nodded again tears coming out of his eyes he let go of him and he fell kicked him a couple of time than put his gun back he came to me wiped my tears

Nelo: "now go tell him to stay away from you" I shook my head "Lelothando so help me God" I walked to Loyiso

Me: "stay away from me" Nelo kissed my head we all walked back to the club nobody even talked about what had happened I stayed on Nelo's lap the entire time until the count down we welcomed 2011 with our tongues entwined

Nelo: "just us nobody else this year I love you nana"

Me: "just us daddy I love you more" we all went our separate ways late the following day we went to kwa'Max.

It was the 3rd we had just came back from fetching Melo she was asleep in her room I walked in the bedroom Nelo was on the call with his back on me

Nelo: "like the fuck do I care if you have an abortion..... That's not my child Siwe ....

Don't involve Lelo in this or I'll mess you up siwe believe me you don't wana see that side of me ....., that's not my child and don't ever call me again" he dropped the call and threw the phone on the wall it broke to pieces "fuck!!!!" He turned and I was standing there with tears running down my cheeks "nana"

Me: "she's pregnant"

Nelo: "that's not my child"

Me: "how sure are you of that" I saw it in his eyes before he even answered the uncertainty the fear and regret

Nelo: "it not mine"

Me: "you not sure of that"

Nelo: "nana" he pleaded I started walking backwards

Me: "I can't Nelo im done im so done I cant deal with this I don't want to deal with it I

just can't"

Nelo: "you promised nana you promised that you wouldn't leave me"

## **part 98 I am scared of lonely**

The closer he got to me the more I backed away I couldn't even handle the thought of him holding or touching me I kept on backing away until I hit the wall

Nelo: "nana please"

Me: "sbonelo she's pregnant" I used the wall to balance while sliding down on it until my ass hit the cold floor I was wearing a lose short dress

Nelo: "that's not my child" I covered my eyes with my hands while shaking my hand

Me: "you not sure of that"

Nelo: "I am it can't be my child that's impossible"

Me: "don't say it impossible coz you were having sex with her"

Nelo: "I told you nana no one else would have my children but you"

Me: "yet you've made someone else pregnant" he held my hands moving them from my face he was kneeling in front of me

Nelo: "nana please you have to believe me"

Me: "I can't Nelo please don't expect me to"

Nelo: "please stop crying that's the only time we can be rational about it" I shook my head

Me: "it hurts sbonelo knowing that you gona have a child with someone else it hurts so bad" I sobbed harder he took my head pressing it on his chest

Nelo: "I'm sorry you hurting nana seeing you hurt is hurting me too"

Me: "please take us home"

Nelo: "no!"

Me: "Nelo please"

Nelo: "I can't nana I know if I let you leave now like this you going to dump me I cant nana please don't make me do it"

Me: "I want to go home I don't want to have to deal with all of this" he held my head moving me from his chest making me look at him

Nelo: "I'm not losing you nana especially over something that is not true"

Me: "you not sure of that" he looked away from me for a second that made me cry harder

Nelo: "nana please stop crying"

Me: "I can't Nelo don't you get that it hurts I don't want this pain"

Nelo: "I can make it all go away" I looked at him but my vision was blurry I blinked a couple of times dropping fresh tears

Me: "you can ... How" he wiped my tears using the back of his hand but they kept coming out he held my face bring his face closer to mine and kissed me and he made love to me right there on the floor in the passage cries of pain turned to cries of pleasure with each thrust I felt my love for him growing stronger with each thrust I could feel him begging for me to let it all go he kept his eyes on me as he went deeper while begging for forgiveness making me remember the promise I had made to him to never leave him his lips on mine felt like a vow of love n honesty he made me promise to never leave him as he rammed into me while we both climaxed at the same time we were still lying on the floor he had moved me to be on top of him when Melo started crying I got off him put on my dress leaving my bra n panty on the floor went to melo's room she was in her cot standing trying to get out

Me: "hey there big girl" she streched out her hands to me and I took her

Melo: "nana" she rubbed her eyes

Me: "you might be getting a little brother or sister soon bhabha"

Nelo: "don't say that to my daughter" I looked at him he was standing by the door

Me: "your daddy is hurting me bhabha" I kept my eyes on him

Nelo: "nana" he whined I walked to him

Me: "here" I gave him Melo "I mean with the new baby on the way you need to spend as much time with her as you can"

Nelo: "just stop already"



Me: "mmh" I walked to the kitchen he was right behind me

Nelo: "thought we were ok"

Me: "sex didn't solve anything Nelo I've told you before to stop using it to get your way"

i took out Melo's mashed potato and peas from the fridge

Nelo: "nana im sorry" I put it in the microwave

Me; "sorry that you risked both our health and slept with her without a condom"

Nelo: "nana i di.." Just than the microwave pinged I pushed him out of my way since he was standing in front of it "there was never a time where I didn't use a condom with that girl"

Me: "put her down on her chair so I can feed her"

Nelo: "I'll feed her" I closed my eyes counted from 10 silently before opening my eyes

Me: "just do as I say before you piss me off" he put her down I started feeding her she kept on moving her eyes back n forth between Nelo and I when I was done feeding her I went to change her nappy Nelo was following me around even when I went to dispose her diaper I walked to our bedroom and shut the door on his face when he was trying to get in I immediately locked the door

Nelo: "nana please im sorry"

Me: "it always the same tune with you 'nana please im sorry' every God dam time I swear you say those words more than you say you love me" I heard him sigh

Nelo: "I know and I'm sorry"

Me: "mxm" I moved from the door put Melo on the bed I walked to where his phone was picked up the pieces took the sim card put it in this Vodafone that he doesn't use switched it on set the time and date I went to the door he almost fell when I opened it he was sitting down leaning on

Me: "call her tell her you want a dna test and she must not have an abortion coz if that's your child you won't be able to live with yourself" I threw him the phone I closed the door as he was getting of the floor locking it quickly

Nelo: "can I come in please"

Me: "no!" Melo was sitting on the bed sucking her thumb looking at me like she

understood what's happening I suddenly felt tired and I knew she wasn't about to sleep anytime soon so I took her opened the door Nelo was still sitting on the floor

Me: "I'm tired and I need to nap" he took Melo

Nelo: "I'll take care of her, should I cook"

Me: "if you want to but we going home tonight"

Nelo: "but I thought you guys were leaving on Sunday" it was still Friday

Me: "yeah well things change hey you make plans only to find out your man goes around fucking people without a condom and your child will be having a half sister or brother so basically plans change" he looked at me with pain in his eyes

Nelo: "just don't leave me please"

Me: "I'm not leaving you" relief washed all over his face "one of us has to keep their promise in this relationship" he looked down and nodded

Nelo: "I love you nana with every fiber of my being"

Me: "mmh" I closed the door got under the covers cried myself to sleep.

I woke up a while later it was dark outside I got off the bed closed the curtains turned the light on went to the bathroom my eyes were red n puffy my face was swollen I washed it rinsed my mouth went back to the bedroom took my phone than walked out to the lounge Nelo was watching soccer while Melo was playing on her playmate I walked to the kitchen he had cooked he looked up when he heard the pot opening I smiled to myself when I saw dumplings and mutton

Nelo: "oh you up"

Me: "obviously" I took a plate

Nelo: "I haven't eaten was waiting for you" I thought about not dishing up for him than went against it I took out a second plate dished up for the both of us left his plate on the counter and started eating he came to join me

Nelo: "nana im really sorry please stop crying" I looked at him

Me: "if you say please or sorry anytime soon I swear I'll cut you" he chuckled in disbelief "im not joking"

Nelo: "ok" I continued eating "don't you wana do something fun tomorrow nana" I

looked at him raised my eyebrow than went back to eating “nana”

Me: “let me eat please”

Nelo; “sorry” I shot him a dead stare my phone rang while we were staring at each other it was sebastain he looked at my phone before shaking his head he took it of the counter

Me: “don’t you dare sbonelo!” He was about to throw it he stopped and looked at me the phone stopped ringing only to start ringing again

Nelo: “why is he calling”

Me: “give me my phone and I’ll find out”

Nelo: “you went crying to him”

Me: “ofcos not just give me my bloody phone” he gave it to me and I answered

Me: “hello” he wasn’t saying anything just crying “hey talk to me are you ok”

Seb: “it mom Lelo oh God” he sobbed louder

Me: “what’s wrong with Carmel”

Seb: “she’s in a hospital Lelo please come”

Me: “I’m on my way text me the details”

Seb: “ok”

Me: “hey don’t cry ok she’s going to be fine im on my way” I got off the high chair went to the bedroom Nelo was following me

Nelo: “what wrong”

Me: “it Carmel Sebastian’s mom she’s in the hospital” I took of my dress got dressed in jeans n hoody

Nelo: “yeah so”

Me: “what do you mean yeah so I have to go there”

Nelo: “you want to be there for your ex”

Me; “no I want to be there for my friend”

Nelo: “why didn’t he call his other friends”

Me: “who said he didn’t call them now take me there”

Nelo: “no”

Me: "fine than I'll call a cab"

Nelo: "no you won't you will go to the hospital tomorrow"

Me: "no im going now and it either you take me or I call a cab but just so you know if I take a cab I'll be sleeping at home or at Sebastian's"

Nelo: "you wouldn't"

Me: "watch me" I walked to melo's room got her a jersey went to the lounge took her and her bottle

Nelo; "put my child down"

Me: "you coming or must we go wait for the cab"

Nelo: "fuck! Fine lets go but as soon as you see her we coming back"

Me: "fine with me" we left

Nelo: "I really don't understand why you have to jump for these people"

Me: "id do the same for your family"

Nelo: "that's different my family Is your family"

Me: "and I know Sebastian's mom she's a good person"

Nelo: "she's your ex's mother"

Me: "arg get over yourself"

Nelo: "don't talk to me like that"

Me: "tell that to siwe your baby mama" that shut him up for the rest of the way to the hospital

Nelo: "we'll wait in the car"

Me: "ok" I got off the car ran inside I asked the first nurse I saw she directed me to where they were waiting when I got to them stacy saw me first and came running to me

Stacy: "Lelo" I picked her up

Me: "hey baby " I walked to the others Ethan was pacing up n down

Me: "hi" he gave me a hug

Ethan; "hi" we looked at Sebastian who looked like the world is coming to an end Ethan just shook his head and took stacy I walked over to Sebastian our eyes met his eyes were red his face was turning pink he just started crying again I gave him a hug he held

on to me his chest was rising and falling so fast his heart was beating fast I held onto him for what felt like hours until he stopped crying

Me: "what happened to Carmel"

Seb: "they hijacked her on the freeway they shot her Lelo who does that 2 times on her stomach why didn't they just take the car n money left her stranded rather than shooting her"

Me: "I'm so sorry Sebastian how is she doing"

Seb: "they still working on her they operating on her right now I'm so scared Lelo" he held me tighter

Me: "hey she's going to pull through believe me"

Seb: "what if she doesn't"

Me: "she will where is logan"

Seb: "in Cape Town im sorry I made you come all this way"

Me: "hey I would have came even if I was out of durban but I was actually close by" he looked at me confused

Seb: "where"

Me: "not now"

Seb: "oh I'm surprised he let you come"

Me: "is stacy aware of what's happening" I changed the subject hoping he will go with the flow he sighed before answering me

Seb: "no I don't think so"

Me: "that's better was Carmel driving alone"

Seb: "yeah thank God she refused to take stacy with her"

Me: "yeah" we sat down he rested his head on my lap I kept playing with his hair

Seb: "I love you Lelo"

Me: "have you called the others"

Seb: "there's no point in calling them now I'll do it in the morning I just wanted you here"

Me: "ok I get it"

Seb: "how did you get here"

Me: "Nelo his outside with Melo" we saw a doctor coming to us we stood up and went to where Ethan was standing stacy had fallen asleep in his arms

Ethan: "how is she"

Dr: "we done operating we were able to remove the bullets luckily there's no damage on her organs she's still in icu though"

Ethan: "can we see her"

Dr: "she's no awake yet but yes she's not allowed in though" he pointed to stacy

Me: "I'll stay here with her" Ethan gave me stacy they followed the doctor to where Carmel was I sat down with stacy on my lap awhile later Nelo came to me

Nelo: "we should go Melo is asleep"

Me: "give me a minute we'll go just now I'll come out as soon as they back from seeing her" he looked at stacy and raised his eyebrow

Nelo: "ok than" he left I let out a sigh the last thing I want is Sebastian meeting Nelo especially right now after what felt like hours they came back

Me: "hey how is she"

Seb: "I don't know there's so many machines hooked on her"

Ethan: "she's going to be fine sebastian" I gave Ethan stacy sebastian looked like he was about to start crying again

Me: "you guys should take her home she can't be here at this hour"

Ethan: "yeah we should leave son"

Seb: "we can't leave mom like that"

Ethan: "we'll come back early in the morning"

Seb: "I guess" we all walked out

Me: "I'll see you guys tomorrow" we shared hugs

Ethan: "thank you for coming do you need lift or you going to sleep over" Nelo was already standing outside the car with his hands in his pocket

Me: "no im ok"

Ethan: "ok" we left sebastian and I standing there

Me: "you going to be ok?"

Seb: "I guess I will" he kissed my forehead

Me: "I'll see you in the morning"

Seb: "I love you" I smiled we hugged again I walked off going to Nelo he opened my door for me Sebastian was still standing there looking at the car as we drove off

Nelo: "looks like his not over you"

Me: "don't start"

Nelo: "and what's up with all that hugging and kissing on your forehead"

Me: "I'm with you sbonelo not him so stop analyzing things unnecessarily"

Nelo: "I see"

Me: "I hope so"

Nelo: "I called siwe"

Me: "and"

Nelo: "she refuses to take a dna test she says it might the baby"

Me: "she wasn't thinking about it when she was threatening to have an abortion"

Nelo: "what am I going to do"

Me: "I don't know but sort it out im not gona live my life with uncertainty for the remaining months of her pregnancy"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "I'm sorry Nelo but you can't expect me too"

Nelo: "so if that child is mine you leaving me"

Me: "I thought you said it impossible for it to be yours and now there's a possibility"

Nelo: "that's not what I'm saying"

Me: "just take us home Nelo im really tired I want to be around my family"

Nelo: "I'm not letting you walk away from what we share nana"

Me: "I'm not walking away"

Nelo: "I know if I let you go home now chances of us surviving are close to none" I let out an irritation huff

Me: "you can't keep me at your place forever"

Nelo: "maybe but I can try"

Me: "don't be silly"

Nelo: "for you id be anything" for some stupid reason that made me smile

Me: "anything?"

Nelo: "anything" he whispered and I giggled

Me: "I'll hold you to that"

Nelo: "I love you Lelothando Lisakhanya Tolo"

Me: "I also love you"

Nelo: "so does that mean you not mad anymore"

Me: "don't get it twisted im pissed off but that doesn't mean I don't love you"

Nelo: "is there hope that you will stop being pissed off soon"

Me: "nope"

Nelo: "not even if I get you that Dior handbag we saw online" I tried to not show my smile he looked at me and laughed the bag was absolutely amazing and expensive

Me: "you not buying your way out of this"

Nelo: "but I can try" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "if you want to I won't say no" he chuckled

Nelo: "I see"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I hate seeing you unhappy"

Me: "than stop making me unhappy"

Nelo: "that's going to be my mission for the rest of our lives"

Me: "I hope you succeed"

Nelo: "I have every intention of doing so"

Me: "I'll be here cheering you on"

Nelo: "my own cheerleader should I get you a tiny uniform" I laughed

Me: "don't be crazy" we got to his place he took Melo we went in the house Melo woke up as Nelo was laying her down in her cot she rubbed her eyes and smiled Nelo picked her up



Nelo: "there's daddy's little bhabha" he threw her up and caught her a couple of times she was laughing hard

Melo: "nana dada" she raised her hands to me and I took her she wrapped her hands around my neck

Nelo: "when will this child learn to say daddy"

Me: "when it the right time"

Nelo: "shuuuu when will that be"

Me: "I don't know go prepare a bath for her so I can get her ready for bed"

Nelo: "ok" I took of her clothes and diaper than gave her a bath got done dressed her up laid her down in her cot with a bottle in her mouth than went to take a quick shower

Nelo got in the bedroom as I was putting my pjs on

Nelo: "why didn't you tell me to join you"

Me: "I didn't want to"

Nelo: "ouch!"

Me: "yep and you not sleeping here"

Nelo: "yoh! Hayi nana what's this now we always sleep together"

Me: "not tonight I need peace"

Nelo: "I won't bother you"

Me: "I'd rather you slept somewhere else"

Nelo: "but nana you not being fair"

Me: "what's not fair is you going out there fucking people and bringing that shit to me"

Nelo: "nana im sorry"

Me: "I don't care now please excuse me"

Nelo: "I'll sleep on the floor"

Me: "fine by me" I went to melo's room took her monitor than went to sleep he took a blanket laid it on the carpet than took another one got under it I watched him hitting the pillow a couple of times before settling down I switched off the lights got under the covers and slept.

.

When I woke up the following day I was on top of Nelo I punched him on his chest he eyes flicked open

Nelo: "morning nana"

Me: "what are you doing here and why am I on top of you"

Nelo: "you were crying in your sleep I couldn't just ignore you"

Me: "Oh you should have woke me up"

Nelo: "Were you having a nightmare"

Me: "probably"

Nelo: "that child is not mine nana I could hear from your cries and mumbling that you scared" I tried getting off him but he held me tighter

Me: "Nelo let go of me" he flipped us over getting on top of me

Nelo: "I love you ok and I belong to you in every kind of way" he wiggled his hips forcing my thighs to open so he can get between them I gasped when he pressed his tip on my entrance the material of my pj shorts felt too thin

Me: "neelo get off me" he moved his hips again pressing his D harder against me I found myself moving my shorts aside he didn't waste anytime to burry himself deep in me we cried out at the same time after bapsing he put me on top of him and kissed my head we just laid there in silence eventually I drifted off to sleep.

When I woke up again I was in bed alone I got off the bed made it I could here melo's blabbering in the lounge I went there

Me: "hey" I kissed her cheek she was on the floor when I was walking away Nelo pulled me back making me sit on his lap

Nelo: "why am I not getting a kiss"

Me: "cause you've been bad"

Nelo: "I thought you loved it when I'm bad" his voice suddenly changed to being seductive

Me: "yeah well"

Nelo: "I can take you to the bedroom and show you just how bad I can be"

Me: "no thank you" I gave him a quick kiss and got off him

Nelo: "we going out"

Me: "oh yeah I was still wondering why you guys look so adobs" they were wearing shorts n vests with all stars

Nelo: "I'm a man nana you can't say I look adorable that's just doesn't sound right" I laughed

Me: "you do look adorable though"

Nelo: "mxm" I laughed

Me: "you guys had breakfast"

Nelo: "yeah you food is in the microwave" I warmed my food and ate than took a bath got out wore shorts tank top and all stars than we left for sun coast we watched an animated movie it always surprised me how Melo focused on cartoons after the movie we went to the arcade played games than had lunch took a walk on the beach by the time we went back it was late I had forgotten my phone I went to the bedroom took it I had lot of missed calls from sebastian and my other friends I called him first

Seb: "hey where have you been I was worried"

Me: "sorry something came up and I forgot to take my phone with me, how is Carmel doing"

Seb: "she's ok out of icu and she's up"

Nelo: "hey nana think we could.." He stopped talking when he saw that I was on the phone

Me: "that's good and I'm sorry I couldn't come today"

Seb: "it ok I get it Lelo"

Me; "I promise I'll come tomorrow im really sorry"

Seb: "it fine I have to go" he hung up I let out a sigh and laid on the bed Nelo got on top of me

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing im just tired"

Nelo: "rest Melo is asleep I'll go buy dinner and maybe rent out some movies"

Me; "ok" he gave me a soft peck and got off me I just laid on the bed I couldn't sleep

after over 30 minutes I was still up nelo's phone was ringing non stop I finally got fed up and answered it

Me: "hello" nobody spoke "hello"

Caller: "Hi can I speak to Sbo" I chuckled she had a soft voice

Me: "his out"

Caller: "can you tell him to call me"

Me: "I'll say who called coz your number is not saved"

Caller: "oh it siwe" I sat up

Me: "ok siwe I'll get him to call you"

Siwe: "are you always like this to his girlfriends"

Me: "like what"

Siwe: "kinda polite"

Me: "it how I am and I wasn't aware you were nelo's girlfriend"

Siwe: "yes I am and we having a child"

Me: "that must be nice Melo will have a younger sister"

Siwe: "you not angry"

Me: "why would I be"

Siwe: "if my bf got another girl pregnant and was planning on marrying her I'd be furious"

Me: "his planning on marrying you"

Siwe: "yes ofcos my parents would never allow for me to have a child out of wedlock so he has to marry me"

Me: "that must be nice" just than Nelo got in I gave him the phone

Me: "it your fiancé" he looked at me puzzled and took the phone

Nelo: "hello .... Ei voestek why are you calling me ..... What did you say to Lelo did I not tell you to leave her out of this ,..... Just stop bothering me ....., you must be delusional there's no way I'm marrying you ....., for all I know that child is not even mine .....,,"

he chuckled "how far you say ..... You must be really stupid Siwe you and I weren't even together 3 months ago we had broken up remember..... And now why are you crying

just stop with the crocodile tears ..... Just lose my number and find your child a father”

he dropped the call shaking his head

Me: “so you getting married”

Nelo: “mxm she’s sick lona can you believe it the only person I’ll marry is you”

Me: “she seems to have another idea”

Nelo: “nana she says she’s almost 3 months pregnant but I left her close to 4 months ago I never saw her after that”

Me: “oh”

Nelo: “she’s crazy nana and there’s just no way that child is mine it impossible unless she stole my sperms”

Me: “it impossible?” I couldn’t hide the hope in my voice he got closer to me held my chin making me look at him he didn’t even need to say anything his eyes spoke volumes my tears started dropping I launched for him wrapping my hands around his neck he let out a huge sigh and held me closer pressing our bodies together

Nelo: “it impossible nana” I nodded and kissed his neck

Me: “I love you”

Nelo: “I love you more and don’t ever doubt me like that again” I shook my head

Me: “never”

Nelo: “good now let’s go watch a movie” I giggled and pulled back from our hug I got off the bed he took a blanket we went to watch a movie while cuddling on the couch Melo woke up later we all sat on the couch with Melo on her daddy’s lap and my head resting on his shoulder we slept really late that night.

.

Sunday we spent it in doors Nelo took me to see Carmel a little later than took us home since he was going back to work on Monday. Time flew by Carmelo got out of hospital I went to visit her in her house she Insisted that I sleep over I had to share a bed with sebastian I don’t know why he wouldn’t tell his parents that we broke up at first it was so awkward I was wearing his tshirt and it kept on going up eventually I fell asleep but true to his word he didn’t do anything we just slept, my Dior handbag got delivered on

Wednesday I was madly in love with it. A week later school opened and it was hello grade 12 I was so excited couldn't wait to be done with high school and be a student mom had already set out a study timetable for me it was typed and printed out stuck on my clipboard next to my desk she wanted nothing but A's through out the whole year and I wasn't planning on disappointing her.

.

( Kwandile: "so this is how a person carrying twins look flip Lelo you huge" I rolled my eyes and sat on the couch next to Nelo

Me: "thank you kwandile hey"

Nelo: "she can't even see her toes" I started crying

Me: "it your fault sbonelo" I tried getting up but I couldnt Nelo stood up and pulled me up they laughed

Me: "oh you laughing it all jokes for you two I can't even see anything beyond this stomach maybe I should just take a knife cut myself and take out your children"

Kwandile: "yeah cut them out Lelo this is all nelo's doing" they laughed harder

Me: "I look like a fucken huge Orange"

Nelo: "a sexy orange nana"

Kwandile: "sexy but huge"

Nelo: "fuck off Kwandile" they continued laughing I left them there went to the bedroom) was talking to Kwandile earlier on he was laughing at me reminding me of how I was when I was pregnant

## **part 99 I am scared of lonely**

It was Monday first day of school Nelo woke me up with a call

Me: "hello"

Nelo: "you sound so sexy" I giggled and sat up rubbing my eyes

Me: "do I"

Nelo: "totally I just got hard"

Me: "what a waste" he laughed

Nelo: "this house is so lonely without my girls"

Me: "I feel lonely without you next to me"

Nelo: "it sucks"

Me: "I know baby" he sighed

Nelo: "I miss you" we hadn't seen each other in over a week

Me: "I also miss you"

Nelo: "ready for school"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "can I pick you up im not working today"

Me: "I'd love that"

Nelo: "great! I'll see you soon nana"

Me: "see you soon"

Nelo: "I love you"

Me: "always and forever"

Nelo: "always and forever nana"

Me: "later" I dropped the call, got off the bed charged my phone plugged my iPod to the speakers and played music. I made my bed and prepared for school when I was done I gave myself a final look on my full length mirror my yanky tied into a messy bun I had my diamond studs on, nude lipstick dark eyeliner my skirt was shorter than the one I had the previous year way above the knee it stood on my mid thigh. I took my blazer phone turned off the music took my school bag and left after locking my room I went to have breakfast mom and Mike were already eating in the kitchen

Me: "morning parents"

Them: "morning"

Mike: "ready for school Lelo"

Me: "ready as I'll ever be dad"

Mom: "didn't realize that skirt was that short think we need to get you a new ones, are they all the same height"

Me: "yes and I love them"

Mom: "but.." I cut her off

Me: "I love them"

Mom: "ok"

Mike: "eat we running late"

Me: "Nelo is taking me to school" they looked at each other

Mike: "is that so"

Me: "yes"

Mom: "that explains the short skirt"

Me: "mom"

Mom: "go to school Lelo this is your last year in high school I need you focused"

Me: "mom we've talked about this before and I am going to school"

Mike: "we just want what's best for you"

Me: "I know and I think I proved that I can handle my school work last year my results were the best I've ever had nothing but A+"

Mike: "yes but sbonelo was not around dbn"

Me: "ok I get it"

Mike: "good lets go honey" they stood up kissed my cheeks Mike took his cot n messenger bag while mom took her cot messenger bag and purse

Me: "I love you guys"

Them: "love you too" they left I had just finished my cereal when Nelo called saying his outside I opened the gate for him and went to rinse my mouth than took my stuff walked out locking the main door behind me Nelo standing next to the drivers door parked in front of the main door

Nelo: "there's my beautiful first lady " he opened his arms and I ran into them we shared a tight hug

Me: "hey baby" we broke the hug and kissed I was on my toes with my hands around his neck and his hands grabbing my ass I pulled back coz I could feel him getting hard he pressed his forehead on mine

Nelo: "God Ive missed you"



Me: "I also missed you"

Nelo: "let's get out of I don't want you to be late" he let go of me and I moved from his body when I turned Thobeka was standing by the main door staring at us

Me: "hey"

Thobeka: "hi you guys good"

Me: "we good why you just standing there"

Thobeka: "I just got here" she showed me the bottles she was holding "the kid are out of milk so I'm here to make some before they all wake up crying"

Me: "oryt I'll see you later"

Thobeka: "bye"

Nelo: "tell Melo we love her" I thought my mind was playing tricks on me when I saw her blushing

Thobeka: "I will" Nelo walked me to my side opened my door before jumping in on his side we drove off Thobeka waved

Nelo: "she's so weird" I chuckled

Me: "hawu why you saying that"

Nelo: "I don't know nana it just the way she looks at me" I frowned

Me: "how does she look at you"

Nelo: "I can't explain it nana but it makes me uncomfortable"

Me: "think she might be crushing on you" he looked at me quickly before turning his eyes back on the road

Nelo: "she can crush all she wants im yours now stop frowning"

Me: "things would be so much if you were a little ugly" he laughed

Nelo: "well that's a first"

Me: "seriously baby I can't handle all these woman wanting you"

Nelo: "it doesn't matter who wants me coz I only want you"

Me: "I hope so"

Nelo: "you it for me nana you fulfill my every need and want"

Me: "I hope so" he brushed my thigh

Nelo: "I'm taking you home after school I just wana burry myself in you while you in that uniform" his hand went higher my breath hitched

Me: "in my school uniform"

Nelo: "you look so fuckable pull up your shirt I wana see your skin"

Me: "it Monday morning Nelo stop being nasty" he chuckled

Nelo: "I cant help it" I just shook my head

Me: "control yourself"

Nelo: "oh well I will try"

Me: "good"

Nelo: "mom was asking if Melo if could come visit for the weekend"

Me: "no"

Nelo: "no?"

Me: "she just got back from your parents house like two weeks ago"

Nelo: "yeah so"

Me: "ayi no not now"

Nelo: "what's your problem"

Me: "I don't have one"

Nelo: "you just being like for no reason"

Me: "not now Nelo she will go visit but not now"

Nelo: "well you call mom and tell her that"

Me: "she's your mother"

Nelo: "I don't have a problem with her going there you do"

Me: "so after school will you pick me up" he chuckled

Nelo: "you think you smart" I gave him a smirk

Me: "I know I am"

Nelo: "yeah I'll pick you up"

Me: "great" I started singing along to the song that was playing while moving my head a little

Nelo: "how about we let Trey songz sing nana"

Me: "what you tryna say" he chuckled I know I have a terrible voice but I'm so good at remembering lyrics it just not fair

Nelo: "just let him sing and we'll enjoy his voice"

Me: "you suck"

Nelo: "yeah I do and well too since you call me God every time I do" I laughed

Me: "that's not what I mean" i continued singing all the way to school

Nelo: "I love you ok"

Me: "I love you more" we got off he took my bag from the back seat and gave it to me

Nelo: "see you in a couple of hours"

Me: "cool" he held my chin and brushed our lips together "just kiss me already" he chuckled and gave me a slow long kiss I pulled back when I was running out of breath but he brought me closer to him again and sucked on my bottom lip biting it a little than pulled back

Nelo: "you look so fuckn hot with swollen lips now everyone who looks at you will know you have a man" I rolled my eyes giggling

Me: "so that was you marking your territory again"

Nelo: "totally I'd give you a huge as love bit right here" he brushed my neck where it was visible "but I don't wana get you in trouble"

Me: "oh well thank you for being considerate" he chuckled

Nelo: "don't be sarcastic coz I'll do it"

Me: "you cant do that"

Nelo: "wana bet"

Me: "no"

Nelo: "good now come here" he grabbed the back of my neck and indulged in my lips again I found myself letting out a small moan he pulled back smiling

Nelo: "I love the sound of you moaning it such a turn on"

Me: "stop being a perve" he chuckled

Nelo: "I love you and have a good day"

Me: "love you too"

Nelo: "stay away from sebastian"

Me: "arg"

Nelo: "I mean it promise me"

Me: "fine I'll stay away from him I promise"

Nelo: "good" he gave me a soft peck and a light spank I took my bag and crossed the road he waited for me to get in the gate than got in the car and drove off. I went to find my friends they were all there already I was so shocked when I saw sebastian

Me: "my God! Sebastian what did you do" he ran his hand through his now dirty blonde hair

Seb: "don't you like it" he looked absolutely hot his hair was a little short at the back but long in front falling to his face

Me: "what?! I love it"

Seb: "just thought I should go back to my natural colour"

Me: "I didn't know you naturally blonde"

Seb: "only dad has brown hair logan and I just colour ours"

Me: "wow"

Kate: "stop drooling" they laugh

Me: "fuck off"

Kate: "what you didn't even greet us we haven't seen you since the opening"

Me: "I know I'm such a bad friend how are you guys" I gave them all hugs sebastian held on to me a little longer than he should but I wasn't complaining he smelt amazing

Me: "I see you changed your cologne" I whispered while we hugged

Seb: "just trying something new this year, you like it?"

Me: "you smell amazing"

Seb: "you look beautiful"

Me: "thank you"

Trey: "seems like I'm never gona get this hug" sebastian and I let go of each other laughing

Me: "come here hot stuff" Trey rolled his eyes and gave me a hug we all started talking

about our holidays until it was time for assembly after assembly we went to our different classes soon it was the first break when I came out of my class I bumped into someone my bag fell I missed a step bending down to pick it up when I brought I head up It hit someone

Me: "bloody hell"

Voice: "fuck!" It had that thick British accent I got up only to find this tall dark guy with broad shoulders holding his lip

Me: "watch where you going hey" I tried to seem not fazed by his looks

Him: "you gots to be kidding me man watch where I'm going dude you bumped into me and now I got s busted lip because of your big head"

Me: "hey my head is not big" I brought my eyebrows together

Him: "my lip definitely has a different story" I took my bag

Me: "ass whole!!" He pulled back my bag as I was walking off

Him: "apologize" I showed him my middle finger silently thanking God I had gotten a manicure on Saturday I grabbed my bag and walked away until I reached my friends they were already eating

Shane: "what's wrong"

Me: "bloody ass wipe" I told them what happened and they laughed

Court: "ass whole"

Me: "tell me about I mean my head is not even that big"

Trey: "I know him his in our class his new his family just moved from England"

Mzo: "that's why his got a stick up his ass milady" he tried using an accent we ended up laughing

Me: "I'm starving didn't even get a chance to go to the cafe"

Seb: "I got you food" he gave me a hot dog and soda he was also having the same

Me: "thank you hun" I kissed his cheek and started eating

Zee: "can't wait for the ball" the girls squealed in excitement besides me

Mzo: "ish there's still that stupid thing"

Shane: "it the first day of school you guys are already talking about that shit"

Court: "I hope Steve asks me to go with him" we all laughed

Trey: "Steve as in nerd steve as in the guy who is in a swimming team"

Court: "yeah whats wrong with him"

Trey: "you should just go with me"

Court: "why you"

Trey: "why not me"

Court: "I don't know but I never thought about going with you"

Trey: "well think about it"

Me: "are you actually asking her to go with you Trey" he looked at us with a huge smug grin

Trey: "yes yes I am Courtney what you say wana go to the ball with me" she looked down giggling

Zee: "my my Courtney are you blushing" the grin on trey's face was priceless

Court: "I'll go with you"

Trey: "great"

Me: "oh wow"

Kate: "wow indeed"

Shane: "who you going with Lelo" my eyes automatically landed on sebastian he was also looking at me but I looked away quickly

Me: "I doubt if I'm going"

Seb: "what why" I shrugged

Me: "just"

Shane: "ice skating Saturday?" We all shouted yeah

Seb: "I'm having a party this year for my birthday mom wants to throw it for me the big 18"

Shane: "nice bru"

Kate: "that's in two weeks right"

Seb: "yep"

Trey: "we so there"

Zee: "obviously" the bell rang we went to class, the rest of the school day was dull the 2nd break was spent talking about sebastian's birthday what everyone is going to wear who is going to be performing the car he thinks his parents is going to buy for him soon it was after school. The girls and I were walking out the gate when I saw Nelo standing across the street out of his car

Zee: "you guys are back together"

Me: "yeah"

Court: "wow I saw it coming though"

Me: "I guess"

Kate: "poor Sebastian"

Court: "don't start kate"

Zee: "melo's dad is hot" we laughed

Me: "I'm so telling Thulani"

Zee: "we broke up"

Me: "why"

Zee: "he got what he wanted and when he was tired he left me"

Court: "shit sorry bra"

Zee: "it cool Lelo warned me but I was too infatuated to listen"

Kate: "it seems like it runs in the family to be heartbreakers hey Lelo"

Me: "it not my fault they broke up and I told zee that Thulani is a player before they started going out"

Zee: "it not your fault"

Me: "let go I'll see you guys tomorrow" I walked to Nelo

Nelo: "hey nana" he took my bag and gave me a baby kiss

Me: "hi" he put my bag in the back seat I went to my door got in while he also got in

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing im just tired"

Nelo: "your sure"

Me: "yeah kiss me" he held my face and kissed me I let out a huge breath and allowed

myself to get lost in his kiss

Me: "you know you my peace right"

Nelo: "and you my home" he kissed my forehead "wana talk about who upset you"

Me: "I'm not upset"

Nelo: "you sure"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "ok let's get out of here" he drove off "what you gona eat"

Me: "I'm not hungry just wana get in bed and have your arms around me"

Nelo: "ok who upset you tell me so I can go beat they ass up" I laughed

Me: "no one baby I'm just pmsing my periods are close"

Nelo: "oryt"

Me: "what did you do today"

Nelo: "sort out a couple of things for Okuhle trading"

Me: "oryt wake me up when we get home"

Nelo: "oryt" I looked out the window counting the cars n trees until I fell asleep Nelo woke up me when he parked the car I left my bag in it we went up he opened and I got in

Nelo: "where are you keys"

Me: "at home" I went straight to the bedroom changed into his tshirt went back in the lounge he was making a sandwich I opened the balcony door and closed all the curtains the lounge and kitchen immediately turned dark I sat in front of the tv Nelo gave me a sandwich with a glass of warm milk

Me: "thank you" I started eating he was staring at me

Me: "what"

Nelo: "I just love you" I nodded he took my plate n glass when I was done eating came back with a blanket we cuddled on the couch watching a movie until I fell asleep.

When I woke up I was in bed with Nelo wrapped up around my body I tried moving but he held me tighter

Me: "let go baby I need to pee"



Nelo: "but it feels so good"

Me: "sbonelo bru!"

Nelo: "ok ok come back quick" he let go I got off the bed went to pee that's when I noticed blood guess my period I went out of the bathroom to the bedroom took a tanpon and my toiletries took a shower than went to bed Nelo was asleep again I snuggled in closer he held me

Nelo: "mmh you took a bath"

Me: "yeah you need to take me home"

Nelo: "called your mom and told her you not well she's letting you sleep over but she needs you at school tomorrow"

Me: "ok cool" we slept again. Nelo woke me up when dinner was ready he cooked we had dinner than played video games went to sleep.

.

The following day we woke early he dropped me off at home before going to work my uniform was already laid out on my bed I just got dressed than had breakfast mom n Mike got in while I was eating

Mike: "look whose home how you feeling" they started eating

Me: "period pains but I'll live"

Mike: "how come you don't come for your check ups anymore"

Me: "I got a new gyna"

Mom: "why what's wrong with Mike"

Me: "seriously mom you gona ask me that question"

Mike: "yeah what's wrong with me"

Me: "you my dad I can't have you all up in my business like that it embarrassing" they laughed

Mike: "point taken"

Me: "yeah and im running late let's go mom"

Mom: "let me finish eating" I went to rinse my mouth when I got back downstairs she was done we left

Mom: "I've been thinking"

Me: "about"

Mom: "you and sbonelo"

Me: "oh"

Mom: "think you shouldn't see him during the week"

Me: "why"

Mom: "you need to focus"

Me: "his not a distraction he never was"

Mom: " Mike and I think he is"

Me: "I see"

Mom: "so you won't be seeing him"

Me: "I didnt agree to that"

Mom: "I'm not asking you"

Me: "guess im not listening"

Mom: "stop being stubborn"

Me: "stop being a dictator"

Mom: "Lelothando!!"

Me: "no mom talk to me get my opinion about it im not a child"

Mom: "but Lelo you have to focus on school"

Me: "I'll manage with school I won't be going to his place during the week but don't tell me to not see him"

Mom: "fine"

Me: "thank you"

Mom: "God you stubborn"

Me: "no im not"

Mom: "exactly" she chuckled. She dropped me off at school everything was cool at school until last period I had accounting that ass hole and I were in the same class at least I was sitting with Trey who kept on laughing at me after class he pulled me aside but Trey was right behind me

Trey: "back of dude"

Guy: "just want her to apologize look at my lip" it was swollen

Trey: "dude ain't like you gona be kissing someone lets go Lelo" Trey took my hand and we left.

The rest of the week was cool Saturday we went ice skating. The 2nd week flew by Friday the girls and I went shopping for Sebastian's birthday

Kate: "I heard sebastian is bringing a date"

Zee: "oh he didn't say anything to us"

Court: "who told you"

Kate: "shane"

Zee: "mmh"

Kate: "it is his birthday anyway he can do whatever he wants and it not like his got a gf"

Court: "I guess" zee bumped me on my arm

Kate: "didn't you hear Lelo"

Me: "nah he didn't tell me"

Kate: "oh well he doesn't owe anything anyway"

Me: "ok I've had it what the fuck is wrong with you you've been a bitch since school opened what did I do" she crossed her arms and rolled her eyes

Zee: "calm down"

Me: "No man fuck this shit tell me Kate what did I do"

Kate: "you selfish Lelo you don't even bother asking what's happening with our lives"

Me: "look I don't ask coz I mind my own business if you got something to share with me tell me"

Kate: "the least you can do is look beyond the 'im ok' reply"

Me: "point taken how are you Kate"

Kate: "I'm fine!"

Me: "anything you wana talk about"

Kate: "Ryan dumped me after 4 bloody years he just dumped me he met someone on campus" she started crying

Me: "oh katey why didn't you tell us"

Court: "Kate you should talk to us" we shared a group hug

Me: "his an ass"

Kate: "I want to hate him"

Me: "sleep over at my place"

Kate: "really"

Me: "yeah all four of us"

Zee: "great"

Court: "I need to call mom first"

Me: "kyle will have to take you guys home so you can get your things first"

Them: "cool"

Me: "wine and junk food as soon as we done getting our outfits for tomorrow"

Zee: "cool" they called their parents and they agreed we finished shopping got our wine n junk food kyle picked us he kept on complaining we had to go to morning side, glenmore and mhlanga before going home. We had a good slumber party slept late woke up the following day coz Siya was pounding on the door

Me: "what?!" He laughed

Siya: "you look horrible"

Me: "thank you big bro"

Siya: "mom says come down for breakfast"

Me: "ok" I woke the girl up we took turns washing our faces and rinsing our mouths than went down for breakfast everyone was already sitting around the table

Mom: "morning girls"

Court: "morning mrs Williams" we sat down and started dishing up

Zee: "can I get hot sauces" we all laughed besides my parents they just looked as us like he grew horns I went to get it for her. Later on around 17:00 we all got ready for sebastian's birthday I wore a really short navy dress with long sleeve and open back wore navy chunk heels tied my yanky into a messy bun put on hoops we were all wearing short dresses just different colours and designs Siya dropped us off. The party

was amazing sebastian got his bmw convertible he took me for a drive the same time leaving his date alone the whole time through out the part he was next to me.

.

Time flew by nobody had heard from dad since Christmas his phone was either on voicemail or it rang unanswered Siya was busy organizing things for his grad we were supposed to go to Cape Town so this one day mom went to dads workplace coz Siya was starting to stress about him when she got there she was told he got a transfer and now stayed in johannesburg I called him one night his gf picked up and told me to stop bothering him they have a child on the way and getting married soon that was the last we ever heard of him up until now. Mom Mike kyle the kids and I went to Cape Town and my brother looked amazing in his graduation outfit he was still doing his masters though. The transfer guy name was delroy smith after awhile I ended up apologizing just so he can stop bothering me Nelo almost beat him up when he grabbed my hand as I was getting out of the gate Nelo was picking me up things got weird when he started asking me out he couldn't take no for an answer. Sebastian and I were cool he had just started dating some girl from Glenwood high he was keeping a secret from the girls and I but Trey let it slip during accounting class. It was now May mom and Mike were officially tying the knot everyone was excited.

### **part 100 I am scared of lonely**

The day of mom's wedding God blessed her with a beautiful warm weather the wedding was happening at home in the backyard they wanted something small and intimate with just family and close friends I was the maid of honor Siya and kyle were both best men Melo was the flower girl. Mike's face turned pink when mom walked down the aisle she looked amazing in her plain cream white body hugging strapless long dress her hair tied up revealing her beautiful face honestly speaking she was the simplest bride I've ever seen and she looked absolutely amazing I had on a short flowy lavender dress with no straps Melo looked like a princess in her white puffy dress and a tiara the boys had black suits with black shirts Mike was wearing a black tuxedo with a cream white shirt.

There was 100 glass chairs 50 on each side the aisle had flower petals instead of a red carpet all the way from the beginning to end, the ceremony was amazing their vows had almost everyone in tears I even saw Nelo wiping his tears quickly when he thought no one was noticing. After their were pronounced husband n wife we moved to the round tables for lunch there was no huge tent each table had it own umbrella than there were lights all over the backyard the swimming pool was also covered in lights and flowers they created a beautiful dance floor between the tables at the far end they had an open bar with a bartender the waiters started serving food while a live band played soft music after the exchange of the vows was done Nelo and his daughter were by my side through out the whole night he was so emotional and affectionate he kept on reminding me how much he loves me how happy I make him he must have done something right in his previous life for God to bless him with me and Melo I even stopped putting on lipstick coz he kept on kissing me and I loved every moment of it so I didn't stop him. Mom n Mike had their first dance when the song was finished couples started joining them Nelo and I were among those couples my man can move he had a hand around my waist holding me tight and guiding me since I knew nothing about slow dancing at times we would just press our foreheads together looking deep into each other's eyes and express our emotions the love Nelo and I share definitely grew that day just when I thought I couldn't love him more when I thought it was impossible to love him more than I already did I was proven wrong. When the wedding was over mom n Mike left for Madagascar Nelo's parents took Melo with them when they were leaving the cleaning company was coming in the morning people stayed behind drinking Nelo and I left immediately after his parents left there was just too much sexual tension between us we didn't even want to stay behind and drink with the others he started stripping me as soon as he opened the door by the time we got to the bedroom we were both naked and I had my legs around him we made crazy love even shedding a few tears during the session. The following day I woke up first went around the house picking up our clothes than made breakfast we had breakfast in bed and went back to having our sex marathon we only got out of bed to shower and eat, he took me home the following

day which was Monday morning I had school and he had work. I stopped taking the injection it was making me gain weight after a lot of yelling and sulking he calm down I started taking pills even though the first month he would hide them when I was visiting him he stopped hiding them when he saw that it wasn't benefitting him coz I wouldn't have sex with him or I'd force him to use a condom.

.

June exams came and went, after exams it was time for our ball sebastian and I were going together. My friends and I we were all going together the boys pitched in and hired a limo I was with sebastian, Trey with Courtney, zee with Mzo and shane with kate it just made sense to us rather than inviting new people to our circle. the day of the ball mom and I spent the whole day at the hotel spa by the time we left I felt relaxed my skin looked amazingly flawless we went home we got there just as this lady who was going to do my hair and make up was coming in I had a weave on I didn't want it taking the attention away from my face so she just blow dried it and tied it into a messy bun than I got dressed into a tight fitting long dress with lace all over the back stopping where my ass crack starts with a slit all the way up my thigh up until the very top of it and no strappes with a line between my breasts so I wasn't wearing a bra it was baby blue, when I was done wearing the dress she did my make up eyebrows on check smokey eyes on point topped off with a dark lipstick I put on my white heels as the lady left my room I was checking my self out when Nelo walked in with Melo on his arm I turned to face them with a smile Nelo whispered something to Melo and she giggled Melo: "daddy says you look beautiful nana" I smiled shyly Me: "tell daddy I said thanks" he got closer to me turned me around to face the mirror than held my waist Nelo: "that's my life right there you two" Me: "you my life as well" he put Melo down Nelo: "you look beautiful nana" Me: "thank you" Nelo: "wish I could go with you"

Me: "me too"

Nelo: "behave ok"

Me: "i will, I love you"

Nelo: "always and forever"

Me: "always and forever"

Nelo: "your friends are downstairs"

Me: "I'm a little nervous"

Nelo: "don't be you look amazing and you gona have fun"

Me: "ill see you tomorrow"

Nelo: "no im picking you up at the after party"

Me: "I'm cool with that"

Nelo: "good now can I kiss you or im going to ruin your face"

Me: "kiss me" he dropped his head bringing his face to mine and we shared an amazing long slow kiss we pulled back when the door opened and mom came in

Mom: "you making the others late" Nelo moved from in front of me he had his back on my mom while trying to adjust his pants hiding his hard on I giggled a little

Mom: "you look so beautiful baby oh my God" she came closer to me and made me turn so she could see the back

Mom: "I'd kiss you right now but I rather not" she looked at Nelo and back at me we laughed

Me: "what you tryna say mom"

Mom: "just that, fix your lipstick dear" I took my lipstick from my clutch bag reapplied it than we went downstairs the boys and Zee were there

Mike: "ooh honey she looks beautiful" mom nodded

Me: "thank you dad" Trey whistled I gave them hugs

Seb: "you look beautiful Lelo" he whispered in my ear as we hugged

Me: "thank you and you look dashing" he was wearing a baby blue chinos flooded at the bottom with a baby blue blazer a lose white tshirt and white all stars

Seb: "you smell good too but than you always smell good" Nelo cleared his throat and



we let go of each other Mike took pictures than they walked us outside Nelo held my chin making me look at him as the others were getting in the limo

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "I love you ok"

Me: "and I love you more just you no one else ok" he nodded and gave me a baby kiss

Nelo: "don't let him touch you please"

Me: "I wont"

Nelo: "promise me"

Me: "I promise"

Nelo: "good now go have fun I'll see you a little later" he kissed my forehead we got blinded by s flash light a little Mike was taking our picture

Me: "later" I walked to the car sebastian held my door open and helped me in before getting in closing the door behind him

Zee: "I'm so excited" she clapped her hands and we laughed at her

Mzo: "calm down crazy pants"

Trey: "we've got alcohol" he took out a bottle of champagne from the ice buckets

Seb: "don't you think we should get to kate and Courtney first before opening that"

Trey: "do we have to though"

Me: "yeah it only right"

Trey: "fine" the drive to Kate's and Courtney's was short soon we were all in the car on our way to southern sun hotel having champagne we got there posed for pictures with our partners than took group photo the speeches went by slowly no was paying attention we had dinner when it was done than dancing. When the ball was over we went to the room upstairs we had a room rented out so we could freshen up and change for the after party after changing we left the after party was at ballito beach I let my guide down and got drunk ended up making out with sebastian. My friends and I we were all sitting in a circle drinking and telling stories I had my head on Sebastian's shoulder when I saw Nelo walking towards us I stood up stumbling a little said by goodbye left them complaining about me ditching them started walking to Nelo

meeting him halfway

Nelo: "you drunk" I giggled

Me: "you smart" he shook his head put my arms over his shoulder and his arm around my waist

Nelo: "had fun"

Me: "yeah I'm a little hungry though"

Nelo: "I'll feed you"

Me: "I love you daddy ka Melo" he chuckled and lifted me up to his shoulder and walked a bit faster we got to the parking he put me down and opened my door I got in he went to his side and drove off

Nelo: "burger is fine"

Me: "yeah you know you should really consider getting a smaller car something sporty from bmw "

Nelo: "is that so"

Me: "yeah" he stopped at a drive through bought food we left again I ate in the car we got to his place I went straight to the bedroom and sat on a couch by the corner he came and kneeled in front of me

Nelo: "you tired" I nodded "wana take a shower before sleeping" I nodded "will you be able to stand" I nodded and he chuckled "I doubt" he took of my clothes got me dressed in his tshirt took wipes from my toiletry bag cleaned my face gave me pills than put me sleep I felt him getting in after a while and pulled me to him holding me tightly

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you" I dozed off

.

Soon school opened again for the 3rd term and acceptance letters from different universities started coming in including different bursary offers I was so confused I had three main options that I was actually considering the other things I had just applied for to please mom not that I was interested in it I had a choice between BCom Accounting at Uct sebastian had already accepted his offer for that one, medicine at wits or at Dut

doing radiology. Asa and Sthe also had their minds set on Dut, kate was going to London her sister had gotten a job there a year ago, Courtney and Trey were officially dating and planned to go to jhb together and rent a flat, zee was going to do physiotherapy at Ukzn westville, shane was going to take a gap year learn about his family business before going to business administrative in 2013, Mzo was also going to uct for BCom accounting. We all had our varsities picked up and had received acceptance letters way before final exams started. Final exams came I didn't see Nelo up until I was done with them I wrote well.

Melo's birthday was around the corner Nelo and I were fighting coz he wanted to throw her a party which I thought was ridiculous one thing that he asked made my heart stop beating I started sweating and gasping for air he made me think about something I've never thought about since we started dating in 2008

Me: "I seriously see no reason to have it Nelo she had one last year"

Nelo: "she will have another one this year" he yelled

Me: "stop yelling at me im right here"

Nelo: "stop being stubborn all im asking is that we throw a party for our daughter's 2nd birthday she deserves to have a party every year"

Me: "now that's just ridiculous she had a party last year she will have another one the following year"

Nelo: "what if I'm not alive next year what than" I didn't even answer I just sat on the bed burried my head in my hands "you don't know what the future holds nana if it was up to me we would celebrate every time she turns a month old"

Me: "we'll do it we'll have the party" we ended up having the party for her but it wasn't big as the one she had when she turned one.

.

It was December 21 I was turning 18 like there are few birthdays that matter and those are 1 16 18 21 31 and 50 the rest are just cool everyone around the house was excited well my siblings are always excited when it comes to alcohol and meat we were having like a formal lunch thing during the day than a small circle of us was hitting Florida at

night as usual Nelo woke me up with a call

Me: "hey baby" he started singing happy birthday

Nelo: "happy birthday my future"

Me: "thank you baby"

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you more"

Nelo: "that's debatable"

Me: "there's nothing debatable about it" he chuckled

Nelo: "I'll see you soon"

Me: "come early ok"

Nelo: "ok nana now wake up"

Me: "who said I was still asleep"

Nelo: "me you forget how well I know you"

Me: "yeah yeah shut up I'll get up" he laughed

Nelo: "later nana"

Me: "later" he dropped the call I got off the bed made it opened the door people were already setting up outside in the backyard, i went to the bathroom rinsed my mouth washed my face than went downstairs

Mom: "happy birthday lelo wam" we hugged she gave me a baby kiss

Me: "thank you mom"

Mike: "happy birthday angel" he also gave me a hug n kiss on my forehead

Me: "thanks dad but where the presents at" they looked at each other and laughed

Mike: "later"

Me: "cool" I went to the kitchen aunt dolly was feeding Melo

Dolly: "happy birthday baby"

I kissed her cheek

Me: "thank you mah" Melo looked at me batting her eye lashes

Melo: "birthday"

Me: "yes bhabha it my birthday today" she clapped her hands together

Melo: "cake"

Me: "as much cake as you want"

Melo: "kiss" I went to her she held my face with her tiny hands and gave me a baby kiss she laughed when I kissed her nose

Me: "I love you"

Melo: "ove you nana"

Me: "where's everyone"

Dolly: "the boys are outside helping and Philisiwe is helping Thobeka bath the twins"

Me: "I'll give her a bath when she's done eating"

Dolly: "ok your breakfast is in the oven everyone else has eaten"

Me: "thank you" I warmed my food got a glass of juice and ate sebastian called while I was eating

Me: "hey you"

Seb: "birthday girl how are you"

Me: "I'm great n you"

Seb: "I'm good, happy birthday"

Me: "thank you" there was silence

Seb: "so what you doing"

Me: "you running your hand through you hair right" he chuckled

Seb: "maybe" I rolled my eyes

Me: "you still coming right"

Seb: "yeah I'll come through with the boys but Trey n Courtney are coming together"

Me: "cool so what you got for me" he laughed

Seb: "a present is a surprise" Melo pulled my leg and I lifted her up sat her down on the counter

Me: "you know I hate surprises"

Seb: "I'm still no telling" Melo took a beacon from my plate started eating but I grabbed it from her and she frowned twisting her mouth just like her dad

Melo: "nana!"

Me: "you know you can't eat this"

Melo: "give me" I shook my head

Seb: "what's going on"

Me: "it Melo she .." I didn't even finish my sentence she pushed the plate right over the counter to the floor and it broke I hung up on sebastian

Me: "what's wrong with you" she crossed her hands over her chest and looked at me with her eyes half closed

Me: "yoh! I can't deal with you Ngcobo people"

Melo: "down!!"

Me: "don't scream at me" I lifted her off the counter she stormed off as soon as her tiny feet reached the ground mom was standing by the door

Mom: "what started all of that"

Me: "bacon" she laughed

Mom: "she's just like you"

Me: "I have never been like that"

Mom: "tell that to someone who didn't raise you"

Me: "mmh no ways that attitude that's all sbonelo"

Mom: "and you too"

Me: "ei mom let me clean this up"

Mom: "tell Sbonelo he might as well buy me a dinner set for Christmas coz she's still going to brake more of my plates" we laughed

Me: "tell him when he comes here" I cleaned up and went to look for her after we looked everywhere I still couldn't find her I was getting worried even called Nelo he said he was leaving immediately over about 30 minutes we had looked everywhere even outside we searched the whole yard only to find her asleep under the table in the dinning room Nelo picked her up went to lay her down in my room

Nelo: "what happened nana why was she upset" I told him what happened he just laughed and pulled me in for a hug

Me: "she's getting stubborn Nelo I can't deal"

Nelo: "see how annoying a stubborn person can be"

Me: "don't start" he kissed my head

Nelo: "happy birthday nana" I moved my head from his chest looked at him and smiled

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "I know"

Me: "mxm" I stood on my toes he brought his face closer and we kissed he picked me up I wrapped my legs around him he walked to the door pressed me against it while locking the door I tried unbuttoning his shirt but he held my hand I moved my lips from his started kissing his neck

Me: "make love to me" he let out a small moan when I sucked his neck

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "please"

Nelo: "we in your mother's house with our daughter sleeping right next to us on your bed"

Me: "we'll use the floor I want you" I wrapped my legs tighter bringing him even closer

Nelo: "nana we can't"

Me: "we can please" he moved his neck from me and held my face looking at me

Nelo: "later"

Me: "now please I cant wait for later" I begged

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "please" I brought his face to mine and kissed him again only this time with hunger

Me: "touch me feel how wet I am" he moved his hand shifting my pj shorts aside and muttered a curse when he felt how wet n hot I was

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "put your fingers in me" he shoved two fingers in me I held him tighter and started moving he groaned and put me down he adjusted his chinos and held my hand we walked out of my room straight out of the house to the car without saying a word we got in and he drove off he parked at a deserted area moved his chair to the back a bit he started kissing me his hand in my hair while his other hand is moving all over my body

brushing my breast and pinching my nipples his hand gets my punani pulling my shorts aside he eased two fingers in me automatically I flexed my hip with a moan he fingers moved in and out of me slowly while I was tongues danced together

Nelo: "sit on me and face the windshield" I did as he said with my legs on either side of him I heard him unzipping his pants before he moved my shorts aside again

Nelo: "lift your ass up" obeying him came naturally when it comes to sex and I groaned holding onto his knees as he entered me going fully in he cursed his hands went to my waist and I started grinding using my feet to balance going up n down feeling him go in and out he lifted me up and sat me down on him fast n hard it didn't take long for my walls to tighten around him

Nelo: "that's it come for me nana let daddy hear you" his teeth grazed my earlobe he bit it that was my undoing he lifted me up bringing me down into him fast n hard quickly with a loud groan he filled me with his come I let my head hit the seat still on top of him we looked at each other and smiled

Me: "hi"

Nelo: "hi feeling better"

Me: "certainly"

Nelo: "God I love you"

Me: "I love you but let's get out of here" he lifted of me and I frowned at the loss of him in me

Nelo: "I'll sleep in you tonight ok" that got a giggle out of me

Me: "ok" he did his zip

Nelo: "think I need to go freshen up and change before the party or everyone will know what we were up"

Me: "yeah just drop me off at home than you can leave" he gave me a soft peck and drove off

Nelo: "I like it when you beg me like that"

Me: "arg don't be too much" he laughed

Nelo: "please Nelo please I want you make love to me please" he tried sounding like me



and I laughed at him

Me: "acting like you didn't want me as much I did"

Nelo: "oh I wanted you believe me I always want you"

Me: "oh I know" I gave him a grin he nudged me playfully we got home

Nelo: "I'll be back now now don't lose my daughter again"

Me: "if she doesn't go cray cray we going to be just fine be" I gave him a soft peck while holding his cheek "be quick ok I love you"

Nelo: "I love you more" I got off the car pain shot right through me I watched him drive out of the gate and walked in the house I was in pain I could feel that my step was a little wobbly

Siya: "what's wrong with you why you walking funny"

Me: "nothing im fine" Philisiwe laughed and came closer to me

Phili: "I bet the way you and Nelo rushed out of here has something to do with your walk" she whispered

Me: "fuck off Philisiwe not now" she laughed and went out I walked to my room Melo was still asleep I took a long bath after bathing I joined my daughter in bed we slept.

Woke up when i felt someone shaking me I opened my eyes Melo was up

Melo: "nana"

Me: "mmh"

Melo: "daddy" her lips were trembling she started crying

Me: "his coming bhabha don't cry" I got off the bed and took her in my arms "let's bath so that he can see how pretty you are in your new dress" I wiped her tears she nodded I gave her a bath than dressed her up in a cute barbie flowy dress

Me: "you look pretty bhabha" she looked at herself smiling

Melo: "pwetty"

Me: "pretty my angel let me kiss you" she pouted and I got closer to her but as soon as the door opened and Nelo came in she left me standing and ran to him he picked her up

Melo: "daddy"

Nelo: "there's my princess" she wrapped her hands around his neck

Melo: "nana says I look pretty"

Nelo: "you do look pretty" he walked over to me and kissed my forehead

Me: "hey you look handsomely hot"

Nelo: "thank you nana people are starting to come in you should get dressed"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "we'll go downstairs mom wants Melo"

Me: "I'll be down soon"

Nelo: "ok"

Me: "you have love bites by the way" he chuckled

Nelo: "I noticed"

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "I'm not complaining at all" they walked out I got dressed and went downstairs  
mom n Nelo's mom were laughing

Me: "hey mah"

N's mom: "happy birthday sweetie" she gave me a hug

Me: "thank you"

Mom: "was just telling her that sbonelo owes me a dinner set"

Me: "he does" I looked around the house

N's mom: "they just stepped outside dear" I smiled

Me: "thank you" I walked out the backyard was done it had a long table that formed a U with a stage at the far end where the band and the DJ is going to be playing and a buffer with an open bar next to it my girls were already there sipping on cocktails keeping the bartender company. Later on the party started people said their speeches mom cried while talking it was actually funny coz I was a little tipsy by the time the speeches started Siya kyle Philisiwe Sthe n Asa sang to me by the time they were done I was in tears with laughter coz they all horrible singers, sebastian had brought his guitar he also sang to me which irritated Nelo but I loved it when all of that was done we all sat around the table like a giant family and ate Nelo was next to me with his daughter on his lap he kept on whispering sweet nothings in my ear which made me giggle the entire

time. When we were done eating they brought in my cake Melo started clapping and bouncing up n down her dad's lap as soon as she saw it everyone sang happy birthday for me Nelo n Melo helped me blow out all the 18 candles than it was time for presents everyone who was there had brought a present when I was done opening them I had so many gift cards from different shops lot of jewelry and shoes and bags than mom gave me a small box

Mom: "it from Mike n I" I opened it I was a little confused at first coz it was empty up until a car started hooting and flicking lights

Me: "mom dad what's going on"

Them: "happy birthday baby" I screamed and gave them hugs before running to the car Siya came out of it I jumped on him he picked me spinning me around

Siya: "happy birthday lil sis" it was a red Mini Cooper S convertible it already had a car seat for Melo in it I started crying Siya let go of me when Nelo was near us I just burried my head on his chest

Nelo: "emotional much" he said playfully

Me: "stupid much"

Nelo: "hey look at me" I did he wiped my tears kissing my forehead "you deserve it nana" I looked at mom n Mike

Me: "I love it guys I love you both" Mike nodded while mom smiled

Mike: "his right you derserve it baby you've been a good kid you made mistakes but learnt from them that's all we hoped n asked for"

Me: "aah dad"

Mike: "I think sbonelo has something to give to you" I looked at Nelo

Me: "what is it" he got an envelope from his back pocket and gave it to me it was a card

Me: "what is it"

Nelo: "petrol card" we laughed

Me: "thank you daddy"

Mike: "daddy"

Me: "shit I mean baby" Nelo and I laughed he held both my hands

Nelo: "I know you will say no I understand now I was a little selfish and inconsiderate before but I get it your ambition your dreams and goals I'll be here with you through out everything I asked your parents before but they said no I was angry at first but I get it now I understand they want you to make it on your own as much as you also want that I'll be here cheering you on and when you've accomplished all that your heart desires I'll be here to take you as my wife the mother of my children I love Lelothando and with this ring I promise you a future that promise will turn into a reality as soon as you ready for it" he took out a ring box in was a ring I couldn't say anything but just cry I cried as he put it in my ring finger on my right hand "one day it will move to your left hand I know I suck when it comes to keeping promises but this is a promise I intend to keep through out everything I love you nana"

Me: "I love you" he held my chin and gave me a soft short kiss

Nelo: "what you say we take this baby for a spin" he winked at me and I nodded

Me: "I don't think I can drive right now im too emotional" I gave him the keys he opened my door I got in he went to his side he hooted once before driving off. By the time we got back from our drive and from having another bapsing session everyone that we were supposed to go clubbing with was drunk the dj was playing good music we ended up not going.

.

For the first time I didn't spend Christmas at home we spent it at nelo's house just the 3 of us he wanted to start our own traditions but we spent Christmas Eve at home because Melo wanted to be with the twins when they opened they presents. We celebrated nelo's birthday at his place as well just the 3 of us again Melo and I spoilt him rotten later we went to his parents house his whole family was there even uncles n aunts and they kids n grandkids we had a braai at 12 the fireworks went off Melo watched the whole thing fascinated it was hello 2012 with me and my mini family. We went to Kwa'Max the following day with his friends and their gfs.

.

Time went by on 6th of January matric result came out there was a B next to my name

with 7 Az mom cried when she saw my results I didn't even need to think about it or talk to anyone about it, I couldn't go study in another province I had a daughter to think about I wanted to be here around DBN close to my daughter and man. So even though mom gave me a silent treatment saying I was getting in a backseat of my life by not going to the another university by choosing to do a diploma instead of a degree but my mind was made up and I decided to go to Dut and do radiology, Asa n Sthe were also going there Sthe was doing Marketing while Asa would be doing BioMed. I was happy with my decision so was Nelo and at the end of the day I felt like that all that matters.

### **part 101 I am scared of lonely**

Registration process was a BITCH !!! Hha but eventually I registered along with sthe and Asa, mom refused to let me get res I think she and aunty Zinhle (sthe's mother) conspired us against coz they wouldn't even listen to what we had to say even when we suggested sharing a flat around musgrave "you have a car you got a limitless petrol card your bank card always has cash so you staying right here at home it not even a 20 minutes drive" that's what my mom would say every time I asked to move out so I ended up staying at home. Unlike sthe and I Asa was going to stay at res since her home was too far she got a res on campus at Steve Biko campus. Sebastian finished registration at uct him and Mzo got a flat close to campus even though mzo's dad stayed around Cape Town he didn't want to stay with him and sebastian couldn't stay at his vacation home it was a bit far. Trey n Courtney were both going to Wits renting a flat together it crazy how they relationship started out as a joke to Trey coz they married with two beautiful boys now. Once everyone was back from sorting out they things before campuses opened we all met up at gateways to say goodbye with one another before our lives as varsity students started. Siyabulela was doing his articles at a Law firm in Pretoria kyle was doing his 4th year my lawyer brothers. I got my license 2nd week of January hha corruption I had to pay off the people at the testing ground so I wouldn't fail it even though I was an expert at driving I had 3 guys teaching me how to drive Nelo who had patients of a saint Kyle who kept on teasing me and laughing at me

when I messed up and ofcos Siyabulela who would pinch my thigh when I messed up, but I still had to pay ai South Africa futhi.

Anyway I woke up Saturday morning made my bed opened the widow it was a beautiful sunny day I went to take a bath, got out lotioned as I was looking for something to wear the monitor went off

Melo: "nana!!! Get me out" I took out a robe from my closer "nana get me out" i quickly tied my robe went to her room she was up standing in her crib

Me: "morning bhabha" she raised her arms up

Melo: "take me"

Me: "no greet first say it good morning nana"

Melo: "no! Take me"

Me: "I'm not gona take you out"

Melo: "nana!!" She crosses her hands over her chest

Me: "bye im leaving you in there" I pretended like I was walking towards the door

Melo: "good morning nana" like the attitude when she said it hha

Me: "there we go now come to nana" she raised her hands and I took her out of the crib

Melo: "I'm hungry" she played with the necklace I was wearing that sebastian gave me for my birthday it was white gold with a small diamond

Me: "let's get you cleaned up so you can eat" we went to my room

Melo: "I popped" i laughed taking out her diaper

Me: "I can tell" she covered her nose with her hand and laughed

Melo: "daddy says im a big girl if I pop in the potty I'll get cake"

Me: "daddy is going to make you fat with all these things he gives you"

Melo: "fat" I put her in the bathtub

Me: "yes fat"

Melo: "what's fat" I laughed

Me: "nothing bhabha" after bathing her I dressed her up in denim short jumpsuit and gladiators

Melo: "pretty" she touched herself

Me: "you look pretty maNgcobo wam" I packed a bag for her than we went downstairs aunt dolly was there making breakfast

Me: "morning mah"

Dolly: "morning baby" she took Melo and gave her a kiss before putting her down again "her food is in the fridge" I took it out warmed it and fed her after feeding her I had breakfast than got dressed in a cool short lose dress with sandled heels let my weave lose I took melo's backpack and my handbag put it in the car than buckled her up in her car seat I got in played some music sebastian's love for Justin beiber' music was rubbing off and Asa hated it. I drove off to nelo's apartment got there parked took out our bags letting Melo carry hers we went up I had my key as soon as I opened Melo started shouting the TV was on but he wasn't in the lounge

Melo: "daddy!!" She dropped her backpack

Nelo: "I'm here bhabha" she ran towards the bedroom I followed her he was on his desk topless with his glasses

Me: "hey sexy nerd" Melo jumped for him and he took her

Nelo: "hey sexy wife of mine" I giggled

Me: "not yet" he stood up walked to me

Nelo: "soon" he was barefooted with nothing but his pj bottoms

Me: "how are you" he kissed my forehead Melo already had her arms around his neck

Nelo: "good now that my girls here"

Me: "I'm not staying just dropping her off"

Nelo: "where you off too"

Me: "gateway with my friends" he looked at me from my head to my toes his eyes staying on my exposed thighs and legs a little longer than he did in other parts of my body the look in his eyes made my inside clenched

Nelo: "you look good enough to eat"

Me: "I thought I always did" I whispered

Nelo: "I wish you only did when you with me" he adjusted his hold on Melo

Me: "oh"

Nelo: "maybe I should bend you over that desk and fuck you hard before you go out"

Melo: "fuck" I snapped out of his gaze

Me: "hayi tshin Melokuhle what did you just say" she laughed

Melo: "fuck" she repeated Nelo was looking at her with a frown on his face

Me: "you need to watch what you say with her around her sbonelo"

Nelo: "yeah neh eish talk about ruining the moment" we laughed I walked out of the room he followed me

Nelo: "so you gona give me some or what"

Me: "no Nelo you know I forgot to take my pill on Wednesday I have to wait at least for like 7 days so it can pick up again"

Nelo: "but nana I can't wait that long" I poured juice im a glass

Me: "you want juice"

Nelo: "no I want to feel your juices around my D.." He looked at Melo and chuckled "around your favorite part of my body" I laughed

Me: "don't be silly"

Nelo: "I'll pull out"

Me: "no you won't"

Nelo: "I will I promise"

Me: "mmh let me leave I dont want to keep the others waiting im late already" I gave Melo a baby kiss she hadn't let go of her father's neck Nelo moved his head making it go down to my level and gave him a short wet one

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "stop sulking I'll see you guys later" I took my bag

Nelo: "we love you"

Me: "I love you guys"

Nelo: "when will you be back"

Me: "probably at night"

Nelo: "I don't want you driving at night nana"



Me: "I know I'll come back before it dark"

Nelo: "ok behave" I held melo's cheeks

Me: "be good for daddy ok"

Melo: "ok" I kissed her forehead and left when I got to gateway everyone was there already

Me: "hey guys" they chanted hey we shared hugs

Seb: "we were buying tickets and you weren't here yet so I bought you one"

Me: "thank you but pop corn n soda is on me"

Seb: "I'm cool with that" Trey was whispering something to Courtney she kept on giggling

Kate: "can you guys stop already"

Me: "it kinda irritating now"

Trey: "hey no one was complaining when you were busy with Sebastian"

Seb: "I remember lot of complaints from you"

Court: "let us be" we went to buy pop corn soda n liquorish than went to watch a movie an hour and a couple of minutes later the movie was over we all got out

Shane: "well that was a waste of time"

Court: "don't be crazy that movie was nice"

Mzo: "just coz you girl are emotional wrecks doesn't mean that movie was nice" it was such a sad movie the girls and I were crying through most parts of it

Mzo: "it was silly"

Me: "you such a tool" they laughed we walked around the mall doing a little bit of shopping

Me: "can we go eat already"

Seb: "yeah I'm also hungry"

Shane: "sebastian always ready to let Lelo lead the way"

Seb: "shut you shit head" I just shook my head

Kate: "let's go to Murphy's"

Zee: "cool"

Seb: "whose driving"

Me: "I am"

Mzo: "me too"

Court: "I'm with Trey"

Me: "we know" the others laughed she pouted which led to Trey giving her a baby kiss

Zee: "kate came with me"

Seb: "wana drive my car shane I want to ride with Lelo"

Shane: "you know I won't say no to your beast" his enthusiasm was scary sebastian gave him the car keys

Seb: "be careful with my baby"

Shane: "relax" we all went out to the parking lot went our different ways I put my plastics in the boot than got in

Seb: "can I bring it top down"

Me: "yeah sure" I tied my hair into a ponytail so it wouldn't come to my face while he brought the roof down I played music

Seb: "thought Justin was too white for you" I laughed

Me: "just shut up and drive this car man" he started the car

Seb: "yes woman" we drove off to Florida

Me: "when are you leaving"

Seb: "tomorrow orientation starts Monday I need to get familiar with the campus"

Me: "I'll miss you"

Seb: "really"

Me: "yeah"

Seb: "I said I'll ride with you coz I needed to talk to you"

Me: "about what"

Seb: "I love you Lelo it been over a year since you dumped me I tried moving on but it didn't work out"

Me: "oh" I honestly didn't know what he expected me to say

Seb: "I want you back so bad but I also know that you won't agree"

Me: "sebastian"

Seb: "I really do love you I'd be stupid to say I'll wait for you to say I'll keep hoping n praying that he screws up and you will come back to me but I guess I am stupid coz here I am saying all these things to you ... I'll be here Lelo I don't know how long it going to take but I do know that it will happen I love you so much I might be going to Cape Town but I'm leaving my heart behind"

Me: "you can't keep on waiting for me sebastian you were at the party you know his my future im selfish coz I love you both and I don't want you with someone else but I can't be with you"

Seb: "you can still change your mind I know it will make your mom happy as well come to cape town with me"

Me: "you know I can't do that"

Seb: "you can but I get it"

Me: "ok"

Seb: "I love you though and I think I'll always do"

Me: "don't be silly Cape Town is filled with beautiful girls" I said dismissively and he chuckled

Seb: "maybe but I know where my heart is"

Me: "chances are you will meet someone the first week and you will forget all about me"

Seb: "I can never forget about you even if I tried"

Me: "you don't try hard enough"

Seb: "believe me I've tried"

Me: "it will happen"

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" I kissed his cheek than put my hand on his thigh we just sang along the rest of the way. When we got to Murphy's the guys were already having beers we ordered ours and burgers. We had a chilled afternoon drinking and eating listening to good music around 19:00 Nelo started calling I ignored his calls the first few times he

sent an sms

\*you better answer my calls nana if you know what's good for you\* I sighed and went a bit far from the noise and called him he answered immediately

Nelo: "hey wena nana" he shouted

Me: "hi baby"

Nelo: "don't hi baby me why haven't you been answering my calls"

Me: "coz I knew what you were going to say"

Nelo: "good thing you know so me assuming you on your way home is not far fetched"

Me: "I'm still with my friends"

Nelo: "it late come home"

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "no come home before I come drag you from there"

Me: "Nelo it gona be awhile before I see them again please let me be"

Nelo: "I don't want you driving at night" his tone became softer

Me: "I know I'll be home soon"

Nelo: "ok I love you"

Me: "me too"

Nelo: "fok of Lelo" I chuckled

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "was that hard"

Me: "never wheres Melo"

Nelo: "in the kitchen stuffing her face with ice cream"

Me: "you can't be giving her ice cream this time Nelo she won't sleep"

Nelo: "she wanted it"

Me: "doesn't mean you should give it to her you always do this stop giving her everything she wants"

Nelo: "I know I suck at parenting nana I can't say no to her"

Me: "she's got you wrapped around her finger and you letting her"

Nelo: "I'll go take it from her now" I huffed

Me: "there's no point now"

Nelo: "I love you come home"

Me: "I'll be there soon" I hung up went back inside after about 30 minutes I said my goodbyes to the others sebastian walked me to my car

Seb: "so this is it" I shrugged my shoulders

Me: "I guess so" I don't know why but I just felt sad

Seb: "I'll miss you so bad"

Me: "I'll miss you too" my eyes started watering

Seb: "hey come here" we shared a long tight hug he pulled back after awhile and held my chin we looked at each other he leaned in and I met him halfway we kissed a long slow intimate kiss I shut down everything on my mind I shut the world out for those minutes it was just us in each other's arms I forgot we were in public until my phone started ringing the ringtone just told me it was Nelo I pulled back

Me: "I have to go"

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" I unlocked my car he opened my door I got in and drove off with tears blinding me I could smell him on my dress when I got to the parking at Nelo's place I spent about 5 minutes in car trying to calm myself than I went up.

Me: "I'm home" I said as I got in

Nelo: "in melo's room" I went there and they were playing legos

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "you've been crying what's wrong"

Me: "it was the wind I had the top down I need to shower"

Nelo: "ok" I went to the bed took off the dress shoved it deep in the laundry basket took a shower I let my tears blend in with the water until Nelo came in I didn't even hear him I just felt his hands around my stomach and his lips on my neck I turned around to face him

Me: "hi" he smiled

Nelo: "hey" we kissed his hands explored my body i let him I wanted him so I can shove

the thoughts I was having about sebastian far back my mind and he did by the time we were panting catching out breaths after basping I wasn't even thinking about sebastian we got out the shower lotioned got in our pjs went to play with Melo in her room later on we went to sleep.

.  
A week later it was Monday morning lectures were starting I woke up early went to bath got out lotioned got dressed in highwaisted umbrella skirt and a denim crop top wore sandals my phone beeped alerting an sms as I was doing my make up

\*morning beautiful hope you excited about your first day on campus I know you going to have a good day. I love you don't ever forget that\* it was from sebastian I smiled and texted him back

\*hopefully I'll have a good day im a little nervous\* he replied immediately

\*no need to be nervous you got this I know you\* I just smiled carried on doing my make up I let my weave lose took my handbag put a notepad n pencil case in along with my make up kit and wallet took my phone n keys went downstairs Mike was in the lounge watching news

Me: "hey dad"

Mike: "hey baby girl ready to take varsity by storm"

Me: "I know me im always ready" he chuckled

Mike: "I remember you wanting to cry first day at Eden"

Me: "that's in the past dad let it stay there" we laughed

Mike: "ok let me go got an appointment in 20" we took his bag n cot kissed my forehead

Me: "love you"

Mike: "love you kid" he walked out I had cereal and left drove to Riston campus parked and called Asa she was still at res I took my bag and walked to Steve Biko she signed me in we went to her she had a single room we chilled there went to attend when it was time the first 3 lectures were basically introduction such a waste of time lunch time I waited for them near my car sthe was attending at sultan while asa n I were both at riston but asa also had few lectures at sultan Asa came first we waited for Sthe

Me: "such a waste of time"

Asa: "tell me about it"

Me: "how's res life"

Asa: "great! You know me im good at making friends" Asa is the total opposite of me when it comes to being social

Me: "I know and I envy you for that" she laughed

Asa: "that's because you a little coconut"

Me: "no im not" she laughed

Asa: "Lelo honestly speaking that's why you attracted to bad boys you need them to keep you stable or you will go totally white"

Me: "mxm bull" she continued laughing

Asa: "you know I'm right" I saw Sthe approaching us

Me: "I know you stupid get in let's go" we got in I dropped the top we picked up Sthe

Sthe: "girls"

Asa: "bitch ka Lizwi" Sthe chuckled

Me: "lizwi as in Nelo's friend Lizwi as in Samke's man lizwi"

Sthe: "geese you don't have to say it like that but yeah"

Me: "sthembile!!" They laughed

Asa: "start the car you holding up traffic" I started the car drove off campus to north beach Joe cools

Me: "sthe you can't date him how did you even meet and ended up being together"

Sthe: "I'll date whoever I want to date and Asa n I went out with some girls from her res on Friday night Lizwi was there with finoli n Zwe at coco's so we joined them the rest is history but all I can say is that his dick game is on point" they high fived with Asa

Me: "why was I not invited"

Asa: "coz Nelo was not going to let you come he never does so why even bother telling you"

Me: "that's not true he lets me go out"

Sthe: "he lets you go out with those brats from your high school coz they snobs he

knows you won't go out clubbing" I was a little hurt by that statement

Me: "that's not true"

Asa: "yes it is Nelo would flip if you went clubbing without him"

Me: "that's your opinion and just butt out of my business"

Sthe: "don't be defensive we just telling it like it is"

Me: "whatever" I parked the car we all got out and went in at Joe cools found a table outside ordered food n cocktails after eating we paid bought wine and went to Asa's res she played music on her laptop while they drank I was just having water trying to make myself fully sober since I still had to drive and I was spending the night at nelo's while we were talking a knock came through

Sthe: "come in!"

Asa: "look at her acting like it her room" the door opened and in came two boys all swaggered up

Boy1: "we didn't know you have visitors"

Asa: "it cool these are my friends Lelo and Sthe girls that sabelo" she pointed to the yellow bone with thick pinkish lips "and that's menzi" now menzi stood out he was tall a little muscular with brackets peircing on his eyebrow with a tatto on his arm with caramel skin and a short fade

Menzi: "girls"

Sthe: "hey" her voice suddenly turned soft menzi chuckled he grabbed a chair and sat down while sabelo sat on the study desk

Sabelo: "what you girls up to"

Asa: "just having wine"

Menzi: "white"

Asa: "no dry red"

Menzi: "than why is your glass white" he pointed to me with his head I seemed to have lost my speech

Sthe: "it water she's stuck up like that" I shot her a dead stare the boys laughed

Menzi: "I see"



Sabelo: "we got weed"

Asa: "great" menzi stood up took it out from his back pocket that's when I noticed he has another tattoo like a paragraph on his back right top he came to me gave me a blunt I noticed another on his wrist

Me: "I ...I ..."

Menzi: "take it"

Asa: "she doesn't smoke"

Menzi: "pity" he gave it to Asa they all started smoking sharing two blunts the room was filled with smoke I started feeling light headed

Sabelo: "getting high Lelo"

Me: "how coz I'm not even smoking" they all laughed at me

Menzi: "at least we know you can talk"

Me: "excuse me" I took my phone went out stood by the balcony I needed fresh air I just stood there browsing on facebook until someone stood next to me I turned only to find menzi

Menzi: "are you really stuck up as Sthe says"

Me: "just because I don't smoke and I don't wana drink since we had a couple of cocktails during lunch and I still have to drive home now I'm stuck up"

Menzi: "don't get mad"

Me: "I'm not mad" I crossed my hands over my chest and pouted I was actually fed up

Menzi: "you look so cute when you do that"

Me; "cats are cute" he started laughing his laughter made me laugh

Menzi: "so where's home"

Me: "around" he chuckled

Menzi: "rather not tell me"

Me: "yeah and you wheres home"

Menzi: "midrand"

Me: "cool"

Menzi: "3rd year in electrical"

Me: "thought this was a 1st year res"

Menzi: "it is I stay in a flat at musgrave"

Me: "cool" my phone beeped it was a text from Nelo

\*im on my way home nana should I get dinner or you want a home cooked meal\* I

replied immediately

\*buy dinner\*

Me: "look I have to go"

Menzi: "your mom"

Me: "my boyfriend" he looked at me and nodded

Menzi: "cool give me your number"

Me: "you don't know me like that" he chuckled

Menzi: "I'll know you like that when I get your number"

Me: "no I'll see you around" I started walking off

Menzi: "wait give me your BBM pin at least it not so personal"

Me: "fine" I gave it to him we walked back in the room as I was laying on the bed facing the roof

Sabelo: "thought you left Lelo" he laughed

Me: "I'm leaving now" I took my car keys

Sthe: "thought you could drop me off at home mom has a late meeting"

Me: "than we must leave now"

Sthe: "I can't leave now I'm still having fun"

Me: "Sthe I want to leave"

Sthe: "what Nelo wants you home" she stated sarcastically

Me: "no ofcos not I wana go"

Sthe: "fine! Leave menzi can you take me home please" she smiled at him he chuckled

Menzi: "sure but you owe me"

Sthe: "I'll pay in whatever way you want" she ran her tongue over her bottom lip biting it

Me: "now that's settled let me get out of here I'll see you guys tomorrow" I left I got to

nelo's place as he was getting in I parked next to him he opened my door I took my bag and got out

Me: "hey baby"

Nelo: "hey nana" he kissed my forehead "you smell like weed"

Me: "was in Asa's room they were smoking" we walked up and got in the house

Nelo: "I'm hungry I didn't get time to have lunch was on field the whole day"

Me: "go shower I'll dish up n warm the food"

Nelo: "join me"

Me: "I'm not in the mood Nelo"

Nelo: "please" he brought me closer to him grabbing my ass

Me: "hayi Nelo man let go of me" I was actually really irritated

Nelo: "I'll do all the work"

Me: "just go bath before you piss me off"

Nelo: "tjo fine I know when im not wanted" he let go off and went to his bedroom slamming the door after awhile I heard the shower going off I dished up for him left his food in the microwave I went to the bedroom took off my clothes went to the other bathroom filled up the bathtub with hot water and foam I soaked my body in it stayed there until the water turned cold I got out wore my pjs and slept.

When I woke up again the light was on Nelo was on his desk I got off and went to him he was busy drawing and calculating somethings

Me: "you mad at me"

Nelo: "no nana im not you didn't want to I get it"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "I'm a little busy and I have to go to new castle for the rest of the week I'll come back Friday" he wasn't even looking at me

Me: "what's happening there"

Nelo: "work ofcos they need some help at a certain plant there"

Me: "oh why must you go can't they send someone else"

Nelo: "Lelo please im busy"

Me: "sorry"

Nelo: "fine" I went to the kitchen opened the microwave tryna warm my food his food was still there he didn't eat so I went back to him

Me: "you didn't eat" he didn't say anything just nodded "come eat with me"

Nelo: "can you just let me be for 5 bloody minutes im busy" now I was furious

Me: "fuck you bra" I grabbed my bag from the floor

Nelo: "fuck me? Seriously fuck me"

Me: "you heard me ass wipe" he chuckled in disbelief I stormed out the bedroom he was right on my heel I took my keys from the counter

Nelo: "where do you think you going"

Me: "where I'm wanted" I was about to reach the door when he held my hand

Nelo: "stop behaving like a spoilt brats"

Me: "ok that's it let go of my hand now" I shouted

Nelo: "calm down and don't yell at me"

Me: "don't tell me what to do!!"

Nelo: "I said stop shouting damit I'll smack you so hard"

Me: "I'd like to see you try than we'll see if your tears will benefit you this time around and let go of my hand now!"

Nelo: "look im sorry ok"

Me: "fine now let go of my hand" he did I went to the door but he quickly stepped in front of it

Me: "move"

Nelo: "don't leave"

Me: "why should I stay when you don't want me here"

Nelo: "I'm sorry nana just that work is hectic and the Richards bay project is taking up more money than we budgeted for"

Me: "I'm sorry about that but don't take it out on me I will not be your punching bag emotionally or physically"

Nelo: "I know I'm sorry"

Me: "cool"

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you too"

Nelo: "I'm hungry let's it"

Me: "mxm come"

Nelo: "kiss me first" we kissed and went to eat after eating he went back to his work I watched tv when he was done we went to sleep.

.

The rest of the week Nelo got more distant when we Skyped he looked tired and stressed out when I tried asking him what's going he just brushed me off saying I won't understand. On the other side Sthe was angry at me coz menzi was giving me more attention than he was giving her he barely noticed her when we were all together the five of us had lunch together most of the time. Nelo and I had a major fight on Thursday night coz I told him I was going clubbing with Sthe and Asa he flipped out on me saying Sthe and Asa are too lose they have no boundaries that just pissed me off he was going on like I don't have mind of my own like I'll let them influence me into doing something I don't wana do he ended the call while we were skyping and logged off the same time I didn't even bother calling him he also didn't.

.

Friday when we were all done attending we met up bought pizza and wine went to menzi n sabelo's flat sthe and Asa had been there before it was my first time going there beautiful two bedroom flat we sat in the lounge eating I just had juice while the others had wine n the boys had beer after eating menzi and I played video games sabelo was teaching the girls how to roll a blunt they had they weed around 17:00 we left went to Asa's room she got her weekend bag we went home all 3 of us took naps woke up when it was dinner time after dinner we got ready I took a quick bath got out lotioned put on my underwear did my make up than got dress in a short dress that was just about few centimeters long after covering my ass with long sleeve black in colour tied my hair into a bun wore navy heels took my small bag just put my make up and card in it

took my phone n keys went to wait downstairs while Asa n Sthe finished up getting dressed mom was at work Mike was watching business news

Mike: "do me a favor"

Me: "yeah"

Mike: "don't drive drunk if you feel like you had too much just call me I'll get a cab come get you girls ok"

Me: "ok daddy" I rolled my eyes

Mike: "I'm serious Lelo it would kill me if something happened to you well that's if your mom won't kill me first" we laughed the girls came down asa was in shorts n denim shirt sthe was wearing a short skirt n crop top

Me: "I will dad I promise goodnight" he sighed

Mike: "goodnight" we left it when we got to Florida as we were walking towards boulevard just outside the club Nelo was standing leaning on his car looking hot in black ripped skinny jean with a black tank top showing his muscles and brown timberlands he was with Finoli and Zwe we hadn't talked since last night when he hung up on me when he saw us approaching he put his hands in his pockets raised an eyebrow we walked right pass them without anyone saying anything we paid entrance fee and got in

Sthe: "oh I see them they got a table outside"

Me: "see who" I looked outside

Sthe: "menzi and sabelo"

Me: "but I thought it was going to be just us three" they giggled we walked outside sat on the couches menzi immediately moved and sat next to me

Menzi: "you look amazing"

Me: "thank you and you look hot your self" he chuckled

Menzi: "I try"

Asa: "what are you guys drinking"

Sabelo: "we actually just sat down like a minute ago"

Sthe: "can we get alcohol already" she n sabelo went to the bar

Me: "stop staring at my thighs" he laughed uncomfortably

Menzi: "sorry"

Me: "it ok just stop"

Menzi: "you look really beautiful"

Me: "thank you" sthe and sabelo came back with a bucket filled with ice a bottle of absolute vodka some lime and soda and 5 glasses sabelo poured for all of us just as I was about to take a sip. Nelo came in with his friends and sat on a couches that were across us Asa looked at me

Asa: "I think menzi should move from there"

Menzi: "what why not"

Me: "she's right"

Menzi: "I'm not moving" Nelo stood up went to the bar I was watching him the whole time he got to buckets one with beer and the other with cognac Zwe helped him he went back to the bar came back with another one with white wine he gave it to finoli who brought it to our table

Finoli: "girls" they greeted him back

Me: "what are you guys doing here" he chuckled

Finoli: "same things you guys are doing having fun ofcos it a Friday night we've had a crazy week at work" Finoli and Nelo work together

Me: "I see and the wine"

Finoli: "it for you Nelo said don't touch vodka or he'll be really pissed off"

Me: "oh"

Finoli: "and remember what happened last time we went clubbing and he got pissed off"

Me: "he said to remind me of that"

Finoli: "no that's just me but you know how his like"

Me: "ok"

Finoli: "now have fun and no vodka one more thing you bru" he pointed to menzi "id suggest you move from that sit if you know what's good for you" with that said he went back to their table everyone was looking at me

Me: “just move menzi I don’t want trouble”

Menzi: “what was that about”

Me: “that’s my boyfriend” I pointed to Nelo with my head

Menzi: “I’m not moving you not his wife he needs to calm down” I sighed poured myself a glass of wine drank it all the same time than poured another one when I lifted my head my eyes landed on nelo’s his sit was facing me as much as I could see him he could see me to

## **part 102 I am scared of lonely**

Sabelo: “your man has 0 chill neh” they laughed

Me: “I think you would also have 0 chill if your girl was sitting n drinking with other guys”

Sabelo: “good thing I don’t have a girl”

Asa: “don’t lie” he chuckled

Sabelo: “honestly im between dates n sheets”

Sthe: “gross”

Me: “you gona die young”

Sabelo: “so what man life is too short anyway”

Menzi: “true”

Sthe: “love is a beautiful thing” I choked on my wine we all looked at her Asa touched her forehead

Asa: “are you ok I think you coming down with flue” we laughed

Sthe: “fuck you”

Menzi: “I think she’s getting sick coz this can’t be the sthe we know” she took a bottle opened it and drank straight from it the boys screamed

Sabelo: “now that’s the sthe we know” we laughed

Me: “I’m not going home with you kak drank”

Sthe: “cool guess I’ll be sleeping at the boys flat coz I’m planing to get fucked up cuz” she high fived sabelo just than Beyoncé – get me bodied started playing



Asa: "I know you hear that Lelo" now that's a song you can't ignore she stood up and pulled me up we moved from the couches and started dancing doing the moves she does on the music video our moves were in sync sabelo stood up and joined us we used his body moving circles around him and dropping to the floor we just looked at each and laughed when the dj changed the song we sat down menzi gave me a fist pump as I was sitting down and we laughed

Menzi: "who knew innocent Lelo can get down" I pushed him playfully

Me: "don't be silly" when I looked over at nelo's table they were all looking at us

Menzi: "his a little possessive" he was also looking at them I turned my attention to him

Me: "just a little"

Menzi: "I don't blame him though I would be to if I had you" I chuckled took a sip of my wine

Me: "I guess"

Sthe: "what are you two whispering about there"

Menzi: "we not whispering just talking about something that doesn't involve you" she chuckled sarcastically I could tell that got to her in a bad way

Sthe: "just so you know that guy over there Nelo her baby daddy will beat the living shit out of you if you try something" Menzi gave her a smug grin than looked at Nelo for a second before looking at me

Menzi: "I'd like to see him try"

Me: "ok enough"

Asa: "yeah let's just move on from this and have fun"

Sabelo: "tequila shots everyone"

Us: "yeah!!"

Asa: "now you talking let's go get it" they went to the bar

Menzi: "the only reason I didn't move from here is because I can take care of myself" he was whispering he looked at his arms and fists and chuckled "besides I can take him" I just laughed and shook my head asa n Sabelo came back with shots we all took one

Asa: "to varsity" we clicked our drinks together licked the salt downed the shots took a

bite of the lemon slice

Me: "woah that burned" we laughed when I looked at Nelo a group of four girls had joined them I felt my face heating up I held my thigh sinking my nails in it he was laughing at something when a girl that was sitting closer to him touched his shoulder I stood up took my bag

Menzi: "where you going"

Me: "ladies" I went to the bathroom Asa followed me we got in the bathroom and I paced up n down

Asa: "calm down"

Me: "don't tell me that" she laughed

Asa: "why you angry they just random girls who joined them and they drinking together nothing much"

Me: "don't patronize me" I splashed water on my face Asa was cracking up

Me: "his letting her touch him Asanda what the fuck!!"

Asa: "you two are just the same I don't know how yall work"

Me: "mxm" I fixed my make up we went back outside I sat down

Menzi: "you ok" I gave him a fake smile and a wink

Me: "I'm fantastic" I finshed my glass when I took the bottle it was empty I huffed

Menzi: "I'll go get you another one"

Me: "no it cool I got it" I stood up went to Nelo "Zwe you good" he chuckled

Zwe: "I'm good I see you good"

Me: "you know me" I sat on nelo's lap with my hands around his neck

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "kiss me" he didn't waste anytime he smashed his lips on mine sucked on my bottom lip biting it a little I moaned that gave him a chance to shove his tongue in my mouth I moved closer to him he held my waist tighter I let go of his neck lifted his top up ran my fingers up n down his packs I pulled back everyone was looking at us I looked at the girl that had touched Nelo gave her the fakest smile ever

Me: "oh hey there" Finoli n Zwe laughed

Girl: "hi"

Nelo: "having fun nana"

Me: "yeah but I'm out of wine" I frowned and he laughed

Nelo: "I've missed you" he kissed my neck sucking on it I tilted my head back giving him more access

Me: "I've also missed you" I held his neck he went on my neck harder biting it I moaned

Nelo: "how's my daughter doing"

Me: "I... Aah ... She's ook" I moved my neck pushing him he chuckled "she's ok baby just misses you" the girl that was sitting next to Nelo moved I just looked at her and shrugged my shoulders Finoli n Zwe couldn't stop laughing

Me: "go get me my wine"

Nelo: "ok" he lifted me of him sat me down on the seat next to him than stood up went to the bar adjusting his jeans first

Finoli: "jealousy"

Me: "there's nothing to be jealous about his mine I think the word you looking for is territorial" they laughed

Girl2: "hi I'm princess" she offered me her hand I just looked at it

Me: "I'm sure you are" I turned my attention back to the boys

Zwe: "ouch" the girls mumbled amongst themselves

Me: "ain't got time for that" Finoli chuckled Nelo came back with my wine he kissed my forehead and sat down

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "you welcome"

Me: "why didn't you tell me you coming here"

Nelo: "I'm not here to ruin your night go be with your friends and have fun but that boy is pushing my buttons"

Me: "he knows I'm with you and he respects that he doesn't like me like that" he chuckled

Nelo: "I see the way he looks at you I've seen it before and it won't end pleasantly" we

were whispering so the others couldn't hear our conversation

Me: "I love you and I really missed you"

Nelo: "give me your car keys"

Me: "why"

Nelo: "coz you finished a bottle of wine you about to start another one and I saw that shot you took"

Me: "oh ok cool let me go get it from my bag" I stood up took my wine went to our table

Asa: "well that was interesting"

Sthe: "I thought you guys were about to fuck each other right here"

Me: "mxm don't be crazy" I took my keys from my bag

Asa: "you leaving"

Me: "no I'll be right back" I went back to Nelo sat next to him but he lifted me to his lap

Nelo: "I prefer you sitting here" I giggled and gave him the keys

Me: "I love sitting on you" he winked

Nelo: "I know you do"

Me: "I wana fuck you it been almost 3 weeks now" he groaned and closed his eyes

Nelo: "don't talk like that im already hard" I laughed

Me: "later"

Nelo: "later" we kissed and I went back to my friends and sat down

Menzi: "you guys can sure put on a show"

Me: "that wasn't no show"

Menzi: "if you say so"

Sabelo: "let get some" they went out after about 10 minutes they were still no back Asa n I stood up and danced

Asa: "you know he likes you right" she screamed

Me: "I don't care" I screamed back and we laughed

Asa: "good don't mess up what you have with sbonelo" I laughed the wine was really working Menzi stood in front of me I don't even know when they came back he started

dancing with me but I moved away when he tried touching me he chuckled

Menzi: "I get it"

Me: "good"

Menzi: "at least turn around and do some booty hoping" I laughed

Me: "don't be crazy" I backed away and bumped into someone Menzi had stopped dancing I turned only to see Nelo

Me: "hey baby" I wrapped my hands around his waist he held my ass

Nelo: "walk away dude" with that he gave menzi his back

Me: "that wasn't necessary baby" he kissed my head

Nelo: "I missed you sitting there isn't helping dance with me" he turned me around and held my stomach we moved together grinding each other my ass pressed directly on his D I moved my ass up n down and in circles he held me closer biting on my ear while breathing down on my neck

Nelo: "I'm so horny right now" he whispered I just laughed we continued dancing until the house Dj started playing he kissed me and we went to sit down in our different places

Menzi: "Sabelo and I are leaving a friend of ours is having a party on botanic you girls wana come"

Sthe: "yeah" asa looked at me

Me: "I can't drive now my dad would kill me if I drove in my state"

Sabelo: "I'll take menzi's car and he will drive yours"

Me: "I'm actually not leaving you guys go on"

Asa: "I'll also stay with Lelo"

Sthe: "come on you guys don't be such a bore"

Me: "you can go sthe if you want to"

Sthe: "I'll go with you guys"

Menzi: "oh" he sounded a little disappointed they did shots of the vodka quickly

Me: "sthe how you getting home"

Sthe: "I'll crash at the flat will come home tomorrow morning"

Me: "are you sure I mean why don't you just stay with us"

Sthe: "i don't want to"

Me: "oh ok be careful"

Sthe: "ain't none to worry about" I looked at Menzi

Me: "take care of her please" he chuckled

Menzi: "if you so worried come with us"

Me: "I cant"

Menzi: "see you guys Monday"

Me: "cool" they left

Asa: "sthe though"

Me: "she's going to be fine right"

Asa: "yeah" we took our bags and my wine went to sit with Nelo the girls were still there

Finoli: "hawu and than"

Asa: "we don't need to explain ourselves now shift so I can sit" she sat between Zwe n Finoli

Zwe: "why did they leave so early"

Me: "house party on botanic"

Nelo chuckled

Nelo: "why didn't you go"

Asa: "as if you would have let her go" they laughed

Nelo: "I would have if she wanted too"

Me: "liar" I think the girls felt left out coz they stood up and went to sit on another table without saying a word we all just looked at each other and laughed

Asa: "why are they leaving"

Zwe: "you two scared them off"

Me: "we didn't do anything"

Nelo: "let's get you drunk mrs Ngcobo"

Me: "you gona take care of me"

Nelo: "I always do"

Me: "great" indeed he got me drunk coz I don't remember what happened after that.

I woke up the following day in bed naked with Nelo wrapped around me also naked my head was pounding i removed nelo's arms n legs around me got off the bed went to pee rinsed my mouth grabbed his tshirt n boxers wore them went out the bedroom asa was asleep in the guest bedroom on top of the covers fully dressed with the door wide opened I took off her shoes and closed the door Finoli and Zwe were passed out on the couches with bottles all over the floor and doggy bags I went to the kitchen found a burger in the fridge warmed it and ate. When I was done eating I took a glass of water back to the room got some headache pills from Nelos closet drank two went back to bed.

When I woke up again I was in bed alone I got up made the bed opened the window went to take a quick shower got out wore sweatpants n vests when I got to the lounge everyone was up eating the house was cleaned

Finoli: "finally you up"

Me; "did I take something of yours with me when I went to sleep" the others laughed

Finoli: "don't be crazy"

Me: "just asking Asa have you called sthe"

Asa: "yeah she said she's going to spend the rest of the week there there's another party they going to"

Me: "must be nice"

Nelo: "wana join her"

Me: "nope I'm perfectly fine"

Nelo: "good come let's eat" I went to him and sat on his lap we shared his food. We ended up having a braai later and everyone left Sunday I took Asa back to res Nelo and I had a date night that night, Monday I went to campus. We were having lunch with Menzi and sabelo Sthe let it slip that they had a three sum on Saturday n Friday night I actually think she just wanted to see my reaction but I didn't care Menzi banged the

table with his fists and stood up and left us sitting at the cafeteria Asa n I just looked at each other speechless.

The following day on Tuesday afternoon Menzi called me asking for directions to my home but I didn't give him said lets rather meet at Westwood he said cool I went to my room rinsed my mouth washed my face got dressed in leggings a low rise vests nelo's baseball jacket and Nike kicks I tied my weave into a ponytail put on lipstick only took my phone n keys and left he called when I was about to reach westwood saying I'll find him at wimpy I saw him as soon as I got in and went straight to him he gave me a hug and pulled out my chair

Menzi: "didn't think you would let me see you"

Me: "why wouldn't i"

Menzi: "just thought you might be upset"

Me: "over you having sex with my cousin nah I'm not upset as long as you guys didn't rape her it was also her choice"

Menzi: "so you don't care that I slept with her"

Me: "I actually don't" a waitress brought two cup of coffees

Me: "I didn't know what you might want to drink and since it cold n I remembered that you like coffee I got you a cup"

Me: "thank you"

Menzi: "what you gona eat"

Me: "I'm not hungry coffee is fine" I had been feeling weak the whole day and sneezing no stop

Menzi: "please eat something"

Me: "I'm fine really"

Menzi: "ok" he got a muffin

Me: "why am I here Menzi" he chuckled

Menzi: "you know ever since I met you this is the first that we get to sit down just the two of us"

Me: "yeah well"



Menzi: "I'm sorry I slept with Sthe I was really intoxicated"

Me: "you don't have to apologize Menzi you don't owe me anything"

Menzi: "I love you Lelo"

Me: "no you don't maybe you just taken a little"

Menzi: "what's not to love Lelo ofcos I love you, you everything I ever thought I could want"

Me: "I'm in a relationship Menzi I don't know what you expect me to do with what you saying"

Menzi: "you deserve so much better Lelo his too controlling you only 18 doing your 1st you don't need someone controlling you like that"

Me: "his not controlling"

Menzi: "he is look at what happened on Friday you need space I can tell he suffocates you Lelo you need someone who will let you explore and find yourself"

Me: "I guess that someone is you a weed head who sniffs cocain and who will go around sleeping with people than blame it on the drugs" he looked down playing with his fingers

Menzi: "sleeping with Sthe was a mistake the cocain is an occasional thing as well as the weed I could stop if you wanted me too is that what you want me to do I'll stop"

Me: "Menzi bra I just told you im with someone"

Menzi: "I don't care Lelo don't you get it I love you shouldn't that be the only thing that matters"

Me: "unfortunately it not look I have to go I'll see you on campus" I stood up

Menzi: "sit down Lelo" I looked at him and sat down

Me: "what is it"

Menzi: "why you doing this to me"

Me: "what did I do"

Menzi: "why can't you just be with me I won't even interfere with your relationship and Nelo"

Me: "I'm sorry but I can't be with you I don't love you like that and if you can't move on

from that I guess we can't be friends" I stood up took my keys from the table and left him sitting there.

I couldn't wake up Wednesday I stayed in bed the whole day n night. Thursday Mike took me to see a doctor I got flue injection antibiotics n other medication by Monday I was better.

.

The week went by smoothly Melo and I were spending the weekend with her dad Nelo and I fucked like rabbits that weekend whenever Melo slept we would get it on by Sunday afternoon when we went home my punani was swollen and on fire I spent the whole weekend in his tshirt with no panties he just took me wherever he wanted to on the couch, kitchen counter, he bent me over on the stove, on the balcony, pressed against the glass door, the coffee table in the lounge, on the floor by the passage little did I know I was getting myself in shit. It was May I was nauseous really moody my breast were getting big I had missed my periods in April and it was towards the month end of May I still hadn't gotten my periods I couldn't eat anything besides dry toast or flap jacks with peanut butter. I just knew shit was about to hit the fan so when I was done attending I hardly spent time with asa Sthe or the boys I spent my lunch breaks at the library so after attending I went pass the pharmcy bought 3 pregnant test I went to nelo's place he was still at work I took all 3 of the tests went to take a shower when I came out I checked the result and all 3 were positive. I cried my eyes out I had so many emotions going on but the thought of Nelo calmed me down I went to rinse my face got dressed in my pjs took the test hide them under my pillow I went to the kitchen made my flap jacks and a glass of warm milk ate in front of the TV I went to get a blanket got under it and watched tv until Nelo came back

Nelo: "hey nana"

Me: "hi" he kissed my head

Nelo: "what's wrong you seem down"

Me: "I'm fine baby"

Nelo: "ok" he went to his room than I heard the shower running after awhile he came

back also in pjs he made a sandwich and ate we cuddled on the couch watching tv talking about random things later we went to bed he made me lie on top of him I looked at him for a very long time he also didn't say anything

Me: "make love to me" he flipped us over got on top of me no questions asked we made slow long love no hard pounding or spanking or anything of that crazy shit our bodies were just rubbing on each other in a slow motion with our hands entwined not one time did he move his eyes from mine we kept our eyes on each other until we came he flipped us again and I got on top of him with him still in me I looked at him and let the tears fall he just kissed my eyes and held me tighter

Nelo: "what's wrong nana talk to me"

Me: "I have something for you"

Nelo: "what is it" I reached over my pillow got the 3 sticks and gave them to him he took them and looked at them for a long time his heart was pounding I could feel it

Nelo: "is this what I think it is" I nodded "nana im being serious"

Me: "I'm not lying"

Nelo: "but how I mean you on the pill"

Me: "I don't know daddy but they all positive"

Nelo: "we pregnant again" I nodded with tears running down my face he flipped us and got on top of me

Me: "I'm pregnant" he gave me the most gorgeous smile ever

Nelo: "don't cry nana this is the best news I've ever heard since you gave birth to Melokuhle" he cupped my face and gave me a heart warming kiss when he pulled back he was in tears he kissed me all over my face down to my stomach he pressed his hand on my stomach I put mine on top of his and he gave another glorious grin

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "mmh"

Nelo: "I love you maTolo I love you so much" he got off the bed and pulled me by my leg to him I laughed he picked me up and spun me around

Me: "Nelo put me down" I was laughing he kept on spinning around I dropped my head

and held on his his head tighter he was still spinning telling me how much he loves me by the time he put me down I was so nauseous I ran to the bathroom made it in time to lose everything I had eaten he was brushing my back saying sorry when I was done I rinsed my mouth and went to sit on the bed he stood in front of me between my thighs just smiling

Nelo: "I'll never be able to show you how grateful I am nana once again you've made me the happiest man on earth maTolo" he held the back of my neck we kissed while his hand played with my clit after another session I collapsed on top of him after we both came the same time he kissed my head brushing my hair

Nelo: "marry me nana I can't wait for you to graduate I can't wait anymore marry me nana"

Me: "mmh" he chuckled

Nelo: "Im saying marry me" he got on top of me tickling me I was laughing non stop telling him to stop he did eventually

Nelo: "marry me"

Me: "you want to marry me just because im pregnant"

Nelo: "no I want to marry you coz I love you, you make me happy n whole, you the mother of my children, my soulmate, my lover n best friend, the love of my life I want to marry you coz we were made for each other" we were staring at each other

Me: "just that" he chuckled

Nelo: "the fact that you amazing in the shack and you an incredible cook, you give me beautiful children and there's no one else I'd rather spend the rest of my life with but you oh and that I know for a fact that our lives would never be boring our sex life will always be amazing and adventurous I love you Lelothando Lisakhanya Tolo marry me be my wife give me the privilege of waking up next to you every morning and going to sleep with you in my arms every night give me the honor to call you my wife take my surname nana let me love for the rest of our lives marry me" I nodded with tears gushing out of my eyes

Me: “be my husband sbonelo there could never be another but you” we kissed had another round of love making and fell asleep

### **part 103 I am scared of lonely**

I woke up the following day when I felt Nelo kiss my face I kept my eyes closed and smiled he was kissing me all over my face when he got to my mouth I held his face we kissed for a long time before he pulled back and I opened my eyes

Nelo: “morning my beautiful wife” the way he said it n looked at me just made me giggle and blush

Me: “morning baby”

Nelo: “slept well”

Me: “yeah n you”

Nelo: “I always sleep well with you in my arms nana you know that”

Me: “I’m glad what’s the time”

Nelo: “10:30”

Me: “you so late for work” it was Friday I had one lecture at 13:00

Nelo: “called in sick” I touched his forehead with the back of my hand

Me: “you sick what’s wrong” he laughed and tried coughing while nodding

Nelo: “I caught that new virus nana” he made a puppy face I tried sitting up but he pressed his body harder on mine

Me: “what virus”

Nelo: “my wife is pregnant virus” I laughed and pinched his shoulder

Me: “you stupid” he laughed and flipped us over so I was on top of him I sat up holding my breast

Nelo: “you only have one lecture today what you wana do” he had my timetable written on his diary including lecture venues

Me: “can I just skip it”

Nelo: “nope”

Me: “but you skipped work” he laughed

Nelo: "there's a huge difference between work n varsity nana" I pouted

Me: "you know you can't deny me anything since I'm pregnant right" he laughed tried moving my hands from my breast but I shook my head

Nelo: "and now"

Me: "they getting big" he winked at me

Nelo: "best part of pregnancy let me see"

Me: "no" he tried moving my hands forcefully but I just laid on him he laughed

Nelo: "you can't hide forever though"

Me: "I know but for now you not seeing them"

Nelo: "you suck"

Me: "I know and I'm pretty good at it judging by how you react when I do it" he laughed

Nelo: "yeah you amazing in it"

Me: "I wana go to the beach before my body is all big I wana wear my bikini and appreciate my body"

Nelo: "you wana walk half naked for other people to see you" I looked at him raised my eyebrows

Me: "don't say it like that it gona be awhile before I can show my body and it not about showing other people I just wana do it for myself"

Nelo: "ok but if I find someone staring at you I'll punch them"

Me: "you such a caveman baby" we laughed

Nelo: "go make me breakfast woman!! Now that's a caveman" he spanked my ass grabbing it

Me: "I'm pregnant you have to take care of me" he chuckled

Nelo: "and it starts" he pretended to be annoyed I sat up crossed my hands over my chest

Me: "fine than I'll find someone who will take care of me" he flipped us over so fast pressed his body on mine pinned my hands on top of my head

Nelo: "and I'll kill you" he smashed his lips on mine his kiss filled with hunger by the time he pulled back I was panting "I take care of what's mine nana you know that"

Me: "I know now feed me" he used his knee to separate my thighs

Nelo: "with pleasure" I gasped as he went all in filling me up

Nelo: "God I love you" we were both trying to calm down catching our breaths after coming

Me: "mmh" he chuckled and got off the bed I was starting to doze off when he lifted me off the bed carried me to the bathtub after bathing we lotioned I wrapped a towel around my body went to make breakfast while he got dressed I made his usual full on english breakfast he came to it I just had dry toast n juice after eating I went to get dressed put on my bikini a tank top n bum shorts on top than wore flip flops I had a short curly blonde Peruvian he came in when I was doing my make up stood behind me by the mirror

Nelo: "you wearing flops"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I'm also changing then" I laughed as he took of his all stars and wore flops he was wearing shorts n a tank top

Me: "I'm done lets go"

Nelo: "we taking your car"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "we should go get Melo tonight I miss her"

Me: "we will" I took my bag put my phone n it he got the keys his phone n wallet and we left driving off to campus

Me: "you know it takes a lot of time to plan a wedding and I don't wana be looking like an oversized penguin on my wedding day" he laughed

Nelo: "remind me to do something when we stop even if at the robot"

Me: "ok so what you say about the wedding"

Nelo: "when do you wana have it"

Me: "after I've given birth maybe when junior is like 5 months sure case I'll have my body back by then" he shook his head

Nelo: "I can't wait that long I need you to move in with me fully during the whole

pregnancy period”

Me: “but Nelo..”

Nelo: “no nana think of something that will make both of us happy and I’m not about to have another child out of wedlock it disrespectful to both our parents and I don’t wana do that to you” I sighed

Me: “I get your point baby I really do but I don’t wana get married while pregnant and I don’t want people thinking you marrying me just because im pregnant”

Nelo: “we know that’s not the case both our families and close friends know that’s not the case we love each other everyone around us can see that”

Me: “I know”

Nelo: “you should make an appointment with your gyn”

Me: “I’ll make one for Monday”

Nelo: “good” we stopped at the robot

Me: “Nelo we stopped” he chuckled

Nelo: “I’ll do it later” I thought of mom n shivered

Me: “God mom is going to kill me” he laughed

Nelo: “she’s going to hate me again”

Me: “let’s not tell them” he looked at me for a moment before looking back to the road laughing

Nelo: “I think they will know something is up when you get bigger” I held my stomach

Me: “couldnt you have made me pregnant at least when I’m doing my 3rd year”

Nelo: “hey I didn’t do it on purpose but I also don’t regret it”

Me: “oh God” I started sweating

Nelo: “hey calm down everything is going to be fine we going to manage ok”

Me: “ok”

Nelo: “I love you”

Me: “always n forever”

Nelo: “always n forever” I kissed his cheek “I’ll think of something nana ok she’s going to be angry but she will get over it”



Me: "we really messed up this time melo is just a baby"

Nelo: "we didn't mess up we were safe I don't know how but what happened happened there's nothing we can do about it" I kept quiet thinking about an abortion Nelo snapped me out of my thoughts with a pinch

Me: "ouch!!"

Nelo: "don't even think about doing that shit Lelo"

Me: "what shit"

Nelo: "I know what you thinking about"

Me: "I ... I ... Nelo"

Nelo: "no"

Me: "you know I'd never do that"

Nelo: "I hope so nana"

Me: "I love you and this baby and Melokuhle you guys are my family"

Nelo: "I love you and our kids"

Me: "you my peace"

Nelo: "and you my home my forever" he put his hand on my stomach left it there only removing it when changing gears until we got to campus we got off I took my bag

Me: "I need water" he took my head

Nelo: "where's the cafe" I pointed to it as we came closer to it I saw Menzi asa Sthe n Sabelo sitting outside

Me: "there's Asa I haven't seen them in awhile" he looked at his watch

Nelo: "there's still a little bit of time before your class" we went to them

Me: "hey guys" they greeted back asa stood up and gave me a hug

Asa: "you've been avoiding me lelo what did I do"

Sthe: "oh I thought she was just avoiding me"

Me: "I haven't been avoiding anyone I've just been busy"

Asa: "so busy that you can't even chill with us during lunch or even reply to my texts"

Me: "a lot has been going on Asanda"

Asa: "you shutting me out again Lelo it hurts" she was starting to cry I gave her a hug

Me: "I'll come pick you up tomorrow you will spend the night at Nelo's place ok I have so much to tell you" she looked at both Nelo and I

Asa: "ok" I took her hand pressed it on the lower part of my stomach it was hard she looked at me in a questioning manner and I nodded she removed her hand quickly

Asa: "no" we were smiling like idiots

Me: "tomorrow" she gave me another hug and punched Nelo softly

Asa: "you don't play around Nelo" he just laughed and kissed my cheek

Nelo: "we'll see you tomorrow we gona be late for class"

Asa: "ok" we had shut out the others from our conversation so when Asa went to sit down I said my goodbyes Nelo took my hand we went in the cafe bought my water and went to class we sat at the last row Nelo was busy sending emails while I listened and took down notes he took a paper from my notepad n a pen wrote down somethings while still busy on his phone when the lecture was over we left

Nelo: "thank God that's over can't remember last time I was in a lecture hall"

Me: "at least you got some work done"

Nelo: "yeah I guess"

Me: "so it wasn't a waste of time"

Nelo: "was actually sorting out something" he opened my door I got in he went to his side and drove off

Me: "sorting out what"

Nelo: "think about it before shutting me down ok"

Me: "ok im listening"

Nelo: "we can have a traditional wedding nana let me pay lobola for you introduce you to my ancestors and take you as my wife traditionally we can have the white wedding when you've given birth we can tell your parents you pregnant after the wedding you will be staying with me anyway they might be angry but it won't be that bad"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "just give it s thought don't say no just yet"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "stop saying ok" I laughed

Me: "hey I'm saying ok im saying lets do what you saying" he looked at me beaming

Nelo: "really nana"

Me: "yes let's do it but I'm telling mom that im pregnant coz chances of her agreeing to this are 0 to none"

Nelo: "we'll tell them tonight when we fetching Melo"

Me: "yeah at least if you there she will direct her anger to you" he laughed

Nelo: "oh you putting me on the hot seat"

Me: "better you than me I won't be able to handle it" he took my hand

Nelo: "I got you always n forever no matter what"

Me: "I hope it a boy this time" he chuckled

Nelo: "me too but healthy will be good too as long as the baby is healthy"

Me: "I don't think I can deal with two Melos"

Nelo: "my baby is an angel"

Me: "only when you around when it just us she has attitude for decades"

Nelo: "she gets the attitude from you"

Me: "I'm a saint" he laughed so hard I started frowning

Nelo: "yeah right nana you a saint"

Me: "don't be sarcastic"

Nelo: "yes ma'am"

Me: "mxm" we got to north beach I took off my tank top he looked at me

Nelo: "nana" I got out the car he took off his and got out the car

Me: "put your top on" he gave me a smug grin

Nelo: "why" he flexed his muscles

Me: "just do it"

Nelo: "why we at the beach on a beautiful sunny day im with my lady taking a walk I can see almost half of her boobs in her tiny bikini"

Me: "just put your top on I don't want these girls looking at you" he laughed

Nelo: "exactly my point"

Me: "arg whatever" I leaned in the car took my top wore it he did the same

Me: "happy now"

Nelo: "definitely" he came to my side pressed me on the car licked my nose

Me: "you such an idiot"

Nelo: "your idiot though" I wrapped my hands around his neck

Me: "yes my lovable idiot"

Nelo: "good" we shared a short kiss he locked the car took my hand we walked on the beach dipping our legs in than found a spot by the sand and sat down just watching the waves with my head on his shoulder his hand on my waist

Nelo: "I think it time we moved your ring to your left hand"

Me: "neh" he took out the ring kneeled in front of me

Nelo: "I can't promise you hearts n flowers everyday but I can promise you to try my best, I can't promise you smooth sailing love is like those waves over there rough at times but also calming and beautiful I can promise you to never let you go to bed angry at me, I will lay my world at your feet worship the ground you walk on if it was up to me I would leave flower petals on the floor before you take a step, you my home

Lelothando my comfort my forever, I just can't find the words but look into my eyes you will see what I see for us a future a big house filled with children and nothing but peace n love n respect, I love n adore you nana my world starts n ends with you, I just want to hear you say it again marry me say you will take me as your husband be wife" I sat there in tears and shock no matter how many time he had asked me to marry him whenever he asked again it was different and it left me speechless I nodded he slide the ring on my left hand wiped my tears and kissed my eyes

Me: "I love you so much daddy" he cupped my face and we kissed for a very long time until someone cleared their throats we pulled back and looked at the person it was kyle Nelo stood up and pulled me up

Nelo: "hey bro" they fist bumped

Kyle: "hey Nelo little sis" we hugged

Me: "hey whose this" he was with a girl

Kyle: "my girl spencer, spencer that's my sister and her boyfriend Nelo"

Spenc: "Lelo I hi I've heard so much about you" I giggled

Me: "oh really"

Spenc: "yeah kyle tends to brag about his family"

Me: "you should come over for dinner"

Spenc: "soon"

Kyle: "what you guys are up too"

Me: "just enjoying the beach"

Nelo: "we were about to have lunch and head home"

Kyle: "we were about to have lunch too"

Nelo: "join us"

Kyle: "cool" Nelo took my hand we walked towards Zacks "you hardly home Lelo"

Me: "I know and when im home you not there"

Nelo: "guess you will be seeing even lesser of her now"

Kyle: "why" I showed him my hand spencer screamed

Spenc: "oh my God congratulations let me see" I showed her my ring it was a beautiful silver band with a huge diamond n two tiny ones around it engraved my home in it "ooh it so beautiful Lelo"

Me: "thank you"

Kyle: "thought you guys were going to wait"

Me: "things changed we don't wana wait anymore"

Kyle: "congrats man" he shoulder hugged Nelo and scooped me up in a hug making my feet leave the sand he put me down and kissed my head

Nelo: "thanks man" he chuckled

Kyle: "mom is going to flip out"

Me: "tell me about im freaking out already"

Kyle: "it gona be fine she will be happy once the shock wears off"

Me: "I hope it happens soon"

Kyle: "don't worry" we had lunch after lunch we ended going for a movie at sun coast

after the movie we went our separate ways. Soon enough we were parked in the front porch at home doing breathing exercises and laughing by the time we got in the door I wasn't nervous but as soon as my eyes landed on mom in the lounge with Mike watching tv while the twins n Melo were playing in front of it my nervous shot back up

Me: "family" Melo stood up and ran to us

Melo: "daddy" he picked her up

Mike: "hey kids" we exchanged greetings and sat down

Mom: "we were about to have dinner just waiting for dolly to finish up are you guys joining us"

Me: "no we had late lunch with kyle and spencer"

Mike: "whose spencer now"

Me: "the new gf"

Mike: "you kids n changing partners like underwears"

Me: "dad"

Mike: "I meant the boys not you"

Mom: "Lelo why has that ring moved from your right hand" I quickly hid it under my lap

Me: "I don't know what you talking about" Nelo squeezed my other hand

Nelo: "we actually came to talk to you"

Mike: "about" Nelo and I looked at each other

Mom: "no sbonelo you promised us that you were going to let her graduate first"

Me: "mom we haven't even said anything"

Mike: "what's going on"

Me: "we officially engaged"

Mike: "oh wow"

Mom: "it gona be a very long engagement"

Me: "mom please"

Mom: "Lelo no!"

Mike: "let her talk" mom gave him a dead stare but didn't say anything "baby why do you feel the need to rush into this shouldn't you be enjoying varsity being your age I

mean dating n marrying someone that's two different things you going to be his wife not just a girlfriend"

Me: "I get that dad but I really don't see the difference"

Mom: "that's because you just a kid Lelo being married to someone comes with a whole different set of responsibilities"

Nelo: "nothing is going to change there will be no added responsibilities"

Mom: "what would you know Sbonelo you just a kid yourself and please stop taking advantage of my daughter" she shouted

Me: "his not taking advantage of me"

Nelo: "I would never do that"

Mom: "you just want her pregnant and warming your bed while you leave your life"

Nelo: "that's not true I love Lelo" we were all shouting now I was getting more angry instead of scared

Me: "you can't say that mom"

Mike: "everyone just stop and calm down"

Mom: "you are not marrying my daughter"

Me: "I'll marry him mom"

Mom: "let see that happening without my blessing"

Me: "I'm not underage mom I don't need you to agree to this"

Nelo: "Lelo don't talk like that"

Mom: "guess you have your mind made up"

Mike: "just shut up both of you God damit you scaring the kids" Melo and the twins had stopped playing they were looking at us

Me: "I think we should leave" I stood up but Nelo pulled me back down

Mike: "you not leaving this house until this is sorted out just stop barking at each other like dogs"

Me: "but dad"

Mike: "shut up you two apologize to each other"

Me: "I'm sorry for being disrespectful" I looked down Nelo brushed my back

Mike: "honey!"

Mom: "I'm sorry for not giving you a chance to talk and being judgmental towards sbonelo"

Mike: "good so let's have dinner in starving" we all looked at him and followed each other to the dinning room aunt dolly had already set up I watched how mom dished up for Mike and started laughing they all looked at me

Nelo: "and now"

Me: "oh nothing"

Mom: "you should try you gona have to get used to it"

Me: "he can dish up for himself his got hands" mom n Mike laughed

Mom: "exactly my point Lelo you not ready to be someone's wife"

Nelo: "I don't expect her to do things for me nothing is going to change"

Mom: "I hope so"

Me: "I love him mom he loves me he wants to marry me and I won't nothing more than just that we want to start our life's together"

Nelo: "she's right we just wana be together I don't wana shack up with her and live in sin I just wana do right by her"

Mike: "if that's the case you have our blessings"

Me: "really daddy" Nelo laughed and I kicked him under the table

Mike: "really" I got up and gave him a hug than looked at mom she opened her arms I went to them we hugged

Mom: "congratulations Lelo wam" she kissed my head I went back to my seat

Mike: "I hope you know we expecting lobola sbonelo" we all laughed

Nelo: "I'll pay it fully"

Mike: "good I might not know much but I know her uncles know everything"

Mom: "so when is all of this happening"

Nelo: "I have to talk to my parents first but soon hopefully sometime in June"

Mike: "June is starting next week what's the rush"

Me: "there's no rush"



Mom: "Lelo please tell me it not what I think"

Me: "I don't know what you thinking mom"

Mom: "you pregnant" I choked on my food Nelo gave me a glass of water and I took a sip

Me: "no im not"

Mom: "I hope so coz I'd be really disappointed you need to finish school and start work first"

Me: "I know mom"

Mom: "just because sbonelo can take care of you doesn't mean you shouldn't be standing on your own feet before having another child"

Me: "I'm not pregnant mom don't worry"

Mom: "ok" we finished dinner over light conversation n jokes mom hated the idea of not having a white wedding but at the end of dinner she went to is she was so suspicious I couldn't even have dinner the smell of stew made me wana vomit I just had salad n water after dinner we watched tv Mike pulled me aside we went to the study

Me: "sup dad"

Mike: "i wouldn't be a good dad if I didn't ask"

Me: "ask what"

Mike: "why the sudden change and the rush what's going on"

Me: "we love each other"

Mike: "that's not all"

Me: "yes it is"

Mike: "don't lie to me"

Me: "I'm pregnant"

Mike: "shit! Lelo I thought you smarter than that" I looked down played with my nails "how can you let that happen sbonelo has his life together why can't you do that instead of popping babies" now that hit hard I started crying "you can't keep making the same mistakes Lelo just because we shelter you doesn't meab you have to be reckless"

Me: "it didn't happen on purpose"

Mike: "what happened to condoms to taking contraceptives"

Me: "I am on the pill"

Mike: "you forgot it or what"

Me: "I never did dad I don't know what happened"

Mike: "have you been on any other medication"

Me: "only when I had flue"

Mike: "the antibiotics God Lelo why didn't you tell the doctor you were on the pill"

Me: "I didn't see any reason to"

Mike: "your mom is going to go crazy"

Me: "I can't tell her dad she will go crazy on me I can't" he pulled me in for a hug  
brushing my hair I couldn't stop hugging

Mike: "it ok I'll talk to her when you guys leave"

Me: "thank you" he wiped my tears and kissed my head

Mike: "it going to be ok" I nodded after calming down we went out to the lounge I got  
Melo we left

Nelo: "what were you and Mike talking about"

Me: "he knows I'm pregnant"

Nelo: "flip what did he say"

Me: "his going to tell mom I asked him too"

Nelo: "oh" I didn't anything the rest of the ride Melo was talking to her dad until we got  
home I went to sleep immediately after showering Nelo was still playing with his  
daughter it was way pass her bedtime but she didn't wana sleep.

.

The following day I went to pick up Asa she spent the day n night with us I dropped her  
off when I was taking Melo home Sunday afternoon. Yoh!!! Mom went off me as soon  
as I got back in the lounge after putting Melo to sleep it would have been better if she  
had just beaten me up instead of all the hurtful words she said Mike calmed her down  
and explained to her that it wasn't my fault that I thought I was being careful she was  
like I shouldn't even be having sex in the first place kyle was in the kitchen listening he

cracked up and started laughing when she said I looked away trying to not laugh I ended up spending the night at home but mom wasn't talking to me.

Monday went to campus during lunch sthe asa menzi sabelo n I met at steve Biko campus got lunch sat around the grass eating

Menzi: "we haven't seen you in forever"

Me: "it been hectic" I had brought my own lunch from home

Sthe: "why you eating dry toast"

Me: "just feel like"

Sabelo: "is that what I think it is" he pointed to my ring and I nodded

Me: "I'm getting married"

Sthe: "what?!! Congrats cuz" menzi chuckled in disbelief

Menzi: "his keeping you tied down his possessiveness knows no boundaries"

Me: "don't say it like that"

Menzi: "I'm sure he will have you pregnant soon"

Me: "I am pregnant"

Menzi: "wow!!! You really are a naive little girl" he stood up took his bag and left

Sthe: "what was all that about"

Sabelo: "his just hurting he will get over it"

Me: "he shouldn't even be hurting" he laughed

Sabelo: "you know you the first girl that he actually fell for since we moved to dbn"

Me: "that's not my problem"

Sabelo: "congrats by the way I'll see you guys later" he took his bag and left

Asa: "ok well that was weird"

Me: "mxm" we finished eating went back to our campus after my last lecture I went to my gyna Nelo was meeting me there we waited until it was our time we went in

Dr: "ms Tolo"

Me; "hey doc this is sbonelo Ngcobo my fiancé" they shook hands

Doc: "thought your check up wasn't until July"

Me: "well I think I'm pregnant" the doctor laughed

Doc: "let's see" he stood up from the desk and took my hand Nelo shot him an evil look  
I pinch nelo's arm

Doc: "you know what to do and where the change room is" I went to the change room  
change into the robe went to lie down on the bed he took out the vaginal transducer  
put a condom on it than some gel

Doc: "ok legs up n open wide" I did n he shoved it in me I flinched a little

Doc: "I can't really see anything" we looked at the screen Nelo squeezed my hand "ooh  
there we go" I couldn't see anything

Me: "I can't see anything can you see Nelo"

Nelo: "not really nana I think I should have brought my glasses for this" we laughed the  
doctor pressed on something the sound came on

Doc: "hear that"

Us: "yeah"

Doc: "I'll say you 7 weeks"

Nelo: "ok"

Doc: "there's the little Ngcobo oh wait I see two little Ngcobos"

Me: "what"

Doc: "can't you hear the heartbeat there's two of them"

Nelo: "what does that mean"

Doc: "it means twins"

Nelo: "oh nana this is amazing" he kissed my head I just cried

Doc: "Lelo did you hear what I said"

Me: "what did you say"

Doc: "you having twins" I closed my thighs "ouch"

Me: "get off get off me take your hand out" I screamed

Nelo: "nana what's happening"

Doc: "open your legs than"

Me: "Nelo get him off me"

Doc: "open your legs" I pressed them together harder "you breaking my hand" Nelo

pulled my thighs apart he took his hand n the transducer out

Doc: "I'll give you a minute" I was crying rocking my self back n forth

Nelo: "nana what's going on" I just continued crying "nana please you scarying me"

Me: "I can't Nelo I cant twins how am I going to cope with that"

Nelo: "I'm here ok we going to be fine"

Me: "3 kids at 18 have you ever heard of that"

Nelo: "we going to be fine nana I promise you" I just cried harder

### **part 104 I am scared of lonely**

He pulled me up making me sit up on the bed and kneeled in front of me taking my hands into his

Nelo: "nana" I wasn't looking at him he held my chin but I turned my eyes on the other side crying silently "nana look at me please" I did "look deep into my eyes and tell me what do you see" I looked deeply into his eyes

Me: "I dont" hiccup "understand Nelo" another hiccup

Nelo: "don't you see it" he kissed my hands "I love you nana and im here you not going through this alone im here I'll be here every step of the way no matter" I nodded he wiped my tears

Me: "even when I'm freakn huge looking like an elephant" he chuckled stood up cupped my face giving me a brief wet kiss

Nelo: "even when you huge nana I got you ok"

Me: "I'm scared"

Nelo: "we together in this and it ok to be scared but I'm here"

Me: "please take me home" he helped me hop off

Nelo: "let's get you dressed" just than the doctor came back in

Doc: "feeling better" I felt so embarrassed I just nodded went to get dressed when I got back they were in a deep discussion but whispering so I cleared my throat

Me: "I'm done"

Doc: "see you soon mrs Ngcobo"

Me: "he told you ofcos" the doc just smiled

Doc: "my assistant will call you for your follow up appointment and here" he gave me prescription list

Nelo: "thank you Sasa" I gave him a puzzled look they shook hands we left

Me: "you and my doctor are on a first name bases now" he chuckled

Nelo: "might as well but I do wish you had a female doctor it would help with this urge I had when he shoved his hand in you"

Me: "what urge"

Nelo: "to kill him ofcos"

Me: "don't be crazy" he kissed my head

Nelo: "I'll try" we walked to the pharmcy got my vitamins went back to our cars I was driving behind him until we got home I went straight to the bathroom took a long bath when I went back to the bedroom he was getting dressed

Me: "did you even shower" he chuckled

Nelo: "hawu nana what do you take me for" I held his cheeks n gave him a baby kiss

Me: "just asking baby"

Nelo: "just got off the phone with mom n dad"

Me: "neh" I finished getting dressed he followed me to the bathroom as I brushing my teeth

Nelo: "mom is so happy n dad is proud"

Me: "it all easy for you"

Nelo: "don't be like that" I caught his gaze on the mirror looked at him for a second before continuing

Me: "mmh"

Nelo: "dad wants to know when is your last exam he thinks we should wait until you finish "

Me: "June 15"

Nelo: "that's on a Wednesday like two weeks from now"

Me: "yes" he rubbed his forehead pinching it he does this when his stressing

Nelo: "when is your first paper"

Me: "Tuesday"

Nelo: "nana" I walked out going to the kitchen he sat on the counter as I took out the ingredients for cooking

Me: "stop pinching your forehead you will bruise"

Nelo: "have you been studying last thing I want is for your results to drop we don't need your mom hating me anymore than she already does"

Me: "I've been studying don't stress about my results I'll manage, here chop this into slices" I gave him onion n peppers

Nelo: "do I have to though"

Me: "if you want to eat I'd suggest you do" he jumped off the counter and started chopping

Nelo: "we have to go Richards bay on Friday I have a business dinner"

Me: "I don't have to go"

Nelo: "yes but I want you there besides I don't want to leave you here alone"

Me: "sbonelo I haven't moved in with you chances are I'll be at home Friday"

Nelo: "but you might as well bring all your clothes here n move in officially"

Me: "we not married yet"

Nelo: "yeah so" he kept on sniffing so I stopped what I was doing on the stove and looked at him he was crying and his eyes were red

Me: "and then" I couldn't hide the amusement on my voice

Nelo: "you the one whose making me chop this stupid thing" I laughed at him

Me: "sorry" he chuckled

Nelo: "mxm you laugh at me first"

Me: "I love you" he came to me gave me a soft peck

Nelo: "I love you Mrs me" he went to wash his hands

Me: "I'm not going with you Friday"

Nelo: "but nana please it's gonna be so boring without you"

Me: "take Kwandile with you"

Nelo: "his coming but I still want you there"

Me: "is he bringing Zama" he chuckled

Nelo: "no"

Me: "why you gotta chuckle first"

Nelo: "because I don't see kwandile taking Zama anywhere unless his forced to"

Me: "you don't know that"

Nelo: "his my brother I do know it"

Me: "mxm" I turned my attention back to the griller flipping the steaks he went to play tv opening a music channel came back to the kitchen

Nelo: "need any more help"

Me: "warm the milk and mix that sour cream sauce with it" I started on the stir fry while he did that

Nelo: "I've been thinking nana"

Me: "about"

Nelo: "getting a new car like something small maybe two doors convertible from bmw"

Me: "you don't need another car"

Nelo: "the Runx is old and Sfundu wants it"

Me: "give it to him"

Nelo: "than I can get myself a new car"

Me: "you don't need the car sbonelo"

Nelo: "ofcos I do"

Me: "for what"

Nelo: "I can't be using an suv when im out clubbing with my friends" I laughed

Me: "don't be silly"

Nelo: "I saw this one online I'll show before we sleep"

Me: "there's no need baby you don't need another car and with twins coming it means the expenses will be doubled"

Nelo: "yeah so"

Me: "you don't need to be spending extra cash n we still need a bigger place unless you



want the kids to be staying with my parents coz we don't have enough space here for a nanny"

Nelo: "it not like we short of cash" I kissed his cheek

Me: "let's keep it that way baby"

Nelo: "I still say thing about it"

Me; "there's nothing to think about" I bent over checking the potato wedges in the oven when I got up he was standing behind me my ass directly on his D

Nelo: "it's such a hot car nana" he moved my hair on my neck sucked on my hair "I can already imagine the things I could do to you in it with the top down nana" he went on to the other side of my neck sucking n biting it again "I'll let you drive it" he bit me harder making me moan from the pain combined with the pleasure after that he moved away from me

Me: "still think you don't need it" he took a beer from the fridge and sat on the counter

Nelo: "we'll talk about it when I come back from the business dinner on Friday if things go our way on Friday I'll buy you the most amazing house in any part of durban you like and im getting myself that car"

Me: "let's talk after Friday than" I poured the sauce over the wedges let it bake for awhile

Nelo: "I'm hungry and this aroma is not helping"

Me: "it gona be done soon" I started dishing up while waiting for the wedges, I went to stand between his legs

Me: "bring your head down" he chuckled

Nelo: "no go get a chair and stand on it than we can be on the same level"

Me: "don't be stupid Nelo just bring your head down" he shook his head while laughing "I won't give you dinner" that cracked him up more

Nelo: "you threatening me with food" I nodded he brought his head we kissed he tried pulling away but I held his neck only pulling away when the alarm went off on the oven

Me: "you taste amazing" he gave me a puzzled look

Nelo: "you always hated how I taste after having a beer"

Me: "I don't know but you taste amazing tonight" he just shook his head laughing I dished up we ate in front of the tv when we were done eating he went to wash the dishes n clean the kitchen when he was done we went to the bedroom I sat on the desk studying he did his work on the bed after about 4 hours of silence and getting lost in our work we went to sleep.

.

The following day I woke up when he was kissing I smiled and held his face he pulled after awhile he was already dressed for work

Nelo: "morning nana"

Me: "morning baby"

Nelo: "I'll see you later don't cook im taking you out"

Me: "ok I love you"

Nelo: "love you more don't starve my kids" he kissed my stomach

Me: "have a good day at work" he kissed my forehead and left I went back to sleep

Woke up later took a bath had breakfast spent my day with my books indeed we went out for dinner at the boathouse.

The rest of the week was the same thing clean bath breakfast n books lunch books dinner tv books and bed. Until Friday I hadn't spoken to mom she wasn't answering my calls I could only call aunt dolly if I wanted to know how Melo was. Friday afternoon Nelo came back from work with Melo

Melo: "nana" she raised her hands n I took her from her dad's arms

Me: "hello there big girl" I kissed her all over her face she was laughing

Nelo: "hey nana" he kissed my forehead

Me: "you guys good"

Nelo: "yeah" he went to the bedroom we followed him

Me: "what time are you leaving"

Nelo: "as soon as kwandile gets here which should be in an hour" we sat on the bed while he stripped leaving his underwear on

Nelo: "stop staring" I was lost on his body

Me: "can I join you in the shower" he laughed

Nelo: "and your daughter"

Me: "I'll take her to her room you know how she gets lost on her legos" he winked

Nelo: "I'll get the water started" he went in the bathroom I took Melo to her room laid all her legos out she started building I ran back to the bedroom taking my dress off went in the bathroom the shower was around filled with steam I just stood there watching him he had his back on me like I just watched his body from his firm legs to his thighs his around tight ass when he turned around I was biting my bottom lip he just stared at each other smiling I could see his D getting hard I didn't need any stimulation it was already a waterfall in my punani I watched him walking towards me with so much confidence a smile that just made me more wet

Nelo: "done drooling I'd like to take you now" he didn't even wait for me to reply he picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist moved back a little while he walked us to the shower I took his D shoved it in me he groaned almost losing his balance we almost fell I wrapped my legs tighter after gasping we took a proper shower we got out I just wore sweatpants n tshirt while he got dressed in black chinos flooded at the bottom black shirt n navy blazer pulled up on the sleeves with navy formal shoes I was on the bed watching him get dressed

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing"

Nelo: "you look sad"

Me: "wish you didn't have to go" I got off the bed started packing his bag a simple Friday dinner turned into a sleepover at the bay they were only coming back Saturday night

Nelo: "you can still come with me nana"

Me: "you know I can't what will I do with Melo"

Nelo: "we'll take her back to your parents place"

Me: "nah it's fine just come home early" I don't know why but I was starting to have separation anxiety

Nelo: "come here" he was on his desk doing some final touches on a proposals I went to him he sat me on his lap

Nelo: "come with me if you don't wana go to the meeting you will stay at the hotel"

Me: "stay at the hotel n suck my thumb" he chuckled

Nelo: "no you will bring your books"

Me: "I'll be fine"

Nelo: "call Asa tell her to come over"

Me: "I'll think about it"

Nelo: "I don't like seeing you sad"

Me: "I don't like you leaving me here"

Nelo: "come with me"

Me: "nah it cool" we kissed

Nelo: "it cool?"

Me: "cool"

Nelo: "stop being sad"

Me: "give me another round I'll stop" he laughed so much he ended up in tears even

Melo came in the room she walked to us crossed her hands over her chest with her eyes half closed we looked at each other I shrugged my shoulders

Nelo: "what's wrong princess"

She started crying

Melo: "daddy take me" I got off him Nelo took her she wrapped her hands around his neck burying her face on his chest

Me: "what's wrong with her" he brushed her back kissed her head

Nelo: "have no idea but she stopped crying"

Me: "oh well" I finished up packing while Nelo went to get the door kwandile was already here soon after that he was kissing our foreheads at the door and leaving I sat down with Melo opened cartoons it was still around 17:00 so I called asa

Asa: "if it isn't mrs Ngcobo to be" we laughed

Me: "don't be silly"

Asa: "what's up"

Me: "just bored with Melo what are you doing"

Asa: "staying in"

Me: "get ready n pack a weekend bag im coming to get you let's go out" she laughed

Asa: "you know you can't go clubbing with 3 kids"

Me: "fuck off" we laughed "we'll do movie n dinner"

Asa: "oryt I'll get ready" I changed into high waist ripped black jeans a black bra strapless top funny how I couldn't even see my baby bump a week ago but if I looked closer in the mirror I could see it I put on my Nike kicks dressed Melo in jeans n hoody with all stars I took her two bottles my biker n purse we left. Strapped her in her car seat we left Nelo called as we were driving out the estate

Me: "hey baby"

Nelo: "I miss you guys already"

Me: "come back" he laughed

Melo: "daddy"

Nelo: "you got me on loudspeaker"

Me: "Bluetooth we in your car" he chuckled

Nelo: "is that so"

Me: "yep"

Nelo: "hey princess" Melo giggled "where are you guys going"

Me: "pick up Asa catch a movie n dinner at musgrave"

Nelo: "don't stay out late"

Me: "ofcos"

Nelo: "at least you not gona be bored"

Me: "yeah I guess"

Nelo: "I miss you guys"

Me: "we miss you as well" he sighed

Nelo: "take care of my kids nana"

Me: "I always do"

Nelo: "I love you"

Melo: "love you"

Me: "I love you" I dropped the call turned the music up, I called Asa when we were outside her res she came down we left

Asa: "you won't believe this"

Me: "what"

Asa: "Sthe is pregnant"

Me: "the fuck!"

Melo: "fuck nana"

Me: "shit" Asa laughed "you can't say that Melokuhle"

Asa: "don't say things you don't want her to repeat"

Me: "I know just that sometimes I forget"

Asa: "yep and guess whose the dad"

Me: "Menzi" she looked at me and we laughed

Asa: "no she wishes though it sabelo's or lizwi's she's not sure they've been having casual sex since they had the 3 sum"

Me: "oh wow"

Asa: "yep"

Me: "aunt Zinhle is going to have a heart attack"

Asa: "she's thinking of not keeping it"

Me: "she can't do that you have to talk her out of it" I got to the parking lot we got off I got Melo out wore my jacket took her hand n we left

Asa: "I'll try Lelo but she's your cousin you know how she is"

Me: "flip"

Asa: "yep" we walked to the cinema

Me: "we have to watch an animated movie"

Asa: "what?! No"

Me: "Melo bra"

Asa: "ayi fine" we bought tickets n snacks went to watch a movie Asa n Melo couldn't

stop laughing when the movie finished we went to mimmos for dinner

Asa: "this is a nice change"

Me: "what do you mean"

Asa: "my Fridays are usually clubs n parties"

Me: "it these crazy people you keep around you"

Asa: "yeah well" our food came

Me: "flip look at the door" she did

Asa: "oh" they saw us to came to our table

Menzi: "hey there"

Asa: "hey"

Sabs: "what you guys up to"

Asa: "dinner ofcos" I just continued feeding Melo her veges

Menzi: "we also here for dinner" they grabbed chair n sat with us I kicked Asa under the table she just looked at me with pity

Asa: "who said we want you guys to join us"

Sabs: "we don't have to ask" they ordered they food

Menzi: "who is this cutey" Melo was on my left Menzi on my right

Asa: "Melo lelo's daughter"

Menzi: "she's beautiful just like her mom"

Me: "she actually looks like her dad"

Menzi: "oh was starting to think we not on speaking terms"

Me: "why wouldn't we be Ive never been rude to you or anything like that"

Menzi: "I know n im sorry for how I acted on Monday"

Me: "forgotten"

Menzi: "you didn't have to delete me on BBM though or even block my number"

Me: "I have nothing to say to you"

Menzi: "thought we all friends here"

Me: "I'm not your friend Menzi I offered you my friendship but you decided to throw it on my face"

Menzi: "fuck that.." He didn't even finish his sentence before Melo spoke

Melo: "fuck" I frowned the others laughed n Melo giggled

Me: "please watch what you say around my daughter"

Menzi: "sorry" I called a waiter asked him to pack up our food

Sabelo: "why are you guys leaving"

Me: "I'm full Asa are you done" my plate wasn't even touched

Asa: "we can go" she got her food packed up as well

Menzi: "what scared your fiancé might think we on some kind of double date"

Me: "don't be stupid Menzi" I stood up got Melo off the chair

Menzi: "you look beautiful when will you start showing"

Me: "don't know im just two months" he nodded I took money out of my purse

Menzi: "I got it it's cool"

Me: "no it fine" I left the money on the table we got our food n left Menzi followed us picking up Melo

Me: "please put her down she can walk"

Menzi: "let me carry her"

Me: "I wish you wouldn't"

Menzi: "Lelo it fine really"

Me: "ok"

Menzi: "so what's up with Melo Nelo Lelo" we laughed

Me: "it just happened"

Menzi: "it nice though"

Me: "thank you" we got to the car

Menzi: "new car"

Me: "her dad's" I opened the door he put Melo down she was sleepy I buckled her up in her car seat asa a was already in when I turned after closing the door Menzi was in front of me with his hands on either sides on my body closing me in

Me: "Menzi what are you doing"

Menzi: "I love you"



Me: "ok now move please"

Menzi: "why can't you be with me"

Me: "coz I don't love you and im about to marry someone"

Menzi: "his manipulating you n keeping you locked up"

Me: "no his not"

Menzi: "his so possessive"

Me: "maybe he thinks I'm worth possessing" he tilted his head grinning

Menzi: "yes you are"

Me: "ok than now that's we've established that let me go"

Menzi: "can I kiss you first"

Me: "what are you crazy"

Menzi: "crazy for you" I laughed

Me: "that's so corny" he laughed

Menzi: "let me kiss you"

Me: "no"

Menzi: "I'll be gentle" I pushed him back couldn't help but laugh

Me: "you so weird"

Menzi: "at least I can make you laugh"

Me: "yeah well"

Menzi: "unblock my number"

Me: "no"

Menzi: "please I won't get you in trouble with him"

Me: "it not about you getting me in trouble"

Menzi: "than what"

Me: "you just need to stay away from me"

Menzi: "unblock my number or let me kiss you"

Me: "now you being silly"

Menzi: "I'm being serious"

Me: "fine I'll unblock you" I took my phone out of my jean back pocket and cursed it on

was call and the call had been on for over 5 minutes I just had to butt dial Nelo out of all people I put the phone on my ear n cleared my throat

Me: "baby"

Nelo: "nana"

Me: "what did you hear"

Nelo: "everything how can you let him carry my child" I just sighed

Me: "it not like that"

Nelo; "you were having dinner with him n my daughter what happened to you going with Asa"

Me: "it not like that"

Nelo: "let me speak to him" I gave Menzi my phone he looked at it first

Me: "it Nelo he wants to talk to you" he took the phone

Menzi: "sho .... Is that so" he chuckled "dude you don't scare me .... Whatever .... I'll stay away from her when I want to not because you say so ..... I'd like to see you try .... Whatever ..... Yeah fuck you too..... Yeah maybe but it me that she's with right now not you" I grabbed the phone from him

Me: "Nelo"

Nelo: "get in that car and drive home now lelothando Ngcobo" that made me laugh

Me: "what did you call me" he chuckled

Nelo: "don't do that nana don't laugh when I'm so angry at you" his tone was now softer

Me: "but daddy you heard the whole conversation"

Nelo: "go home nana"

Me: "I'm leaving now I love you ok"

Nelo: "I love you more nana" I dropped the call

Me: "move"

Menzi: "no" I used all my power and pushed him caught him off guide coz he stumbled back I got in the car and drove off

Asa: "what was all that about"

Me: "Menzi being stupid"

Asa: "geese"

Me: "Nelo heard the whole thing bra"

Asa: "fuck his so going to beat him up"

Me: "he doesn't scare him" she laughed

Asa: "if he knew what's good for him he would be"

Me: "tell me about it" we drove home singing along to some hip hop we got home I put Melo to sleep we ate in front of the tv asa was having wine joys of not being pregnant we went to sleep after midnight I called Nelo when I got in bed the bed felt so big n cold he started shouting me at as soon as he answered the call I just cried he ended up apologizing non stop coz I wouldn't stop crying I missed him n he was angry at me he let me fall asleep with the call still on he was singing to me.

.

When I woke up the following day the call had been cut, we had breakfast mom called during breakfast saying they got a letter from Nelo's family they wanted the lobola negotiations to happen on June 17 they wanted the whole thing to happen in one weekend I said it cool I'll be done with exams anyway. After breakfast we took Asa back to res went by pick n pay bought somethings I wanted to bake we went back home I studied while Melo kept herself occupied with her toys n cartoons. After feeding her lunch she slept I continued studying when she got up again I played music sat her on the counter started baking when I put out the first tray covered it in cream Melo was bouncing on the counter screaming cake cake I gave her one cup cake her face was covered in pink cream within a minute heard the door just than

Nelo: " I'm home"

Me: "kitchen" he came in

Nelo: "hey nana" he grabbed my waist and have me a short wet one before taking Melo who hadn't even noticed he was back her focus was on her cake

Me: "you good"

Nelo: "I'm ok are you good"

Me: "I'll be good now that you here" he held me with his other hand bringing me closer to him

Nelo: "I missed you" he kissed my forehead

Me: "you here now"

Nelo: "yep"

Me: "how did it go"

Nelo: "great you should start looking at houses" I laughed continued with what I was doing

Me: "that's good"

Nelo: "I'm tired im gona take a nap" he put Melo down

Me: "take her with you"

Nelo: "I'm tired nana she just had sugar"

Me: "ok" he went to sleep I carried on baking.

.

Two weeks later I was done with exams everything went well Nelo and I were amazing I moved in with him fully it just made everything simple coz whenever I went to sleep at home he ended up driving all the way home at night and we would sleep in his car I couldn't sleep without him I would cry so much that he wouldn't have a choice but to come. Mom n his mom had been busy arranging things organizing all Nelo ever did was make payments when he needed to on his part my parents handled everything on my part. Thursday night I sneaked Nelo in my room at home when everyone was asleep I wasn't allowed to sleep at his place he left early morning we thought we were being careful until we opened the front door and ran into Siya he just laughed and didn't say anything. I went back in my room n slept was woken up by Mbali I went to bath got done wore a lose maxi dress than sat in my room Asa came in with breakfast we ate in my room talking it was so weird when I first it we jumped off the bed went to look outside the window we couldn't even see them like at home the gate is way way down like you can't even see a car that's parked outside it but my uncles insisted that things should be done the way they supposed to so nelo's uncles n dad were by the gate

shouting they stood outside in the blazing sun for over 30 minutes Nelo was calling worried I was crying but my uncles wouldn't hear a word of it eventually they let them in I was stuck in my room with Asa and my cousin like an hour later my aunt Philisiwe's mom (Noma) came to call us we all went downstairs my eyes traveled around the lounge before they landed on Kwandile I smiled to my self and looked down Uncle Musa Thulani's dad asked them to point who they were here for we were all sitting on the floor with our heads down Kwandile cleared his throat I looked at him quickly before looking down again he was looking at me with a grin

Kwandile: "the one in a grey skirt" I almost peed myself coz I was wearing a navy dress

Musa: "are you sure" he kept quiet for a while

Kwandile: "sorry meant navy dress" I let out a huge sigh we were dismissed as soon as we got in my room everyone started laughing I was on a verge of tears I called Nelo immediately started crying he just laughed n told me to calm down after awhile I was called downstairs Sethu n her cousin Gugu gave me clothes that I had to wear with a doek n scarf I went back to my room changed a bit later everything was done they were served drinks n cakes they left. Around midday they came back but in a larger number 'amatshali' ceremony was performed the my uncles n aunts along with mom n Siya who was standing in for my dad were given their gifts everything that was requested along with goats when that was done lunch was served while man slaughtered n chopped the goats after that it was cooked, Asa n I were watching everything from my room Nelo's family left at night my uncles n aunts couldn't hide their excitement Nelo's family paid the full lobola with no negotiation everything was paid that day . everyone was just tired after cleaning everyone went to sleep I stayed up skyping with Nelo he couldn't come over that night since my family was going to his the following day.

Everyone woke up early the following we prepared breakfast everyone ate and got ready my mom n aunts sat me down in my room and gave me a long speech about being someone's wife how to handle myself in front of the in laws saying I should be respectful obey my husband keep my home warm never go to bed angry at him no matter how he pisses me off always talk in a polite manner blah blah blah, the boys

loaded the things in the delivery truck there was so much groceries n blankets I drove my car with Asa Melo Mbali n Sthe who wasn't talkative she hadn't been since Thursday when she came home with her mom we conveyed all the way to margate when we all went in two cows were slaughtered when that was done we went out the gate again I remained in the car they stood at the gate singing the groceries got loaded off along with a lot of wood they stood at the gate singing but no one was coming out to welcome them I guess it was payback for the previous day eventually they let them in Nelo came out as soon as they were in the tent we sat in my car with our hands entwined my head on his shoulder just talking when the "umbondo" was done everyone was having lunch while Nelo n I were in different rooms getting ready I wore a white traditional attire with a short white skirt with a lot of small prints just below the knees a white vests covered in brown shawl with a lot of beads let my weave lose I had 24 inch brazilian on wore a hat I ate when I was done getting dressed around afternoon we were called out I looked around before attempting to walk the backyard was set out with a stretch tent full on traditional decoration with small zulu pots as centerpieces on the round tables buffet setting with all kinds of traditional foods nothing western and at the far end of the tent Nelo was sitting there in a huge chair covered in loin skin wearing imbeshu with leopard print vests I giggled when I got to his feet he wasn't wearing shoes my family was singing around me as we walked in the tent the smile on his face was priceless im sure he jaw was hurting my face was heating up from all the blushing I sat on the huge cushion that was on the floor next to him the way his thighs looked made me wana rip everything off him and have my way right there n there I wasn't even concentrating my mind was on Nelo n I being alone making crazy love the whole time it only got back in the tent when he was shaking me

Me: "mmh" I popped my eyes open

Nelo: "you ok"

Me: "I zoned out im tired" he frowned

Nelo: "sorry everything is almost done"

Me: "ok I love you" he smiled

Nelo: "love you too uhm your aunt has been calling you" when I looked at my aunt everyone was looking at us that's when I realized that I actually missed half of the umembeso ceremony she said I have to make the bed I looked at her confused until she explained Nelo lifted up the mattress I put the linen on he put it down went to sit I had to do the bedding which I found silly when I was done he was told to lay on it the girls started hitting him with sticks he jumped off the bed I was in tears with laughter when everything was done Nelo his parents n siblings along with mine and uncles we went to the house where impepho was burnt and I was introduced to the Ngcobo ancestors as a daughter n wife of the family they made me drink nyongo that's the most awful thing ever they pinned it on my vests we went out again nelo's family welcomed me to their family his mom said I'm not a daughter in law but her 2nd daughter I was no longer a Tolo but a Ngcobo than sbonelo went all emotional on me saying how im the one always has been always will be im his happy ever after the love of his life his home his soulmate calling me by all his clan names he gave me a big fat wet one in front of everyone our parents the elders by the time he pulled back it was a river under my panty my legs were wobbly we hadn't had sex in almost 3 weeks with the exams I was stressed out he gave me my space he pressed his forehead on mine as we calmed down. Once everything was settled we went to change I was cold than we had early dinner people were starting to drink after having meat I couldn't keep up anymore I felt exhausted Nelo took me to his bedroom

Nelo: "my wife" I smiled

Me: "my husband" he held my waist with one hand his other hand held the back of my neck

Nelo: "I knew from the first time I met that afternoon when you were talking a walk and refused to give me your number that you were the one" I giggled

Me: "liar"

Nelo: "I swear and when I saw you again at Shelly center with your friends I thanked my lucky stars I just knew we meant to be"

Me: "I love you mr Ngcobo"

Nelo: "love you more mrs Ngcobo" he helped me off my clothes into my pjs I got in bed while he got into his pjs than joined me in bed pulling me closer wrapping his arms around me lifted my thigh putting it on top of his

Nelo: "finally" he kissed my head

Me: "finally what"

Nelo: "you mine without doubt"

Me: "I've been yours since the first day you told me you loved me in your house"

Nelo: "I love you nana"

Me: "I love you daddy" he played with my hair I slowly dozed off.

.  
Woke up the following day I woke up alone in bed the sun was shining through the curtains I took my phone checked the time it 12:30 I jumped off the bed remembering my mom's words about being the first one to be up first day of being married I was already failing at this whole thing I sat on the bed covered my face with my hands and cried the door opened as I was silently sobbing I got his scent before I even saw him he kneeled in front of me lifting my head up

Nelo: "what's wrong"

Me: "first day and I'm already failing Nelo im clearly not ready for this"

Nelo: "what are you talking about"

Me: "I should have been up way before your parents got up"

Nelo: "nobody said you should nana" I punched him

Me: "why didn't you wake me up what kind of a wife do you think your parents will think I am"

Nelo: "you pregnant nana you haven't even had time to rest as soon as your exams were finished this happened they get that mom said I shouldn't wake you up" he wiped my tears kissed me

Me: "I suck at this" he chuckled

Nelo: "no you don't you can start your widely duties tomorrow today you will stay in this room and relax I brought you breakfast"



Me: "you sure"

Nelo: "yes it moms order" I smiled n nodded

Me: "ok where's melo" I sat up on the bed started eating

Nelo: "Sethu was feeding her"

Me: "ok eat with me"

Nelo: "I won't say no" he sat up flooding his legs together I put the plate in the middle of us and we ate after eating I took a bath I spent the whole day in the bedroom.

The following day on Monday I was up first I cleaned made breakfast when everyone came for breakfast nelo's mom said it was the first and the last time im not here to be a maid Sethu n I did the dishes after breakfast Nelo left Monday night he had work in the morning I cried myself to sleep that night. I was miserable although nelo's mom tried making me feel as comfortable as possible we went out a lot he came back Friday afternoon I could sleep better again it didn't last though Monday morning he went back to work I stayed in his room a lot those two weeks only getting out to either make breakfast or dinner or when Melo needed something sbonelo came back again Friday afternoon we went back to our apartment Saturday we left Melo behind for the first time we were in our own space just the two of us since the wedding I went straight to the shower as soon I got in the door he was still bringing in the bags after the shower I got dressed in my pjs

Nelo: "thought we could go out have a nice fancy dinner"

Me: "tomorrow I just wana be with you in door" he stood in front of me

Nelo: "what do you wana do"

Me: "make love to me"

Nelo: "with pleasure my wife"

Me: "take me"

Nelo: "God I love you wifey"

**part 105 I am scared of lonely**

Nelo woke me up with his tongue the next day after making love I laid on top of him we were on our 4th round of making love long slow passionate love making he had kissed n touch every part of my body everything just felt different every touch kiss n thrust it all felt new n different and I loved every part of it especially when he looked deeply into my eyes telling how much he loves how grateful he is that im his wife. So now here we are his lips on hair our hands entwined together on the sides of our bodies

Nelo: "I don't ever want to let go"

Me: "than never let go"

Nelo: "promise one thing"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "no matter what you staying with me no matter what life throws at us you not leaving my side"

Me: "I already promised you that"

Nelo: "do it again"

Me: "I promise to stay by your side never leave you no matter what life throws at us I promise to love each n everyday like it my last to show you appreciation n cherish you for as long as we shall live" he laughed kissed my hair again

Nelo: "copy cat" he had said the very same words last night when we were making love

Me: "you might have said them but I also feel them" he flipped us n got on top of me

Nelo: "God knows what I'd do without you" I held his face we kissed

Me: "good thing you never have to find out coz I'm not going anyway"

Nelo: "let me feed you than we can go out do something and the boys want to come over tonight"

Me: "can all of that happen next weekend this is what I want right now us naked in bed the whole day the silence is refreshing after the last crazy month" we were in July I had a week before campus opened I was definitely showing it like my stomach grew in a speed over the last month the two weeks I had spent at nelo's home his mom fed me like there's no tomorrow her solution to everything was food I was 3 months pregnant

Nelo: "ok whatever you want"

Me: "great"

Nelo: "I would love to take you out though even if it just for dinner"

Me: "we can do dinner"

Nelo: "great! Now let go make you breakfast" he got off put on sweatpants went out the bedroom I got up made the bed opened the windows leaving the curtains closed wore his tshirt went to the bathroom tied my weave into a ponytail my neck, jawline, chest even my breasts were filled with love bites I was red all over I lifted the tshirt it was the same thing on my stomach n thighs I let out a sigh washed my face n brushed my teeth. I went to the kitchen leaned on a doorframe watching him dance n sing along to Rick Ross ft Drake Aston Martin it was his favorite song of the moment his playlist in his car was made up of Drake – Motto, Wale ft Miguel – Lotus flower Bom God knows how many times he sang that song to me, Drake ft Nikki Minaj – proud, usher – climax, Beyoncé – love on top that one always made me laugh I found it weird for a guy to listen to Beyoncé but the weirdest of them all was James Morrison – you make it real for me along with Jeremiah – Love don't change. I stood by the door until the song was over he turned to change the channel and saw me there

Nelo: "how long have you been standing there" I giggled

Me: "long enough to see you shaking your booty" we laughed

Nelo: "hey wena nana! A man doesn't shake his booty in fact a man doesn't even have a booty" I walked towards him

Me: "well I just saw my husband shaking his booty" I wrapped my hands around his neck he grabbed my ass making me stand on my toes

Nelo: "wana see what I can do to your booty"

Me: "yes" I whispered

Nelo: "let's feed you first than I'll tear your booty apart" he gave me a baby kiss than let go I aslo let go off him and turned so I can go sit on the counter

Me: "you so romantic" he spanked my ass

Nelo: "stop being sarcastic" we laughed I sat on the counter watched him make breakfast

Nelo: "I've been meaning to talk to you"

Me: "about what"

Nelo: "Melo now that we not shacking up n all"

Me: "yeah"

Nelo: "I want her to stay with us"

Me: "that means getting a nanny"

Nelo: "yeah so"

Me: "let me talk to mom first"

Nelo: "what's to talk about"

Me: "I think it best if she stays with my parents we can get her once we move into a bigger place"

Nelo: "I don't like that nana I want my daughter with me with us her parents"

Me: "where will we even get a nanny now"

Nelo: "I don't know"

Me: "we can't just bring a stranger to stay with Melo alone while you at work n im at school we'll get a nanny who will start during September holiday when I'll also be at home right now we stick to what we've been doing getting her on weekends" he rubbed his forehead pinching it

Nelo: "guess you right"

Me; "im smart like that" we laughed

Nelo: "don't be so full of yourself"

Me: "never"

Nelo: "eating here or lounge"

Me: "here is fine" I moved from the counter sat on the high chair we had breakfast after breakfast he cleaned the kitchen and washed the dishes we went back to bed spent the whole day in it he only got out to bring something to eat and at night we took a shower which started with another basping we got out dressed up I wore a body hugging dress just above my knees with medium sleeve thin strings at the back making an ex showing my small bump n heels let my hair lose we went to have dinner at 9th Avenue Bistro

after dinner went back home changed into our pjs spent the rest of the night in front of the tv having hot chocolate watching E! I found it funny how sbonelo used to hate reality shows but he ended up being the one who calls me when one of “our favorites” were on when new episodes were over we went to sleep of course we had to make love first.

.

The following day I woke up while he showered ironed his work clothes made me breakfast while he got dressed kept him company while he ate then walked him out the door he didn’t expect me to but we both loved so I did every time when I had a chance to. I went back to sleep only to wake up later, my day was kinda ok I went shopping had lunch with kyle n Mike went back home just in time to cook dinner. The rest of the week was more or less the same thing friday we went to margate to get Melo we spent the night there went back home Saturday, Sunday I took Melo back to my parents house mom suggested if we wanted Melo to stay with us we can take Thobeka I told her no, there was no way I was about to let thobeka stay in my house I trusted Nelo but didn’t trust her and she made Nelo feel uncomfortable so I wasn’t about to bring that to our private space so Melo stayed with my parents.

Monday morning I was going back to school we woke up I fixed out clothes while he took a shower I showered while he got dressed I got dressed while he made breakfast it was like a planned routine everything just went smoothly when he was done we sat down had breakfast

Nelo: “I love this”

Me: “love what”

Nelo: “this us nana”

Me: “mmh”

Nelo: “can I drop you off”

Me: “nope”

Nelo: “hey why not” I chuckled he actually seemed disappointed

Me: “baby it the first day of campus I might come home early”

Nelo: "ok"

Me: "we have an appointment with Kusasa on Friday"

Nelo: "yeah"

Me: "yep he said we can find out if we having dizygotic or monozygotic twins" he stopped chewing n looked at me I grew horns

Nelo: "mono what" I chuckled

Me: "so unlike you to not know something" he chuckled

Nelo: "I'll find out on my own"

Me: "good now go you running late"

Nelo: "true" he got up got his bag n keys "walk me to the door" I got up walked him to the door

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "love you more" we kissed

Me: "have a good day at work hubby" he chuckled kissed me again

Nelo: "have a good day on campus wifey" he kissed my head and left I went to finish my breakfast after eating I cleaned up in the kitchen wore my sandlas got my bag phone n keys went to campus parked my car at riston campus than walked to Asa's res she signed me in I hadn't seen her since the wedding we caught up than walked back to campus we went to our different lecture halls we went to sultan for lunch with Sthe things were just off between us and I was sick of it

Me: "sthembile"

Sthe: "mmh"

Me: "what did I do"

Sthe: "excuse me"

Me: "you've been all weird on me since before exams"

Sthe: "you imagining things"

Me: "oh"

Asa: "no she's on"

Sthe: "so you two are ganging up on me"

Me: "we not I just wana know why you n I are not in good space"

Sthe: "there's nothing to talk about" she took her bag and tried standing up

Asa: "bullshit Sthe sit down!" she sat down

Sthe: "done ever talk to me like that ever!"

Asa: "stop acting out!"

Me: "both of you keep it down"

Sthe: "ofcos little miss perfect always worried about what other people will say"

Me: "hey what did I do" Asa chuckled

Sthe: "it always Lelo this Lelo that and im sick of it"

Me: "what?" Asa was laughing

Sthe: "shut up Asanda"

Asa: "eyi sthembile im not Lelo I'll beat you up like there's no tomorrow watch what you say to me"

Sthe: "whatever"

Me: "can we talk about this calmly without raising our voices or threatening to beat up one another"

Asa: "control this bitch of a cousin"

Me: "Asanda"

Sthe: "fuck you Asanda don't try n act all holy in front of her we just the same"

Asa: "I'm not acting at anything"

Me: "listen to the both of you I thought we all friends here"

Sthe: "how are we supposed to be friends when we under your shadow"

Me: "how is that even possible"

Sthe: "at home all I hear is how smart Lelo is how well behaved Lelo is why can't I be like Lelo"

Me: "that's just crazy out of all the girls at home im the one with kids out of all 8 of us im the 2nd youngest yet im the one with kids so there is no way you can say that"

Sthe: "he married you Lelo" Asa chuckled

Asa: "there it is"

Me: "Asanda let her talk"

Sthe: "you got all these guys falling for you" Asa started singing Aka – jealousy we both threw fries at her she laughed

Me: "that's not my fault Sthe"

Sthe: "you got Nelo but you still wanted Menzi"

Me: "oh God" Asa laughed out loud

Sthe: "what"

Asa: "maybe if you stopped throwing yourself at boys they might want you or even respect you"

Me: "Asa don't talk like that and Sthe I don't want Menzi his attractive yeah sure but I don't want him I never have"

Sthe: "than you should have told him that"

Me: "I did a couple of times he won't back off"

Sthe: "make him back off"

Me: "how am I supposed to do that Sthe come on"

Asa: "and you pregnant Sthe shouldn't you be with your baby daddy"

Sthe: "I was pregnant" she whispered we both looked at her

Me: "sthembile why would you do that"

Sthe: "mom made me do it"

Me: "don't lie aunt Zinhle would never" she chuckled

Sthe: "you don't know my mom Lelo when she asked who the father was and I told her I didn't know she made the appointment same time"

Me: "Sthe"

Sthe: "it fine I wasn't ready anyway"

Asa: "sorry"

Me: "yeah sorry"

Sthe: "it's ok"

Me: "I don't know what else to do but I don't want Menzi and you can't hate me for sbonelo you have no right n our relationship has nothing to do with you"



Sthe: "I get it"

Asa: "if you wanted Menzi so bad maybe you shouldn't be sleeping with his best friend"  
we laughed

Sthe: "I thought you know he will get jealous" she covered her face with her hands n we laughed

Me: "well that's different"

Asa: "and stupid" we laughed

Sthe: "I really do like him you guys and im tired of these meaningless relationships I want what everyone else has I want what Lelo n Nelo have"

Me: "don't do that don't say that people have different relationships"

Asa: "true look at Qin n I □ we no way close to what they have but we work in our own way" we laughed

Me: "true I could never get you n qin"

Asa: "we work though"

Me: "Menzi is here" they looked at the door Menzi was getting in with Sabelo

Me: "that's my que you coming Asa"

Asa: "nah I'm free for the next two periods"

Me: "cool by" I stood up took my bag as I was starting to turn he shouted

Menzi: "hey sexy" I looked at Sthe she was frowning

Me: "hey bye" I started walking away but he ran after

Menzi: "wait up where you rushing to"

Me: "campus"

Menzi: "I'll walk with you"

Me: "no im fine"

Menzi: "you look good by the way"

Me: "I'm getting fat"

Menzi: "no just your stomach is bigger but you still look good"

Me: "thanks I guess"

Menzi: "no biggy can we grab late lunch when you done attending"

Me: "no I have to go home"

Menzi: "just a quick bite than you can leave"

Me: "Menzi you need to stop this"

Menzi: "just friends nothing more"

Me: "you sure"

Menzi: "yeah just friends I'll back off I promise I mean you someone's wife now"

Me: "ok"

Menzi: "I'll call you after your last class"

Me: "cool" he kissed my cheek n turned back I attended my classes when I was done I went home Menzi called but I cancelled last thing I wanted is to give Sthe another reason to be angry at me drove past spur got dinner.

.

Time flew by it was now September I was 5 months pregnant and boy was I huge I gained so much weight I went from 32 to 36 in a speed I couldn't see anything beyond my stomach my feet were always swollen we were having identical twins boys the way Nelo cried when the doctor told us the gender he kept on kissing every part of my face after that he became obsessed always fussing over me and I loved every part of it he was so excited started buying clothes he immediately, I couldn't drive my car anymore so I used the Audi he ended up buying his sport car. Ever since the wedding we only got into one argument he got pissed off coz I wouldn't take his debit card he felt like I was saying he can't take care of me cause I was still getting money from my parents mom n Mike still gave me my monthly allowance he threw a fit took my bank card so that I was forced to use his ofcos we made up before going to bed we had promised each other to never go to bed angry rather than that everything was smooth between us our love was stronger than before we couldn't get enough of each other sex wise his affection for me knew no boundaries no matter where we were or who we were around he couldn't keep his hands or lips off him and hey I wasn't complaining I loved every part of it. It was Saturday we coming hosting a braai my mom Mike kyle n the kids were here so was nelo's parents sethu Sfundo zama n Kwandile. Nelo woke me up with breakfast in

bed he did this all the time if I wasn't going to campus he massaged my feet every night  
n morning our friends were complaining especially his friends we spent every time  
together even if we went out it was just us two sometimes with Melo. After breakfast I  
took a shower got out wore a lose maxi black dress and my sleepers did my make up  
tied my yanky into a messy bun than went to the lounge kwandile was already here  
Nelo got his daughter ready

Me: "hey Kwa"

Kwa: "hey nana ka Nelo"

Me: "you good"

Kwa: "yeah dang you huge" I frowned

Me: "do you have to say that every time you see me you said it yesterday enough now"

Nelo: "yeah enough" he kissed my forehead "you ok nana"

Me: "yeah baby, where's your family Kwa"

Kwa: "Zama is coming in with Sethu n busi" (busi is his daughter)

Nelo: "Melo is in her room come help she doesn't wana get dressed" I sighed n followed  
him to her room

Me: "bhabha" she looked at me all angry with her eyes half closed

Melo: "nana"

Me: "you don't want daddy to dress you" she shook her head "why not"

Melo: "I want that" she pointed to her tinker bell dress it even had wings she cried for it  
when we went to get her new toys at the shop

Me: "you can't wear that baby" she had only wore it to the twins 2nd birthday

Melo: "why not"

Me: "bhabha"

Melo: "daddy"

Me: "don't say daddy Melo you can't wear that wear what I put out for you" I left them  
there went to marinate the meat kwandile took a beer and joined me in the kitchen we  
chatted until Melo came in the kitchen running in her tinker bell dress

Melo: "daddy Kwa" he took her

Kwa: "hey there princess" Nelo came in I just shook my head

Nelo: "she wouldn't get dressed nana"

Me: "mmh" I carried on with what I was doing he came to stand behind me rubbing my stomach

Nelo: "sorry don't get mad"

Me: "I'm not mad" he started kissing my neck

Nelo: "you sure"

Me: "aaah" I moaned it felt so good and with the pregnancy I was horny like all the time

Nelo: "how sure are you" he started rubbing n pinching my nipple under my dress

Me: "Nelo please"

Nelo: "please what mrs Ngcobo"

Me: "stooo" he bite my neck n blew on it "don't stop" he chuckled

Nelo: "come here" he took my hand we went to the bedroom passing kwandile n Melo in the lounge he just shook his head chuckling we had a quicky n cleaned up by the time we got out the bedroom everyone was already here

Me: "hey everyone" they greeted back

Mom: "you ok kwandile said you werent feeling well" kwandile Nelo n I looked at each other n laughed

Me: "I'm ok mom just got dizzy a little I was trying to prepare the meat"

Zama: "it ok I got just show me where everything is"

Sethu: "yeah I'll help to"

Me: "sure the kitchen is this way" they followed me we got the meat ready while kwandile Nelo sfundo n kyle got the fire ready while having beers mom n nelo's mom were having a conversation of their own Mike n nelo's dad were talking about politics n stock exchange which I found weird the kids were playing in melo's room Nelo found me standing in the passage just observing everyone

Nelo: "hey" he stood across me

Me: "hey"

Nelo: "you ok"

Me: "yeah just happy"

Nelo: "happy"

Me: "really happy thanks for doing this"

Nelo: "thank you for allowing it to happen if you happy than im happy"

Me: "happy wife happy home" he chuckled

Nelo: "whoever said that was smart"

Me: "indeed"

Nelo: "next braii we holding will be a house warming for our new house" we had been searching for a bigger house finally found this amazing double story house in la Lucia 5 bedroom with 5 bathrooms, double garage, open patio, huge fitted kitchen, lounge with glass walls n door, swimming pool n jacuzzi, study, playroom, huge backyard, an amazing view of a forest n beach

Me: "yep can't wait"

Nelo: "when are we seeing the real estate agent"

Me: "Monday 17:30 he I mailed me the directions"

Nelo: "great"

Me: "I love you and thank you for this" he came to me we hugged he kissed my forehead

Nelo: "thank you for giving me a beautiful family and loving me"

Me: "loving is the easy part" I leaned on his chest n he brushed my back

Nelo: "you should sit down"

Me: "yeah get me a chair I'll sit in the kitchen" he did than went outside the rest of the day was filled with laughter n joy Sethu n Zama cleaned before leaving everyone left at night Melo was already asleep Nelo locked up n came to join me in the shower we couldn't have shower sex anymore he was afraid i would slip and fall well it not like I could do it with my huge stomach after showering we got in bed he gave me a massage than made love to me we fell asleep cuddling naked.

.

The following day September 17 2012 Id never forget that day I still wake up crying

because of that day. We had just came back from dropping Melo off at my parents we were driving back to our place in the Audi

Me: "baby I think you need to buy me a necklace" I took out my ring

Nelo: "why do you need a necklace and put that ring back on you promised to never take it off"

Me: "I know but it cutting off my circulation my fingers are fat" he chuckled

Nelo: "your fingers are not fat nana you pregnant"

Me: "that's why I need a necklace so I can hang the ring on it untill I give birth"

Nelo: "ok I'll go pass American Swiss tomorrow after work" I kissed his cheek

Me: "thank you"

Nelo: "anything for my wife" we had stopped at the robot it turned green but Nelo didn't move he always does this he says you can't just move as soon as the robot turns green when you on the road you not just driving for yourself but everyone else whose using the road so you have to make sure it clear before moving we waited for like a minute than moved I had my hand on his thigh out of nowhere this huge 8 wheel truck smashes into us on the drivers side the car flipped twice landed on its roof

Nelo: "nana" I started crying he took my hand "nana"

Me: "I'm scared daddy" I cried harder I couldn't even see his face but I felt his hand hold mine

Nelo: "hey hey don't be scared I got you ok"

Me: "ok"

Nelo: "I love you and I'm here"

Me: "I love you"

Nelo: "always n forever"

Me: "always n forever" his grip on my hand was getting weak

Me: "don't leave us please hold my hand im scared daddy don't leave us we need you"

Nelo: "nana" he coughed "im here ok for you Melo n the boys" his voice was braking I felt tires stretching another car hit us I passed out. When I woke up again I was surrounded by people we were moving I cried out in pain I couldn't hear what they were

saying I cried out again when I felt another sharp pain I suddenly felt hot liquid running down my legs I just knew what was happening with every sharp pain I felt my heart being ripped out with every sharp pain I felt my soul leaving my body with every sharp pain I felt myself getting pulled in the darkness at least with the first miscarriage I didn't feel anything I wasn't even aware that I was pregnant but now it been 5 months since these two souls were in my body I loved them with every part of my body they were my kids my boys, eventually my body couldn't handle the pain I passed out

17 September 2012

### **part 106 I am scared of lonely**

When I finally gained consciousnesses someone was holding my hand I opened my eyes only to shut them right back the light was blinding I moved my other hand to confirm my worse fear I had lost my baby bump my stomach wasn't big anymore I forced my eyes to open mom was had her head on the bed she was holding my hand I removed my hand and she woke up tears were just running down my cheeks she looked at me with so much sorrow n pity her eyes were red I touched my stomach she looked at my hand than back to my face with a small nod and that was it she didn't even need to say anything all it took was her eyes n a small nod that was it just a small nod my babies were gone I just turned the other way and cried silently I could hear her talking but she sounded like she's far away. I had lost my boys without even being given a chance to hold them, to name them, God took away the only other two people who were going to give me unconditional love, I didn't even get a chance to show them love, to even see whether they were going to look like or they were also going to look like their father, all my hopes of them taking my eyes just gone like in a matter of few hours I was complaining about them playing soccer in my womb all of a sudden there was couple silence in a matter of hours just Friday night we were looking at nursery ideas and now it all gone just like that my boys are gone. I felt someone getting on the bed with me trying to hold me but I jerked away

Me: "please don't touch me"

Mom: "baby don't push me away"

Me: "not now mom just don't touch me"

Mom: "Lelo" I sniffed

Me: "please leave" she was also crying

Mom: "I'm not leaving you alone"

Me: "please"

Mom: "no"

Me: "fuckn leave now!!" I screamed she didn't move I got off the bed but the pain shot right through my entire body I fell she jumped off the bed

Me: "please just don't touch me" I cried harder on the floor she pressed the bell than lifted me off the floor put me back to bed the nurse came in mom asked her to get a doctor the doctor came in I was crying hysterically he injected me with something I felt more n more weak eventually I passed out again.

When I woke up again mom n nelo's mom were standing around my bed looking at me with so much sadness I was so scared of asking about Nelo I didn't even wana ask I just looked at them before covering my head with a blanket the silence spoke volumes nelo's mom pulled the blanket away from my head and cupped my cheeks wiping my tears which was a waste of time coz they kept coming out

N's mom: "you need to be strong for yourself your daughter and your husband this is one of God's tests and my dear you need to be strong I know you capable of it otherwise you wouldn't have survived all these years you've been with my son you two are going to need each other to survive this but right now he needs you more"

Me: "I cant mah it hurts so bad"

N's mom: "we not gona lie and say we know what you going through coz even at this age both your mother and I have never experienced what you experiencing but you need to pray for courage and forgiveness" I just nodded still crying

Me: "how is he"

Mom: "his in recovery he just came out of a surgery"

Me: "how bad is it and don't lie to me please"



Mom: "Lelo"

N's mom: "tell her she needs to know what she's about to face"

Mom: "he fractured his skull, experienced severe head trauma which caused bleeding in his brain, broken leg, couple of broken ribs, his brain is swollen"

Me: "can I see him"

Mom: "once they move him to icu"

Me: "what's the time"

N's mom: "just after midnight it Monday morning"

Me: "can I be left alone please" they looked at each other

Mom: "I don't think that's a good idea"

Me: "I wana be alone"

N's mom: "Lelo"

Me: "please"

Mom: "we'll be just outside if you need anything"

Me: "ok thanks" they left I slept on my left facing away from the door and just cried o cried like I've never cried before I was angry at everyone n everything mostly at God why would he give me this blessing only to take it away so suddenly as if that wasn't enough Nelo is in recovery fighting for his life. I touched my body trying to spot the difference I cried harder when my hands got to my stomach going down to my small scar where I had an episiotomy when I gave birth to Melo the scar was freshly cut I used to love that scar it was barely visible Nelo n I loved touching it every time when I touched it I would smile thinking about Melo for the first time touching it brought more tears it was no longer a reminder of life but a reminder of death a reminder that I wasn't woman enough to carry my boys a reminder that im a weak woman who couldn't protect her children I cried myself to sleep.

I woke up the sun was shining through the blinds a nurse was busy with my iv I quickly closed my eyes before she could see that I was up I wasn't in a mood for small talks when she was done she left I stayed in bed just crying one would think after crying so much I would run out of tears but nah they just came in bucket loads mom came in with

Mike n kyle

Mike: "ooh baby" he gave me a hug I just sobbed out loud in his hold he kept on brushing my back saying everything will be just fine he held me until my loud sobs turned into silence cries than I moved from his chest he kissed my forehead wiped my tears

Mike: "I love you ok and we here for you no matter what you need" I nodded

Me: "I kinda need a bath right now" they chuckled

Mom: "you got you toiletries and a pjs come I'll help you" kyle carried me to the bathroom every inch of my body was in pain I got in the bathtub mom gave me a bath when I was done she dressed me up kyle took me back to my bed the nurse had changed the sheets

Me: "can I see him now"

Mom: "Yeah Mike will go get you a wheelchair you need to eat first"

Me: "I'm not hungry I just wana see him"

Mike: "you need to eat so you can take your medication"

Me: "but dad im not hungry"

Mike: "at least have a glass of fruit juice" kyle poured me a juice I drank half of it n took my medication

Me: "my ring" they look at each other

Kyle: "where was it" I started crying

Me: "it was in the car I took it off cause it was cutting my circulation I need my ring"

Mike: "hey don't cry im sure Nelo had it insured"

Me: "I want that one it more than just a band dad I need that one" I covered my face with my hands and cried "I shouldn't have taken it off im so stupid I promised him that I wouldn't take it off now I lost it"

Mom: "hey don't cry he will understand" I just cried Mike came in with a wheelchair

Me: "thank you" he put me on it

Mom: "you need to wipe your tears n don't cry when you get to him he needs you to be strong" I nodded kyle pushed me when we got to his ward his family was standing

outside

Me: "mah what's going on" she was crying

N's mom: "he was ok just a minute ago all of a sudden his machines started beeping really loud" I stood up ignoring the pain and gave her a hug his dad just looked lost Sethu n Sfundu were hugging each other crying the doctor came out took his hat off looking down Id never forget that moment you know the saying my heart stopped beating mine literally stopped I couldn't even breath as the doctor talked he went about how sorry he was that they did everything they could but he didn't make it I lost balance n feel I felt my head hitting the cold tiled floor and that was it lights out 18 September 2012.

When I woke up I was in my room kwandile was pacing up n down

Me: "Kwa" he looked at me his eyes red n puffy his nose was pinkish

Kwa: "hey you up I've been worried"

Me: "tell me I'm dreaming Kwa tell me it not true tell I didn't just lose him kwa" he came to me sat on the bed I sat up

Kwa: "Lelo i .." He shook his head I cried out loud he tried holding me but I kept on punching and pushing him until he flooded my arms and pressed me on his chest than wrapped his arms around me

Kwa: "I'm so so sorry nana ka Nelo im so sorry I wish I could take it all away" his voice was braking could tell he was crying

Me: "isn't it enough that I lost the twins to lose him as well I can't Kwa it hurts so bad"

Kwa: "ssh im here ok I'll be strong for you it ok"

Me: "it not ok kwandile!!" I cried louder we stayed like that both of us crying and him trying to comfort me eventually we laid on the bed he was still holding until I fell asleep.

I slept right through the day only woke up when I had to take my medication and fell right back to sleep nobody said anything to me when they tried talking I just raised my hand up n turned the other way. That was it in two days I had lost my lover my best friend my husband my soulmate my everything the love of my life the one person who loved me through it all my other half my Nelo the father of my kids I lost him along with

my kids all the men in my life gone just like in one car accident just because some fool was reckless on the road I was left alone at just 19 a single parent my protector gone my heart gone what was I going to say to Melo when she asked where daddy is.

.

I got discharged on Wednesday kwandile took me to our place he has been with me at the hospital the whole time I needed to pack a bag before going to marget I started crying as soon as we got to the parking his new car was there parked next my Cooper he had just bought it in August I remember when we went to collect it he was so excited he had hardly slept the previous night he was so happy we took a long drive around durban ended up in north beach where we parked dropped the top and just looked at the stars talking about how great our future was going to be and now it was all gone kwandile got out n came to my side he pulled me out of the car and held until I calmed down then we went up the first thing I saw when kwandile opened the door was his flops he changes his shoes in the lounge when we were leaving I told him to put them back in the bedroom he just shut me up with a deep kiss told me he will do it when we come back I was too lost in his kiss to even think about the flops I got in the lounge the pictures he had given me for my 17th birthday were enlarged and framed hanging on the wall I touched our favorite 3 sitter couch that we always sit on cuddling n watching tv everything in the house reminded me off him even the passage floor where he had made love to me trying to take away the pain I was feeling melo's room I could see him sitting on her playmate playing with her or helping her build her legos the tinker bell dress that she made her daddy dress her up in was on the floor I touched the doorframe God knows how many times we stood there holding each other looking at our daughter play I stood outside our bedroom was scared of opening the door I wiped my tears furiously with the back of my hand and opened the door his scent filled up my nose immediately I used the wall for support no one had ever been in our bedroom but us n Melo it was off limit he made sure everyone knew that I touched the bed walking around it we had left it messed up cause we had just finished making love when we took Melo to my parents "why make it nana coz as soon as we come back im gona take you

again” he said that n spanked my ass when I tried making the bed so I left it like that his glasses were still on the desk next to his imac n work stuff when I opened his closet I lost it I couldn’t keep it in anymore I could feel physical sharp pain going through my heart I cried out n fall to the floor kwandile ran to the room he pulled me to his lap and I just cried I cried for the longest time I don’t even know when he called my mom but soon she was in our room packing my bag while sniffing n wiping away her own tears. Kwandile locked the door we left, the one thing I hadn’t even thought of since nelo’s death was how I was going to be around Melo as soon as kwandile opened the door she was sitting on her granddad’s lap she got off as soon as she saw n came running to me smiling

Melo: “nana” she lifted her arms up n I took her

Me: “hey big girl”

Melo: “where’s daddy” I looked at with tears running down my cheeks she used her tiny hands wiped my tears than gave me a baby kiss “big girls don’t cry nana” I nodded “daddy is coming with cake” I put her down grabbed the car keys from kwandile and ran to his car he ran after me I got next to the car and broke down I cried harder than before shaking my head I kept on asking why would he do this to us his mom came out the house she pulled me up gave me the warmest hug than she held my hands n prayed told me to pray with her we prayed for strength forgiveness and healing emotionally n physically she took my hand and led me back to the house I just went to nelo’s room n cried myself to sleep. The following day I woke up first cleaned n made breakfast for everyone for the first time since Sunday I actually ate after eating Sethu n I cleaned up the day went by I stopped crying but at night I cried myself to sleep.

.

Friday I stayed in bed until Sethu came to wake me up I didn’t wana wake I knew what was happening today his body was coming home and as tradition according to Nelo’s dad n uncles I was supposed to dump him while at the funeral parlor how was I supposed to look at my husband in a coffin and tell him whatever we had was over tell him that he needs to look forward and forget about what his leaving behind how was I

supposed to tell my husband to let me move on Sethu joined me in bed instead of waking me up

Sethu: "how are you"

Me: "I'm fine" that's all I've been saying whenever someone asks how I am

Sethu: "you don't have to pretend with family nana ka Nelo it ok to not be fine" I sighed and turned to look at her she was crying silently

Me: "I feel like I'm in a long nightmare and no matter how loud I scream or how much I try I can't wake up"

Sethu: "I get that"

Me: "I don't like what dad n the uncles say I must do"

Sethu: "it for you own good Lelo you just a child"

Me: "I wish I didn't have to how am I supposed to tell him he must let me move on" we were both crying

Sethu: "I wish you didn't have to"

Me: "I don't want to I feel like I'm braking the promise I made to him"

Sethu: "what's that"

Me: "I promised to never to leave him n to love him forever and always"

Sethu: "his forever n always was made shorter than yours"

Me: "if this is how things are supposed to be than why does it hurt so bad"

Sethu: "it gona get better" we stayed in bed until her mom came to call us I ate took a bath we went to buy a few things that were needed took them home than went to the funeral parlor we prayed before going in we saw the body than they left me alone with him I just sat on the floor crying after awhile I stood up and looked at him he looked so peaceful a little bruised but still amazingly handsome in his black suit n navy shirt I felt like he was going to wake up pull me to his chest kiss my forehead and say it ok nana I got you we going to be just fine just hold on and never let go I wiped the tears that had dropped to his face and breathed out

Me: "so daddy they say I must dump you" I chuckled in disbelief "can you believe them I keep hoping you gona wake up and say fok of mani Lelo you won't be doing that" I

sniffed “don’t ever turn your back on us we still need you Nelo im so scared of the day Melo finally realise that you not coming back you know how your daughter is im sure she’s going to throw a huge tantrum hey, I guess you needed the boys with you it ok though I know you won’t be lonely there you will have them and they will have you that gives me a little bit of comfort, I love you so much and I’ll never love any other the way I love you, it hurts so bad sbonelo like it physically hurts I feel like my heart has been ripped out of my chest, I love you daddy always n forever, you promised to take care of us I hope you will keep your promise, eventually life has to go on it might take me over 10 years but it has to I hope you won’t be mad at me when it eventually does I promise you I’ll make sure Melo never forgets about you she will grow up knowing how much you love n care of her, I love you daddy” I wiped my tears on his face n left I didn’t even get out of the door I broke down as soon as I could get the outside air kwandile rushed to me he picked me up n carried me to car we just sat there until the car in front of us started moving he drove off. When we got to his parents house people started screaming and crying as soon as they saw the car the coffin was carried in the house I sat with his mom on a sponge that was on the floor a pray was said than people left us the boys were crimated their ashes was put in a closed vase than put in the coffin I sat there on the floor looking at the coffin that had my boys n my husband I had dried out I didn’t have anymore tears in me my family was also there even though we hadn’t spoken I saw them all my parents, brothers the twins my cousins, my aunts n uncles as well as Asa and nelo’s friends they all looked broken. The awakening took place at night everyone had something to say they all spoke beautifully said words of encouragement to me they all said they here for me n Melo no matter what I needed anytime I was in a room surrounded by people but I never felt so lonely.

.

Saturday 23 September 2012

I woke up exhausted emotionally I was in bed with mom she woke me up prepared a bath for me when I got she had already set up something for me to wear I don’t know she expected me to wear heels I couldn’t even stand long in flats I finished getting

dressed she brought me breakfast I ate everyone was walking on eggshells around me when everyone asked how I was doing I just smiled and said fine. We left to a local hall the ceremony took place people spoke I wasn't even there my mind was shutting the whole thing off I had refused to talk when they were making the program people were not allowed to see him after everything was done we went back to his parents house where he was going to be buried I was leaning on kwandile's shoulder as I watched the coffin go down the more it went down I felt my soul my happiness leave my body everything started spinning I passed out.

When I woke up I was in bed alone in nelo's room I just started crying that was it he was gone never coming back again that little hope I had that he might wake up vanished as I watched his coffin go down I cried my eyes out I cried like I've never cried before I cried harder than I've ever cried I cried to a point that I couldn't breath the door flew open I didn't even see how it was I just continued crying I was running out of breath I felt someone lift me up that's all I remember when I woke up again i could tell it was the following day I was in the hospital I got discharged the following day I was just exhausted n dehydrated. Tuesday we had the will reading everything was basically left to me melo's trust fund was not going to get affected it would still receive it r3000 every month until she turns 21, his shares on the contract company that he has with kwandile were going to be managed by Siyabulela until I feel I could cope Okuhle trading was also going to be managed by siyabulela n kwandile, when his lease at the apartment ran out he bought it and it was in my name, I gave the new bmw to Sfundu I didn't need it the insurance was going to pay back the Audi. I stayed the rest of the week with nelo's parents on Sunday when kwandile was taking me home Zama corned in me in the kitchen

Zama: "you ok"

Me: "I'm fine" I gave her a fake smile

Zama: "good look Lelo my heart goes out to you"

Me: "thanks"

Zama: "but just because you lost your husband it doesn't mean I should lose mine"



Me: "excuse me"

Zama: "back off kwandile"

Kwandile: "what the fuck is wrong with you Zama" we both didn't see him coming in

Me: "I don't want kwandile Zama" I left them there shouting at each other I waited in the car kwandile came in awhile later furious he apologized I just ignored him he kept on apologizing until we got to my parents house mom didn't want me going to our apartment.

.

It had been the hardest time ever I missed him more n more with everyday that passes I cried myself to sleep every night I woke up screaming from nightmares every night unless I take sleeping pills I used them every night for the first week until mom cutted me off. It was almost month end of October I had gone from size 36 to 28 I only noticed the weight lose when I had to buy new clothes when we were going for cleansing ceremony at marget Melo had been staying there since the funeral I havent been in school since before the car accident mom de registered me when I got admitted for trying to kill myself I drank all the pills I could find in the medical cabinet mom's Gods were with her coz I had stolen them during the day when no one was noticing and took them when everyone was asleep but for some reason she came to check on me at night and when I wouldn't open the door Mike broke it they got me just in time I was so angry they forced me to see a therapist but I knew how it worked coz I had seen one before when I was pregnant with Melo so I was able to trick him and he said I was good to go home and I went back home my ro didn't have a door anymore but no one came in they knew better than to I wasn't eating mom kept on smashing vitamins for me micing them with water that's the only thing that kept me alive mom cried everyday everyone tried talking to me but I would just zobe out whenever they tried even nelo's mom failed I just didn't care anymore about anyone or anything my room was always dark I never left it hardly took a bath. Until this one day I smelt his scent before he even said a word Seb: "honey" he came around so I could see him after switching the light one "oh honey im so so sorry I got on a plane as soon as mom told me I would have came earlier but I

didn't know" I just looked at him he grew his hair to about 12 inch it was still dirty blonde he was a lot bigger I could see his muscles under his biker jacket he lifted my blanket up I think he wanted to join me in bed but flinched when he saw all the blood my white sheet had turned red I was back to cutting my self the physical pain made the emotional better

### **part 107 I am scared of lonely**

Sebastian stared at me with tears coming down his face than pulled back the cover he moved from my sight I heard the bathroom door open n the water running after awhile he came back pulled me up making me sit up I didn't even have the energy to argue with him if it was any other person any other day I would have been breathing fire on them he took off my clothes and gasped I had cuts all over my inner thighs my wrist. He wiped away his tears furiously I could tell he was angry he picked me up walked us to the bathroom I just sat in the bathtub with him bathing me no one said anything when I was clean he dried me and took me back to the bed lotioned me got me dressed in sweatpants n tank top, he walked out I heard him talking to someone on the passage before coming back in my room he lifted me up we went to a guest room he took of his jacket n shoes was left with sweatpants n tshirt he had definitely gained more muscles the door opened mom walked in with a smoothie n water that had crashed vitamins in it

Mom: "Lelo wam" I just looked at her I had never seen my mom that broken for once since the funeral I actually looked at her he had bags under her eyes she had also lost weight she looked like she had the world's weight on her shoulders I took the smoothie had less than half of it than drank all the water she smiled coz usually it just a sip of water and no smoothie she just smiled and nodded

Mom: "I love you baby and it breaks my heart to see..."

Seb: "don't" he cut her off she sighed and nodded than took the glasses and left I heard sebastian lock the door after a minute I felt him get in the bed behind up he pulled the blanket up covering us he stayed on his side I stayed on my side. I missed sbonelo I

didn't want to think about him coz it hurts when I do yet I couldn't get him out of my mind he occupied it 24/7 I couldn't even escape in my sleep just the thought of him brought the tears to my eyes I felt a sharp pain going through my chest I cried out I started sobbing really loudly sebastian didn't say anything he just held me spooning me brushing my hair I had had that weave since before the funeral I cried my eyes my loud sobs turned into silent cries i could feel sebastian's chest rise n fall heavily his tears dropping to my neck. 3 days later Sebastian was still at home we hadn't spoken we just stayed in the guest bedroom without anyone saying anything he just made sure I take a bath drink my smoothie and take my vitamins in either we were in sweatpants or pjs that night he went out came back with a plate filled with food and two spoons he sat across me indian style on the bed put the plate in front of him he gave me a spoon I sat up the same way we started eating it when we were done eating he kissed my forehead and left. He came back gave me sweatpants a bra and hoody we were in pjs that night I got dressed as he also changed from his pjs to sweatpants n hoody we wore flip flops he took my hand we walked out everyone was in the lounge watching tv we got in his old car we drove out went past McD got mcflurry n water than went to the beach we got off the car took a walk there before sitting down I watched as the waves came in full speed Me: "love is like those waves rough and calming at the same time" I thought out loud remembering what Nelo had said to me when he moved my ring from my right hand to my left one, those were the first words I had spoken that didn't come out of anger

Seb: "yes it is"

Me: "it hurts so bad sebastian"

Seb: "it has to hurt that's the only way you going to get better after darkness comes the light"

Me: "I doubt im ever coming out of this darkness"

Seb: "I guess we staying in the darkness for the rest of our lives"

Me: "you can't say that"

Seb: "I just did" I sighed brought my knees to my chest resting my head on them

Me: "I'm just tired sebastian im tired of everything and everyone"

Seb: "everyone"

Me: "people acting like they know what I'm going through"

Seb: "no one knows but I know those around you and those who loved Sbonelo are also hurting"

Me: "I feel so alone"

Seb: "you not alone you have all these people who care about you and who love you"

Me: "They all going to forget if they haven't forgotten already time will go by their lives will continue and they will forget"

Seb: "you can never forget someone you loved even after 20 years"

Me: "I wish I could just press a switch and shut it all off shut the pain off the thoughts of him shut it all off I can still feel his touch feel his breath I can still smell him I can't get him out of my head"

Seb: "you shouldn't want to get him out of your head you need to use all of that as a way of healing you need to hold on to that but don't look at it as something that brings you pain but something that brings you joy cherishes memories don't want to shut them off"

Me: "I hear you I wish it was that easy"

Seb: "to Melo it seems like she lost both her parents"

Me: "Melo" I started crying silently guilty washed all over me

Seb: "she needs you if you not going to get better for yourself do it for her leko that child needs you"

Me: "please take me home" we went home I didn't speak again for almost 2 days when mom tried forcing me to at least take the vitamins sebastian said she must let me be. We were already in November which meant melo's birthday was close I couldn't sleep that night I got off the bed careful to not wake up sebastian I went to the kitchen made a sandwich warmed a glass of milk went to the lounge opened TV eat then laid on the couch watching tv. When I woke up the following day I was still on the couch my head on sebastian's lap with a blanket over us I looked up at him he was just staring into space

Me: "Sebastian" he looked down to me

Seb: "hey"

Me: "let's go to bed" he nodded we got up went to bed. I woke up later asked mom for her phone she just gave it to me with tears running down her face while smiling I called Nelo's mom

N's mom: "Nosihle how is she" I cleared my triathlon at first

Me: "it's me mah" she kept quiet than sniffed

N's mom: "how are you"

Me: "I'm fine n you"

N's mom: "we ok"

Me: "how is melo"

N' mom: "she cries a lot she doesn't understand why you and her dad just stopped coming to pick her up" I wiped my tears

Me: "can I talk to her"

N's mom: "call Kwandile he took her yesterday"

Me: "ok bye"

N's mom: "we love you nana ka nelo and you need to come home"

Me: "I'll come home mah just need a little more time"

N's mom: "I get that call kwandile"

Me: "will do now"

N's mom: "bye" I dropped the call and called kwandile

Kwa: "mah" I chuckled

Me: "hi son" he laughed

Kwa: "don't be stupid I thought it your mom"

Me: "nah it just me"

Kwa: "how are you"

Me: "you know me"

Kwa: "I've been so worried im glad you talking again"

Me: "yeah well where's my daughter"

Kwa: "right here we actually driving to gateway"

Me: "why"

Kwa: "toy shopping"

Me: "cool I miss her"

Kwa: "let me come pick you up"

Me: "Zama is not with you"

Kwa: "no we kinda separated"

Me: "what? Why?"

Kwa: "I'll be there in 20 minutes get ready"

Me: "kwandile"

Kwa: "Maka Okuhle" I rolled my eyes

Me: "I'll get ready"

Kwa: "good see you now now"

Me: "ok" I dropped the call went to give mom her phone

Mom: "how is she"

Me: "didn't speak to her but she'll be here soon"

Mom: "Lelo baby I " she shook her head wiped her tears before they fell "im so sorry you going through all of this"

Me: "don't be I'll be fine"

Mom: "Lelo"

Me: "mom don't" last thing I needed at that moment is pity, she looked down

Mom: "sorry" I kissed her cheek went upstairs my room was clean even had a new bed n bedding but still no door I went to the guest room we were using sebastian was on a call he sounded angry so I stood by the door listening

Seb: "mom I don't care !! ..... So what I'm missing exams ..... I'm not about to leave her alone mom she's getting better ..... Than so be it I'll start over next year with her wherever she wants us to ..... Ofcos not ..... Mom please..... I'll come home soon .....

Stop trying to manipulate me coz I've made my decision and I'm not going back to school deal with it!!!" He dropped the call and let out a muffled scream I got in the

room

Me: "hey"

Seb: "hey"

Me: "go home sebastian"

Seb: "I'm not leaving you"

Me: "I'll be fine you can come back at night"

Seb: "Lelo I can't leave you"

Me: "it ok I'll be spending the day with Melo toy shopping go home talk to your parents and you need to go back to Cape Town you've got exams"

Seb: "I don't care about those I want to be here"

Me: "sebastian you can't just put your life on hold" he looked down shaking his head

Seb: "please don't make me go please don't ask me to leave you here while you not ok"

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "honey please"

Me: "I don't want you to leave me" he looked at me we stared at each other for a long time until I looked away

Seb: "I'm not gona leave you when you better we'll look for school and start afresh next year" I nodded and wiped my tears he came to me and held me tightly

Me: "I'm so selfish"

Seb: "no you not im here coz I want to be coz I love you" I nodded he kissed my head

Me: "go home just for a day I'll see you later tonight" I needed him at night I woke up screaming every middle of a night from nightmares he just knew how to calm me down

Seb: "I wish I didn't have to after that conversation with mom dad is going to kill me"

□ we chuckled

Me: "you gona be fine"

Seb: "let me get going" we let go of each other I walked him to the door he kissed my forehead and drove out

Mom: "his leaving" she looked worried

Me: "his coming back" she let out a sigh

Mom: "ok good"

Me: "I'll go get ready" I went to change from my pjs into a dress none of my jeans fit anymore everything in my closet was big n lose just wore a beanie over my weave I was still looking at myself in the mirror when Melo came running to my room

Melo: "nana!!" I picked her up gave her a tight squeeze

Me: "hey bhabha" I kissed her all over her face she kept on giggling

Melo: "nana" I started tickling her "nana stop" she was laughing n kicking the air

Me: "kiss kiss" she pouted I kissed her

Melo: "daddy Kwa says lets go"

Me: "ok come to nana" I got off the bed she raised her arms n I took her

Melo: "where's daddy"

Me: "at work" we went downstairs

Melo: "I miss daddy" she frowned and I kissed her head

Me: "you gona see him soon"

Melo: "ok"

Me: "you look pretty maNgcobo" she giggled

Melo: "daddy Kwa dressed me"

Me: "daddy Kwa loves you" she nodded kwandile was with busi talking to mom

Me: "hey"

Kwa: "hey let's get going busi is getting impatient" he said his goodbyes buckled up the girls in their car seats we drove off to gateway

kwa: "how are you"

Me: "you know me"

Kwa: "that's why I'm so worried"

Me: "I'll be ok"

Kwa: "I'm here Lelo you need to let me be strong for you"

Me: "you need to sort out your marriage issues"

Kwa: "don't worry about" we kept quiet for the rest of the ride listening to Melo n busi blabbering in their seats until we got to gateway



Kwa: "can I take you to the saloon first"

Me: "hey what is that supposed to mean" I touched my hair he chuckled

Kwa: "just that it been awhile"

Me: "mxm" he took a trolley and put the girls in it

Kwa: "we'll go buy the toys you can get your hair done than we'll do lunch and get some clothes"

Me: "yeah sure whatever" I rolled my eyes we went our separate ways I got to the saloon took off my weave just relaxed my hair I met up with them at wimpy Melo was laughing and talking seeing her like that just made evaluate everything my life her life I needed to be better I needed to work on my self so I can be there for her as much as she had all these people who loved her she still needed me her mother I didn't even realize I was crying until kwandile wiped my tears I looked at him

Kwa: "don't let her see you crying she's going to get worried she's been crying a lot" I nodded and looked away

Me: "I don't know how to do this kwandile"

Kwa: "do what"

Me: "be a single parent all of a sudden"

Kwa: "you not gona be a single im here I've been here since you were pregnant"

Me: "you know what I mean"

Kwa: "no I dont"

Me: "mxm" I turned my attention to the girls after lunch he paid we went shopping for the girls he took me home when we were done it broke my heart seeing Melo cry when they were leaving me at home kwandile was taking them back to margate I just fell back into my dark cloud I slept throughout the next 4 days sebastian walked in on me trying to cut myself in the bathroom from that day I couldn't even spend a minute alone he was there like all the time not saying a word unless I talk first but just there all the time. It was Tuesday night sebastian and I were in bed he was playing with my hair, melo's birthday was on Friday kwandile was planning something small for her at his place I was really grateful it was her first birthday without her dad just the thought of all that made

everything worse I ended up having another breakdown after sebastian calmed me down I was still on his lap with his hands wrapped around me rocking us back n forth

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "mmh"

Seb: "I think it time you see someone"

Me: "I can't even think about dating right now" he chuckled

Seb: "I mean a psychologist"

Me: "Sebastian I don't want to"

Seb: "I didn't say you want to I said you need to"

Me: "I don't need to talk to someone about what I'm going through"

Seb: "you not gona open up fully to me and it clear you won't be doing that with any of your family members"

Me: "Sebastian"

Seb: "Lelo"

Me: "I don't want to"

Seb: "I wasn't really asking for your permission"

Me: "you not my father"

Seb: "I didn't say I was"

Me: "stop acting like you are" I got off him and laid on the bed he slide down and spooned me

Seb: "I'll make the appointment in the morning"

Me: "I'm not going"

Seb: "we'll see honey" he kissed my head "goodnight"

Me: "night".

.

Sebastian made an appointment it was his mother's friend from high school she had an opening that Wednesday in the afternoon he drove me there I wasn't talking to him the ride was just silence besides music until we stopped at an office space

Seb: "we here" I started crying

Me: "I don't want to go"

Seb: "you need to"

Me: "no I don't I was handling things just fine"

Seb: "if cutting yourself, trying to kill yourself, sleepless night, not eating or talking, staying locked up in the dark and having breakdowns is your way of fine than you definitely need to see her"

Me: "Sebastian don't make go" he wiped my tears kissed my hands

Seb: "I love you and you have to go so come on" he got off came to open my door than took my hand we walked in the offices he went to the receptionist I sat down he came and sat down with me he held my waist I put my head on his shoulder we stayed like that until I was called in. We had an hour worth of session it was just a briefing we spent half of it in silence I just didn't even know where to start but she was accomodating afterwards we went home I was going to see Her Wednesdays and Thursdays. I went to see her the following day it was a little bit better she encouraged me to talk about the first day I saw him just the thought of him that afternoon made me smile he was wearing black shorts his legs looked amazing all nice n little hairy with that bracket ish going on he had on a black baseball shirt and vans his hair wasn't cut his lips were so pink that day the confidence was on another level with a little touch of cockiness, after I got over the fact that he beat leon up which resulted in him dumping me I saw Nelo as my hero. We spent that whole hour talking about how we met.

Friday it was melo's birthday it was the hardest day ever since the funeral she kept on asking when her daddy was coming I spent most of the time locked up in the bathroom crying as much as kwandile tried it still wasn't the same after dinner she opened her presents with so much excitement, when kwandile brought in her cake she jumped off my lap ran to him bouncing up n down screaming cake busi was right there next to her bouncing the whole family was there from my side n Nelo's side besides Zama. When melo's sugar rush came down I took her to her bedroom kwandile had already set up a bedroom for her in his house I sat next to her watching her sleep she's such a photocopy of her father even the way she sleeps with her lips slightly open I sat there

until it was time to go I cried myself to sleep that night.

.

Three weeks later I was officially diagnosed with major depression I was put on antidepressants. I spent my birthday at Margate with Nelo's family, Melo and I spent Christmas at home as usual the pills seemed to work Sebastian was back at home we spent New Year's Eve which is Nelo's birthday at Margate again that was hard I had another breakdown after visiting his grave. Healing was such turning out to be a long process and I didn't have the patience.

.

January 2013 as soon as varsities opened Sebastian, Carmel and I went to Ukznibhaca to look for a study space I got accepted in psychology he got accepted in architecture we paid acceptance fees the only thing that was left was for us to register. After registration I didn't want to stay at home I hadn't been to our apartment since before the funeral Sebastian went with me I had another breakdown episode so my psychologist figured the pills and therapy wasn't enough she put me under electroconvulsive therapy it worked for that time being. It was so hard but things were slowly getting better I got used to being in our apartment alone although I spent more time at home Melo was also back at home as time went by she stopped asking about her dad it was always daddy Kwa daddy Kwa that Kwandile and I did our best to make sure she didn't feel the void that Nelo was there anymore we were co-parenting him and Zama we officially done she packed up went home took her daughter with her Kwandile only got busi on weekends or whenever he wasn't working it was the same with Melo she spent most of her weekends at Kwandile's place I sometimes spent my weekends there if he couldn't get a sitter for that weekend. First year at Howard went by in a smooth way in terms of academics I had no friends wasn't looking for friends even though our schedules weren't the same we spent Sebastian and I spent most time on campus together if he was busy I would be in the library. We threw Melo a huge party for her 4th birthday, for my 20th birthday I just had a family dinner at home Kwandile hated Sebastian but was civil to him when they were in the same space. I took Melo to Nelo's

grave on his birthday we sat down and I told her about her dad we talked to him I told him about what was going on in our life how everything was updated him on everything I laughed at the things I knew he would laugh at cried at the things that made me sad we sang him happy birthday I think even though she couldn't fully understand that her dad wasn't coming back she cried coz I was crying we sat there crying me trying to comfort her while I was also crying until kwandile came and got us.

Another year later 2014 I was simply existing not living there's actually a huge difference between those two words I was doing my 2nd year my depression had episodes there was times where I couldn't even function I just spent days locked up in my room crying in the dark, I was ok around people but when I was alone I could hardly spend five minutes without crying the nightmares never went away unless I was on sleeping pills which was confusing my system. My therapist changed my diagnosis from major depression to persistent depressive disorder.

### **part 108 I am scared of lonely**

Do you think it possible to have more than one soulmate in a lifetime?

I doubt

.

Well here we are it 2015 it been over 2 years since the passing of Nelo God knows I missed him everyday, I didn't even celebrate my 21st it kinda sucked I didn't want to everyone tried reasoning with me but I was t interested my beautiful daughter was 5 Jesus Christ she's such a handful got attitude for decades a very short temper she throws tantrums like their tennis balls, I'd never forget the her first day at Eden pre primary she was excited until we finally got to the school fear and anxiety kicked in she cried her lugs out I ended up calling kwandile he tried calming her down but it wasn't working he ended up leaving in the middle of a trial in court luckily he was around durban when he got to us we were outside the gate she ran to him as soon as he came out of his car throwing herself at him busy crying saying "I don't wana go daddy tell nana to stop I wana stay at home" she buried her face on his chest not even wanting me

to touch her after lot of bribing that involved cake, ice cream and an addition to her Barbie collection she calmed down and agreed to stay at school. Kwandile n I held each other as we watched her going in with her teacher it was those kind of days where I wished Nelo was alive more than others, when school was out kwandile n I went to pick her up took her to out got her what we had promised to get her. The first week was hard eventually she got used to it. I was doing my 3rd year so was sebastian we were both not dating and I was grateful that he didn't make moves on me.

.

I was still going for therapy even though it was now just once a week I had accepted that I was going to spend the rest of my life on antidepressants and therapy it was the only thing that helped with balancing how my mind n body worked. We had tried almost every psychotherapy trying to figure out my fear on loneliness that I wasn't even aware of until she pointed out that when I started being aware of dad's abusive nature towards mom I turned to Siyabulela, when siyabulela left for varsity it was tyson, when tyson was about to go to varsity I pushed him away and settled for leon, after leon it Nelo, whenever Nelo and I were having problems I ran to other guys. When she started using psychoanalytic therapy things that were repressed deep in my unconscious things started surfacing things that I didn't even remember like me being sexually abused by my cousin when I was in junior primary which explained the sexual nightmares n the mustarbating in my sleep when I started having sex but it didn't go on for long it was just a tip of an iceberg. Well up until now still can't figure out the main reason besides the absence of my parents growing up as to why I feel the need to have a guy showing me affection or why is having to be in a relationship increases my self-confidence, or why I can't veiw not being in a relationship as a refreshing emotional break rather than associating it with a feeling of emptiness and isolation and being disconnected from the social world. So being single for over 2 years helped me deal with my monophobia. Therapy brought up a lot of issues I went there as to get help dealing with nelo's death and my miscarriage ended up having to deal with more than just that. My therapist suggested writing well she actually suggested it just after a few months of seeing her

she gave me a new journal every time the one I had before was all used up, as time went by she suggested opening up a page here on facebook she had been reading a few pages that weren't fiction but one stood out 'my addiction' she thought it would be a good idea to talk to a few stranger open myself up get opinions from other people, people who didn't know personally people who would not be scared to say whatever is on their mind people who will not shield me. At first I didn't even want to hear any of it I mean why in the fuckn hell would I want a bunch of strangers knowing about my life who would even be interested in knowing about my life why would someone care enough to spend their time n bundles on me, until I have myself a chance to read this page she was talking about some of the comments scared the living crap out of me some people were sympathizing and boy some had no issue in voicing their opinions without as much as considering how the writer felt I told myself there is no way I'm about to do that. I had refused until this one time in the middle of the night I was in our apartment I woke up screaming from a nightmare I went to wash my face got a cup of warm milk when I couldn't sleep I decided to start on the page I was so confused at to what to call it and I thought why not call it im scared of lonely after all what I'm going through all started because I started dating.

.

It was sebastian's birthday I was taking him out for dinner, my life was slowly getting back on track in terms of being social I started hanging out with my friends again, going out doing things that people my age were doing I was function again but I needed the pills for it. Sebastian and I were meeting at Tasha's I took a quick shower dressed up in white high waist ripped skinny jeans n a black bra top with black heels fixed my weave had a 16 inch black curly Peruvian with blue tips took my ish and left I had traded in my mini for a bmw 4 series. When I got there sebastian was already seated he stood up n gave me hug n kissed my forehead before opening a chair for me.

Me: "if it isn't the birthday boy" he chuckled

Seb: "I just got here ordered you juice"

Me: "arg you such a bore" can't mix antidepressant and alcohol

Seb: "I know right" we had dinner over light conversation just catching up until sebastian started staring at me he had just said a joke and I was laughing really hard I had tears running down my cheeks

Me: "what you looking at"

Seb: "you beautiful"

Me: "I know that you always say it" I brushed him off

Seb: "I love you"

Me: "and I you"

Seb: "I mean I love love you Lelo always has" I swallowed saliva the last time we ever talked about our feelings beyond friendship was in January 2012

Me: "oh"

Seb: "I miss you I've given you more than enough time I've been patient for a very long time"

Me: "yes you have" he held my hands on the table brushing his thumb over it slightly

Seb: "I love you honey and I want you back im not losing you again my life begins and ends with you"

Me: "Sebastian I c.."

Seb: "I need you Lelo not just as a friend anymore you make me who I am you make me better" he cut me off

Me: "what if I'm not ready" he looked down running his hand through his hair it was still about 12 inch long

Seb: "I'll wait I've waited for 4 years what's more 4 years" I giggled

Me: "don't be crazy"

Seb: "I love you Lelo you it for me you my everything"

Me: "give me time"

Seb: "take your time".

Indeed he gave me time 3 months later we started dating officially and exclusively he got a flat in morning side as soon as I agreed to giving us a chance again said we needed privacy. I always question whether moving on with sebastian was a good idea maybe it



would have been better if I got someone new someone Nelo didn't know and didn't hate but I couldn't even handle the thought of starting afresh with someone new someone who had no idea of what I've been through someone I'd have to open up and be vulnerable with all over again. Sebastian knows everything that I've been through he was there through it all pulling me out of the dark with nothing but love and patience. I love him I'm in love with him, his is for me my lover my best friend and my hero, the love I have for him is different from the love I have for Sbonelo I'll never compare him to Sbonelo it wouldn't be fair to him or me or us as a couple. I believe him when he says he loves me more there's even nothing to debate about it all in his eyes and actions, I can look into his eyes and see what he sees, his days start and end with me I mean isn't that what we all want at the end of the day. Here we are currently happy and in love fighting my demons every time they surface together he loves me with my baggage he treats me like a queen he is my bae the current bae and he loves my daughter like his own.

.

After I had a miscarriage with the twins I started having serious period pains and heavy bleeding even when I wasn't on periods I'd get really painful pelvic pains it wasn't something I took serious I didn't mention it to my gynaecologist but once Sebastian and I started being intimate which was so hard by the way so hard that he had to stop in the middle of it I kept on crying I felt like I was cheating on Sbonelo like I was betraying him after two sessions with my therapist we tried again and it worked out. After Sebastian and I got intimate the pains got persistent and more severe I ended up telling my doctor and a few tests turn out I have endometriosis there is no cure besides treatment to ease the pain or improve fertility it either that or removal of the uterus, the pains are getting so bad that everyone thinks I should have my uterus removed. Here I am just 22 years old doing my honors getting ready for my graduation in April with a daughter that's 6 doing grade 1 going through all this shit yet I'm still breathing I know there are people who have went through worse but still get up every morning with hope of a better future.

.

He's only gone on ahead of you,  
Not just left you behind.  
Although you can't be with him right now,  
He lives on in your heart and mind.  
The day will come when you'll meet again  
On Heaven's distant shore,  
And the two of you will walk hand in hand  
Together forever more.

.

It takes strength to be firm,  
it takes courage to be gentle.  
It takes strength to conquer,  
it takes courage to surrender.  
It takes strength to be certain,  
it takes courage to have doubt.  
It takes strength to fit in,  
it takes courage to stand out.  
It takes strength to feel a friend's pain,  
it takes courage to feel your own pain.  
It takes strength to endure abuse,  
it takes courage to stop it.  
It takes strength to stand alone,  
it takes courage to lean on another.  
It takes strength to love,  
it takes courage to be loved.  
It takes strength to survive,  
it takes courage to live.